Just my Luck (KDA x MaleReader(age 27)) by Depore202

Category: Fanfiction

Genre: ahri, akali, comedy, dnd, evelynn, fantasy, harem, kaisa, kda, lagueoflegends, lol, love, malereader, romance, superpowers

Language: English

Status: Completed

Published: 2021-02-16

Updated: 2022-01-14

Packaged: 2023-11-02 01:41:14

Chapters: 74

Words: 207,426

Publisher: www.wattpad.com

Summary: "Disclaimer I don't own any of the pictures in the story or any of the characters used."

Y/N is a 27year old Librarian with how he likes to say very bad luck. His past few years have been pretty passive with him spending most days going yo work, then back home to playing games and eventual DnD session here and there. His childhood was pretty hard because of the situation with his family not to mention he was one of the rare people without ability.

But all of that changed when a old friend decided to give him a birthday present that will change his life forever. Now will it be better or will his self proclaimed bad luck activate again.

Language: English

Read Count: 921,283

INTRODUCTION

Disclaimer I don't own any of the pictures in the story or any of the characters used not to mention any songs or lyrics that are not original.

Hello all, so i finally decided to use my overactive imagination and write something (i have to use this corona forced vacation somehow) There are a couple of things i would like to say first
First off: English is not my native language i am amazing when i have to speak bcs of my jobs and all those years of Games and CartoonNetwork but writing a little on the weak side so feel free to comment on my mistakes and bear with me
Second: This is my first story so bear with me i will get better and i accept all feedback be it the good the bad or just trolls
And the lucky three: And this is going to be a mature story i don't know about Lemon since i am bad at writing stuff like that, but there are going to be definitely mentions of sex and swearing here and there.

************************UPDATE***
3/31/2021/**********************************

I am going to remove the Height stat from the girls since i am tired from people constantly complaining. I know its not cannon but this is Fanfiction i chose the height. The important thing to remember is that the girls are simply taller then (Y/N) now your choice is to decide if they are A full head or just a few inches. I also don't compare heights that much in this storry so its not shota boy vs dommy mommy's. This is not that kind of storry

*********************** ***END OF UPDATE***

MC (main character):
Name: (Y/N) (L/N) Gray (the nickname this world decided to gave to powerless people)

Race: Human
Eyes: Brown
Hair: Short/Dark Brown
Body Type : Average
Height: 5.6
Personality: A little on the passive side when meeting new people but to his friends he is known as the class clown and a smart-ass
Likes: His Morning Coffee with his favorite brand of smokes, video games, cooking, DnD, rock music and gaming OST, and just to go for night walks
Hates: Mornings, somebody talking to him before morning coffee, cabbage, bullies, discrimination and messiness and being the center of attention

Now a little on our four characters that we are going focus on next to him

Name: Ahri

Age: 24

Race: Vastaya

BIO: She is the leader of our pop group. Easily called one of the most beautiful women of our world. Most people know her as the face of the fashion world and not to mention her face is on half of the cosmetic brands. Even though she is portrayed as a elegant business woman, in her private she is very mischievous who loves to joke tease and most of all to get every chance she can to go shopping. But don't be fooled her motivation for the KD/A group will have her chain sleepless nights just to make them succeed

Name: Evelynn

Age: 24

Race: Demon

BIO: If Ahri is called the most beautiful woman of the pop-star world then Evelynn is definitely the sexiest. The biggest diva of the pop world, its not strange that in her past she tended to leave a concert just because she didn't like the backup singers or the dancing staff, not to mention her fan base

tends to yell some crazy stuff during her concert. There are whole sects of her fans and she is probably the most desirable women of the current population, but there is a nasty rummer going on if you date Evelynn you are either gonna disappear or you are gonna play for the other team after her. Even though she makes people cry she is the most loyal to her group and will chase you to the end of the world if you hurt her family.

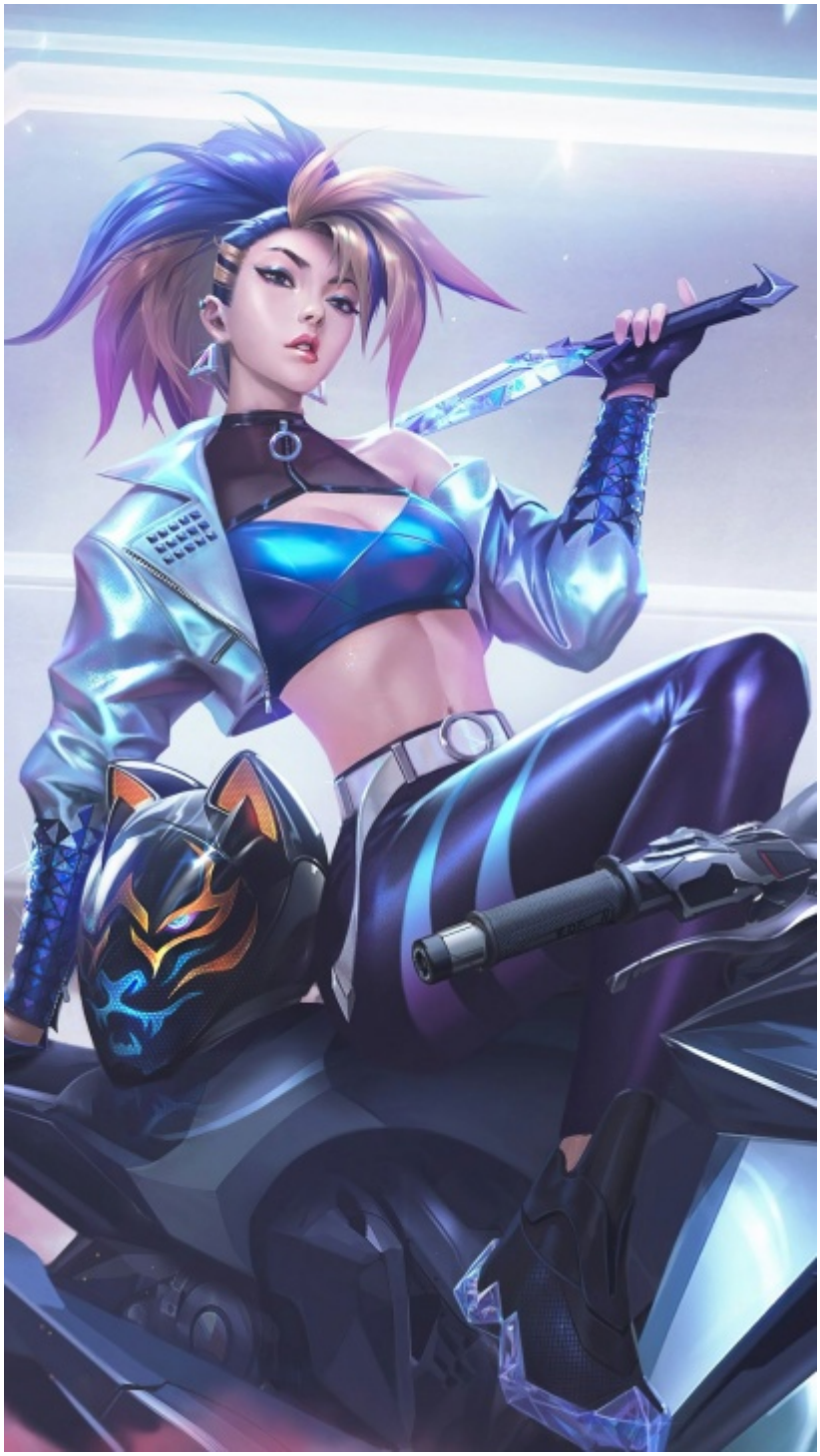
Name: Kai'Sa

Age: 23

Race: Human

BIO: Is the dancer of the group and their princes how some fans like to call it. The silent princes of the dance floor, even though she doesn't speak much when ever she is in public or talk shows, but she turns all of that around when she starts to dance. Just one look of her dancing is enough to make people forget everything that is going around them loosing themself for hours in her shows. Fans believe she is the tall cool older sister type, but in

actual she is a very shy girl who has very hard time speaking in front of strangers.



Name: Akali

Age: 21

Race: Human

BIO: The fan favorite of the group. The ever energetic Akali has fans of all ages even though her fans tend to be more females then males but don't be tricked, her fan base is nothing to be looked down upon on. The Korean Queen of Rap how they all like to call her. And her reputation that made her famous through our all cities they pass, where she spends time speeding on her bike or drawing graffiti on the buildings, she never got arrested because they rarely catch her or the building owners don't press charges because her drawings are amazing. And her body has more abs then 80% of the male population yikes !

OK so this is the basic introduction of the character that are gonna play a major role there were probably be some more in the future who are gonna show up every chapter but this is it for now.

Now some people are probably thinking where is Seraphine since this timeline will technically going to be past MORE but in my personal opinion i am not going to use her that much, no offense to all Seraphine lovers out there but i am just not a fan of her simple as that and i am not interested in using her more then a side character, in my story she just went solo after their song.

And one more time, bear with me and i hope you have fun you laugh, cry, makes some awwww and even cringe at some moments

LETS GOO!!

PROLOGUE (Just My Luck)

OK so lets start our story and lets have some fun i will try to publish something fast for the first few chapters and then we will see how much people like it

Itwas raining outside today. All week was sunny but today in the morning out of nowhere dark clouds showed up and the rain just started pouring.

In one of the classrooms at the Piltover Teaching College (Y/N) was siting in front of his favorite professor. Apparently Zillean wanted to se him today. According to him he had a important talk for (Y/N) and he requested is presence.

(Y/N) POV:

I have to say i was nervous, i never saw Prof. Zillean this serious except when he was grading paper's. Without discussion he just told me to sit, brewed me some coffee and even offered me his smokes... he never offers his fancy smokes! He always asks to borrow some but never offers. So i knew this was serious

Zillean: (Y/N)

He just suddenly said my name after 15min of silence"

(Y/N):Yes professor ?

Zillean: Do you know why i called you today?

Of course me being a smart ass and not to mention i had to do something to kill my panic

(Y/N):*grin* Well i assume that you finally got embarrassed of taking your students smokes for these past 2 years and decided to finally share some... By the way we still have like 200 to go!

I just gave him my joker grin,yes i have a awesome joker grin, and blinked my eyes innocently multiple times

Zillean: Pffff.....

You could see he wanted to laugh he was barely holding it. The prof was one of the few people on this college i actually acted normal next to. I am actually a extremely shy person when i meet new people or when i am in public.

You know one of those people that is embarrassed to go into a store just because its new, and lets not even mention clothing boutiques. My friend took me there once but i was sweating so much because those ladies were looking at me i had to run away all red.

Zillean: You know your i am amazed what you can do with your mouth *slurp*!

(Y/N): That's what she said!

I couldn't help it

Zillean: *slu...* *cough cough cough* Hahahahahahahah

At least it was working and it was making him laugh.

But my grind suddenly disappeared because my favorite professor just made a very sad face.

Zillean: Listen (Y/N)... there is no easy way to say this....

You could see he was in a bad place, rubbing his neck with his arm and looking down to his desk.

Zillean: I am afraid this course is not for you.... i am sorry.

My whole world came crashing down. I was shocked i spend the last 2 years in Piltover College studding to be a teacher. I am not saying i am the smartest guy but thats why i was focusing on language course. I actually spoke a few different languages, since apparently my talent was learning languages by just constantly listening to it. But these words... they were horrible....

(Y/N): Wait... why..... i mean why ? I know my grades are not the best....

Zillean was just looking down while my voice was breaking and my hands just started flying all around

(Y/N):Or the smartest student, but i have good grades and i speak 5 languages what did i do wrong tell me!?

Zillean: Listen there are other carriers that...

I cut him off in rage now slamming my hands on the table.

SLAM

(Y/N): PROFESSOR WHY? JUST TELL ME!

The worst thing about this is.... i knew why...

Zillean: Because your a Gray!

My whole world came crashing down... again... again this is happening because of my birth curse.

Zillean: You are a smart kid (Y/N), just 22 now, but still... I notice that the others are bullying you, that you have no friends here always alone and just siting in the corner...

I was looking down on the floor wet spots were forming right under me, i was just not sure if it was the roof leaking... or if it was my tears.

Zillean: As a professor you need to be confident, strong, proud and i am afraid... u have none of that. The students would eat you up, and you will

accomplish nothing...

He then stood up came behind me and put a hand on my shoulder

Zillean: I know it is not you. Being born powerless is something out of our power not to mention the situation with your family making you basically give up your childhood... our childhood is what defines most of our lives...

My tears were flowing non stop. Now people can say what ever they want but i was crying like a baby.

Zillean: I am sorry.... i thought you would change but 2 years already and still the same... But at least let me help you one more time if i failed as your professor like this then let me just give you a leg up for your future life.

I looked up at him with my eyes red and my nose basically running non stop

Zillean: My friend Yumi owns a Library and i told her i have a young man for work, it will at least be a beginning for your new life and help you financially...

He then smiled

Zillean: I had 2 different dreams fail before i finally found this one, and let me tell you i don't regret it. It will get better believe me. And let me give you one more important piece of advice. Are you listening (Y/N)

I weakly nodded my head

(Y/N): Yea prof.

He then made a huge smile and lifted his hands

Zillean: Never and i mean never let a BEEEEEP

(Y/N):Wait sorry what ?

Zillean: I said BEEEEEP BEEEEEEEP

End of dream

BEEEP BEEEEP BEEEEP BEEEEP!

(Y/N): OMG SHUT UP ALREADY

I was moving my hand like crazy trying to hit that "End Alarm" button on my phone. Crap i hate this new update it changed the interface completely and i cant even turn of the alarm properly because the button is not on the same place. Fuck these touchscreen phones give me a good keyboard anytime!

After a few more tries i was finally able to turn it off. After that i just stood up and went to my bathroom washing my face from all the eye crust and droll on the side of my mouth. Yea i am a droller while i sleep at least i don't snore like some people..... at least i hope i don't snore

(Y/N): Again.... why do i keep having this nightmare

That nightmare was a recurring process for me. It tends to happen at least once or twice a week i went to a psychologist about it but ofc they just gave me sessions once a month and aspirin because my head kills me every time i wake up.

(Y/N): Why cant i dream something nice like a monster made of cotton candy or maybe some cat lady vastaya in my bed

I hated that dream. Its more a memory from 5 years ago when my favorite professor told me to drop the course for a language teacher. I never blamed him prof. Zillean was a true man of principle and wisdom, he always wanted the best for me.

But being a powerless tends to scar you in our world. Less then 0.2% of our population are born powerless... and guess who drew the lucky number. We are constantly discriminated against bullied through all our lives but i guess is the worst when they give us those fake pity stares

Not to mention the whole situation with my family while i was growing up, don't get me wrong i was never abused, its just a simple rule when you are the oldest brother and your parents work 12h a day u have responsibility . My younger brother was autistic only 2 years under me also 2 sisters which were 10 and 12 younger then me who came after my father remarried, apparently my mother couldn't look at my brother and was disappointed in me so she left us a powerless older son and a mentally disabled younger one.

Which meant I had to take care of my younger brother while my father worked, and then when the other two came, that is also the time i learned how to change diapers. To make things worse my little sisters when they finally understood how this world works and what it means to be powerless decided to push me out of their life completely.

Its been 7 years since i left my family to go to college and i only stayed in contact with my Father and Step-Mother and of course my brother who always joined the call just to hear my voice. My sisters maybe said hello once or twice a year usually for my birthday and my real mother... yea i think 10 years probably since my 18 birthday i didn't hear her voice when she just called to congratulate it without any other words. Luckily my step mom is a amazing person even though she sometimes tends to try to much.

Wait since we are mentioning my birthday... I quickly washed my face and went to my phone and the number of messages was in double digits then i went turned on my laptop probably the only expensive thing in my apartment... yes i don't mind spending 3000$ on a MSA gaming laptop but i have a heart attack when i need to pay 90$ for a jacket at the flea market. Yes all my clothes are from the flea market and the people can deal with it. I saw a good number of notifications on my Discord and Skype account that's where i know most of the people i am a gaming nerd after all

(Y/N): Luckily i don't work today so lets put some coffee, grab a smoke and go through all of this.

But lady luck struck again... The first thing i noticed was that there was a giant puddle in the kitchen looks like my upstairs neighbor had another one

of his pipes burst.... and the worst part was that it dripped all over the container holding my coffee.... it was all ruined

(Y/N):Motherfucker..... Just my luck.... Fuck, i better go to the store first before i check the messages

OK so we are done with the prologue it went a little longer then expected but who cares i decided i would rather make a longer chapter then multiple small ones just easier that way i hope you guys liked this beginning and lets go onward

CHAPTER 1 (What Can Go Bad Right ?)

So this will be the first official chapter of my story. Now lets continue where we left off

(Y/N): Well this deals with the phone messages i should make time to call Dad and Diana latter... crap all these years and i just still cant call her mom, she is probably going to cry again.

I made a small sight while answering all my messages on the phone. And this coffee was so bad today, i should just stick to Heimis coffee instead of trying Zigs brand! He just basically took the original one and added more strength which destroyed its flavor.

While i was complaining in my mind my laptop started ringing with a Skype call coming in and i smiled right away as i saw who was calling

(Y/N): Yo Gaysuo what up?

????: .....

(Y/N): Sorry sorry man, anyway how are you Suckyuo *cough* i mean Yasuo !

Yasuo: *Do we have to do this every time*

We were not in the video call even 1min and he was already facepalming and sighting on the camera... haha i loved it. Poking at him was my favorite pastime.

(Y/N): Oh common man, you know this is tradition at least its better then Lord of Cancer.

I just couldn't help my self this was my favorite part when ever we call each other

Yasuo: *Man you are such a di....*

????: *Hahahhaha good job (Y/N) only you can make him twitch like that, sup Grey how are you?*

I had a huge grin on my face at that moment, my partner in making Yasuo facepalm and probably the only person i would never hate for calling me Grey

(Y/N): Yo Ekko my man, how is my favorite short stack doing ?

You can see Yasuo getting a big smile on his face since the poking is now moving from him to the person next to him

Ekko: *Man you have no right to say anything! How tall are you ? Maybe one cm more then me, so nice try !*

(Y/N): Oh only one you say ? *grin*

At that moment i went into my special folder on my laptop and pulled out a picture i was saving for this moment. It was a very special little treasure that Yasuo provided and of course what better chance to use it then now!

(Y/N): What do you think about this picture? I find it very amusing

Yasuo of course knew right away what was going on and he just rose up and started running towards the left of the room probably trying to escape before the explosion.

Yasuo: *Bathroom !*

He was already snickering like crazy since he knew what was coming,

Which of course was a smart move since when the picture uploaded showed Ekko's measuring his shoes that had a 2cm bottom as a extension to height. Ekkos face just went to white, then to red in anger

Ekko: *SUCKYUOOOOOO!!!!!! GET BACK HERE MOTHERFUCKER!!!!!!!!!!!*

And that was it i was laughing like crazy, and i could hear Yasuo screaming in the back in laughter, it was done i didn't care anymore, this is gonna be the highlight of my day

After about 10min of me laughing and Ekko chasing Yasuo at their place things finally calmed down since their group member Senna came in and screamed on them to shut up. We were now siting in front of our cameras me drinking coffee and smoking and the two of them talking and drinking some bear

Yasuo: *You know smoking is bad for you right ?*

(Y/N): So is waking up in the morning, but alas what we do to survive... and don't you smoke as well ?

Ekko just snickered and waved his hand

Ekko: *So man tell me how does it feel to be a old man !*

I just raised my eyebrow and frowned

(Y/N): OK listen here you little shit, first of i am 27 and second off i am taller then you!

Ekko's eye just twitched

Ekko: *How does you being taller have anything to do with age*

(Y/N): Nothing but me being on the border of defining as small unlike you i get to terrorize you

Ekko: *Meh screw you*

(Y/N): Love you to

We loved messing with each other it started all when we meet 9 years ago in a online game called Aion. It all started with me calling him and Yasuo noobs for failing game mechanics, after that we got talking and even meet in real life, and then they went from gaming friends to real friends. But a

few years ago they started a band , and started traveling all over the world. Now i can maybe see them once or twice a year now.

Yasuo: *Why did you suddenly get quiet...*

(Y/N): Oh nothing i just remember how we used to meet and how we started hanging out every day. All of those live DnD sessions and Larp meet ups were a thing of beauty

Ekko: *Hahaha man i know, but what can we do... We would have invented you to join our band but your singing is just to AMAZING!*

Yasuo: *Amazingly bad, i swear my hamster went def because of you man..... and you remember that cat when we went for karaoke i swear it tried to kill itself after listening to you for 10 seconds*

(Y/N): And what Ekko running around waving his hand and speaking stuff is singing... i will never understand how people like that.

And there we go in 3...2....1.... Yasuo just covered his ears and i did the same since i pushed his button.

Ekko: *ITS CALLED RAP! ITS A ART! NOT ME WALKING AROUND AND TALKING YOU IGNORANT PIECE OF....*

?????: *WILL YOU SHUT THE FUCK UP ITS 5 IN THE FUCKING MORNING DON'T MAKE ME COME INSIDE! AND TELL (Y/N) I DON'T MIND GOING BACK TO PILTOVER TO FUCK HIS FACE UP ! NOW SHUT IT YOU NERDS!!!!!!*

Even though we were on Skype, even though my sound was not on max,it still made my ears ring. And by the looks of Yasuo and Ekko who were crouching with their ears covered i can only imagine how loud it was over there... OK note to self, never make a lead vocalist yell

(Y/N): Ok lets stop messing around Senna is gonna kill you first and then she is going to fly to my place

Yasuo: *Oh ignore her. She just broke up with her boyfriend again and is just pissed off. Another douche who cheated on her.*

(Y/N): *sigh* Another one? Why am i not surprised

Ekko: *You know Senna... the lady has a talent in picking up the worst guys possible. Well at least she doesn't get friend zoned like a certain someone i know.*

(Y/N): Hey hey hey! Shots fired!

Yasuo: *Anyway my brother we have a present for you!*

My eyes started sparkling since these two knew what my favorite type of gifts were

Ekko: *I bet you think its a new Razor Mouse don't you ?*

I was just nodding my head like a child on Christmas

Yasuo: *Well guess what !*

(Y/N): WHAT?

Ekko: Its not ! *grin*

And they started laughing like crazy. I was pretty pissed of how they found this funny, but considering that right then Senna came inside and smacked them both on their heads made me smile again

Senna: *Seriously can u guys be quiet, and hey (Y/N) happy birthday! Qiyana also says hi but she is to lazy to get up.*

(Y/N): Thanks Senna, how are you ?

Senna: *Oh i am fine i actually... ah wait!*

Senna took out her phone that just at that moment started to ring and she made a huge grin

Senna: *OH yaaaaaay its that guy Lucian from the club a few nights ago, i gotta go!*

She screamed like a little girl and just ran out

(Y/N): Wait.... did she just find a new one ?

Yasuo and Ekko: *Probably*

Meh what can you do i got friend zoned which happens allot and i missed my chance... which i never had, i really need to learn to be more aggressive but.... i don't know i just get scared of getting hurt... like that time on Christmas with.... crap no bad memory go away

Yasuo: *Yo man you OK ? You have a very depressed look*

Yasuo had a concerned look on his face and he got closer to the camera with a frown

(Y/N): Yea man just some bad memories

They both looked at each other then just nodded and then Ekko started tipping, after a few moments a file got transferred

I just looked at them while they smiled and said

Ekko and Yasuo: *Happy Birthday*

Once i opp end the file i was shocked. It was a black ticket with golden letters screaming DIAMOND VIP in my face. And under that it was written KD/A

(Y/N): Holy Shit!

Yasuo: *I know its not probably what you expected but we think this is good for you !*

(Y/N): Man i mean i like KD/A but holy shit DIAMOND VIP are you crazy this probably costs like 6 months of my pay.

Ekko: *More like 16 but that is not the point!*

I knew who KD/A were. I found out about them since they did a opening act for a world championship for one of my favorite games. Not to mention they were so freaking hot i mean i even had a few thoughts about them during my happy time.

I followed them here and there but nothing extreme nothing on a diehard level that would make me go to their concert i was a rock fan more. I just made a confused face and frown while looking at the file and then at the two of them

(Y/N): Man i mean thank you this is amazing but i cant accept this, and plus its not like i am a die hard...

Before i could finish my sentence Yasuo just raised his hand and stooped me

Yasuo: *OK listen here when is the last time you went out ?*

I just lowered my head

Yasuo: *Me and Ekko are your only friends and Ekko is 7 years younger then us!*

Ekko: *Hey!*

Yasuo: *You only go out when we are there and you didn't even go for the quarter year Larp. Garen called me and asked if you are alive just so you know.*

Yasuo then just crossed his arms and went his i am gonna give a wise speech now

Yasuo: *This is a good opportunity for you, go to the concert, you flash this ticket listen to some music and then go meet the pop-stars, after that you all go for the after party they are hosting*

I actually had a shocked face, and when i read the full description and noticed it did say i get to meet them and then go to a party with them which made a small smile appear on my face... but then the sweet and panic started

Ekko: *Yea man i actually agree with them you need to get out more! FFS you are still a vi...*

(Y/N): Shut it! Its not true!

Ekko: *Half way doesn't count !*

Ekko then just shrugged his shoulders and got up and left

Yasuo: *Don't worry about the price, we pulled some strings since we know one of their members and gave a good word in for you.*

He then made a big grin on his face

Yasuo: *Go there meet some people mingle and who knows maybe and just maybe, it will change your life. And for all that is holy please don't drink. We both know what happens when you get drunk! If you start singing they will call the police to arrest you for attempted murder !*

He had a extremely serious face on him now and started nagging like a mother

Yasuo: *You know you tend to get drunk from just 2 bears . And then all hell gets out !*

I couldn't say nothing i just had a smile on my face. These two bastards knew me, one that feeds 80% of his games and one that screams in rage did something like this. They are thinking about my life and they want to help. There was nothing i could say to disagree with them... but still i was nervous

(Y/N): Fine thank you... i will try to have fun i promise....

Yasuo just continued smiling

Yasuo: Good, enjoy yourself tonight and call us tomorrow and...

Ekko: *If you don't call us, it means you got finally lucky, that's my boy, PEACE OUT!*

And just like that Ekko jumped on Yasuo's head, said what he had to say and ended the call

(Y/N): KD/A ... what can go bad right ? And the car is picking me tonight... better find something normal to wear

Oh the flags with those last words we all know where this is going when somebody Jinxes it. But anyway end of chapter one now its time for our pop stars to finally make a appearance and again thank you for reading this and all feedback is appreciated.

CHAPTER 2 (Call The Police NOW!)

Already at chapter 2. So lets see how (Y/N)'s night goes will it be what we expect or something else. And just want to tell all the people who are reading this thank you for staying with me.

I was standing in front of my apartment waiting for the driver to come. It was a cold night considering it was just the end of September. Even if i didn't have my smokes in my mouth i believe the steam would still be forming just by breathing. Since it was lets say a special night i decided to put on some fancy clothes for change, and when i say fancy i mean just switch some stuff.

I was wearing black pants with a nice orange shirt and just a simple leather jacket with classy black shoes. As i was throwing my cigarette on the ground and stomping on it to turn it off, as a black car just came around the corner stooping in front of me.

The man that came out.... well the only thing that came to my mind was holy shit the zoo had a break out. He was almost 2m tall with a muscle frame and a mustache that looked like it came from those Victorian Steampunk pictures. He then looked down upon me and with a deep voice that sounded like a bear growling with a strong northern accent

????: Excuse me sir i am looking for a person that goes under name (Y/N) (L/N). Do you know where i might find him?

I just made a loud gulp with my throat and answered the big bear... i mean man in a weak voice

(Y/N): That would be me sir, i am (Y/N).

He just raised an eyebrow and looked me up to down while putting a hand on his chin

????: May i pleas see some identification?

I swear his muscles actually bulged! I hastily pulled out my wallet and showed him my documentation that had my picture next to my name and some other basic info confirming my identity

(Y/N): Is this fine sir? I am afraid i don't have a drivers license. Not a fan of driving....

I was sweating like crazy while this guy was going over my picture on the document, and praying to anything i can think of this guy doesn't decide to punch me suddenly, those hands look like they could brake stone. The man returned my document and made a big smile and a chuckle that sounded like it was a bear mating call

????: *smile* Thank you very much sir i just had to confirm it was you. You don't look as i diehard fan which usually have these types of tickets, no offense please, the name is Braum and i will be your driver for tonight.

Then he open the back car door and motioned his hand for me to enter. I followed his instructions, and already while entering i could to say this limo looked amazing, just siting on the seats was already shocking, OMG i had a nice chair since i spend most of my time behind my laptop but this... this was a different world. After Braum sat in front on the drivers seat he turned and spoke to me in his bear voice and big smile

Braum: Feel free to smoke in the back this is gonna be a little longer ride, and if you want any music just request .

I have to say i am usually nervous around new people but this guy just made me smile. You could see he was one of those big gentle guys that would not hurt a kitten until you pissed them off, and what can i say my panic attack backed off. Lets just not piss him off.

(Y/N): Well... i am OK with music but its not for everybody... i don't have that mainstream taste

Then Braum just smiled!

(*TIME SKIP)*

About 45 min latter me and Braum were screaming in laughter while listening to a band called Linkin Park. Apparently the big guy was fan of DnD and Larp. When he heard i am Ekko's and Yasuo's friend he changed his attitude completely suddenly becoming a big friend since he was apparently a fantasy nerd like us.

Braum: And then you see our party Gnome Barbarian yelling to the enemy Orc " I am gonna fist you to my shoulder" HAhahahahahahahhahahahahahha

I was screaming in laughter with him, it was a good story and we were sharing some of our experiences. But all good things had to come to a stop. Braum stooped in front of the stadium and when i got out of the car i went pale. There were thousands and thousands of people, i heard the stadium can hold up to 3000 people but this is ridiculous this was more then that, there were camps all around probably people who came a few days ago to be first in the line and my insecurity was going max speed. I felt a big hand on my should then and a soft rumble

Braum: Don't worry my friend you are gonna skip this, you are diamond VIP no. Ah look there is Mundo he is the Manager and he will take you to your seat.

I just wanted to scream " Can i go home now" Since i was very bad with big crowds.... not to mention that Mundo was a demon.... a very very big demon in a corporate suit.

Akali POV :

I was siting on the couch checking my spray can bombs to make sure they were all working properly. Last time i almost messed up my entrance because of a broken pin

Kai'Sa: And one... and a two.... and spin *huff*

Kai was doing her regular routine in the center of the room warming up for her dance and checking her moves

Evelynn: *Tch*

And Evelynn was of course having a frown on her face while surfing her phone, probably some nasty rumors again, she acts like she doesn't care but we know they piss her off

Suddenly the door to our changing room opened and Ahri walked in with a frown on her face. She was reading some papers which were probably the special guests list

Ahri: OK ladies we are going to start in 20 min, are we all ready?

Kai'sa stooped dancing and just nodded her head, while Evelynn lifted her head and made a frown. Her attention was focused on the papers in Ahris hands

Evellyn: Is that the tonight's VIP list ? Whats the situation?

Ahri just sighted

Ahri: We have a few repeaters and a few new people. Mostly the classic type, some die hard fans a few high income cooperates and..... two actors from those famous Tv shows that are a hit now.

Both me and Kai'sa sighted at those words

Akali: Crap they are the worst. They think because they are popular we will drop our panties as soon as they smile or drop a compliment... By the way what happened to that reality show host ? The one i broke the nose on his face.

Evelynn just made a evil smile while looking at me

Evelynn: Oh don't worry dear, he will never bother us again

I knew Eve for years now and she still tends to gives me shivers some times. Ahri then made a frown and started scratching her head... OMG i want to scratch her ears so bad but we are not allowed anymore after that drinking game

Ahri: The only strange thing i don't get is this one guy that has a Diamond VIP ticket. I did a background cheek and there is nothing special on him. He doesn't have a income to buy something like this on a whim and he is not one of our hard fans.

Once i heard those words i just perked up and jumped

Akali: OHhhhhhh that's Ekko's and Yasuo's friend!

I actually had a smile on my face and the girls just looked my way with confusion

Akali: Oh common you remember, Ekko was talking about him last time when we all meet. The guy that's responsible for Yasuo's amazing nicknames

At that moment Ahri actually got on of her mischievous smiles on her face, of course she did, teasing people was her favorite thing after shopping, and we all loved to make Yasuo facepalm with his nicknames. But Evelynn just had a upset face

Evelynn: Let me guess we are supposed to be extra nice to him and show him a good time *tch* Maybe hold his hand through the whole process and act like he is our best friend.... you know i hate this type of stuff.

Well i can understand her, Ekko was telling m their friend was shy and not into socializing. I owe him a few favors so i accepted, for the girls there was no reason. Lets just hope is not some moron who thinks that by being nice he will get special treatment and get full off himself we actually had some of those situations.

I still remember that dick that spammed us with messages every day just because Ahri went on a date with him once, and he was so nice in the

beginning until it all changed and he started acting like he owns us . Good thing Evelynn saw right through him and she was ready to take care of him at a moments notice

.Suddenly the door opened and one of the staff just yelled

Staff Woman: 10 min to go ladies

(Y/N) POV

I was siting in the VIP both alone with a Jack&Coke in my hands. I needed to drink something to relax and one glass of this is going to help. The thousands and thousands of people were screaming behind me non stop the bands name. I was almost on the break of a panic attack because of my situation.

Not only did i get so many dirty looks while walking to the seats, i am basically right in front of the stage. I could actually probably touch them if i extend my hands, which is probably a bad idea since the number of guards is not a joke i mean holy crap is that guy over there even a human, imagine Braum one head shorter with arms 4 times larger. I don't want to even think what would happen if this guy decided to teach somebody a lesson.

While i was doing everything i can to stop my panic attack the light suddenly went out and the screaming got even louder then before. I couldn't even react before the most beautiful vastaya lady showed up on the stage , it looked like she just came through a portal and of course i knew who she was

Ahri: Hello my dears how are you all tonight!

The screaming was loud! There were screams going from "I LOVE YOU" "CAN I PET YOUR EARS" "ARA ARA ME WITH YOUR TAILS" Wow the perverts but man those ears.... and those tails i know they are crystal now but i can only imagine how fluffy they are when they are normal.

Right away Evellyn showed up who stood right next to Ahri it looked like she came from the darkness itself

Evellyn: Hello my pets are you going to behave tonight? I hope not?

The screaming was even louder mostly male base "MISTRESS EVELYN I LOVE YOU" " MISTRESS EVELLYN STEP ON ME". I couldn't blame them she was standing directly in front of me and man... i had to cross my legs how does she even move in that dress i'ts leaving nothing to my imagination.

A purple streak suddenly past fast through the stage and Kai'Sa front flipped in super speed next on the other side of Ahri

Kai'Sa: Hello all i hope you have a wonder-full time!

What can i say... the smile was beautiful " MARRY ME" " NO MARRY ME ANGEL" "DANG GIRL YOUR THIC" OK seriously why do i have a feeling that's one guy... and the worst part is i agree with everything, we would probably be friends

Suddenly colorful smoke showed up everywhere and u can hear a sound of a bike. Ofc the person standing in front leaning on her bike after the smoke cleared out was the fan favorite Akali, probably the only rap "artist" music i can stomach

Akali: Sup! Are you ready to have a good time?

"KYAAAAAAAAAAA" yep stronger female fan base definitely "AKALI WE LOVE YOU" " AKALI BE MY SISTER" the males were not a joke as well "AKALI!" " LET ME DO SHOTS ON YOUR ABS!" OK that's definitely the same guy and i need to meet him, i am sure we will be friends

Ahri: Now without further ado lets do this, have a wonderful time and a special thank you to all our VIP guests

And then it started

TIMESKIP

I was just putting a mental note in my head to kiss Ekko and Yasuo when i see them next time, this was AMAZING. The whole show was amazing, the whole atmosphere was awesome. I cant remember the last time i had so much fun that was not in my usual safe place even my panic attack completely disappeared even though i probably spent the whole time red when ever Evelynn was in front of me.

Ahri: Thank you all for coming, have a safe trip home and for our lovely VIP we look forward to meeting you tonight.

And the panic comes again. I knew what came next I was supposed to go meet the stars and then go to the party with them... shit i am gonna embarrass myself, what if they laugh when they see me...

(Y/N): Ok (Y/N) relax just relax (Y/N). You will not be the only one! And Ekko & Yas probably told them about you

I started going to the back stage, i know their Manager Mundo gave me instructions how to get their even though he has a tendency to talk in 3rd person. Lets hope i don't get lost... i suck in directions. As i was moving through the backstage thinking how to introduce my self i heard a sound

?????: Waaaaaah waaaah mommy

I looked to the left and saw a small kid siting on the floor crying his eyes out. He probably got lost... meh not my problem. I learned the hard way not to stick my nose in other peoples business, it never pays out.

It's not like in movies and anime where a good deeds pays out. You just get a thank you and that's if you are lucky, plus i had other things to take care off as i went around the corner. As i was about to continue my journey the crying suddenly stooped and i heard a older voice

?????: Now now why you crying big boy? It's not good for men to cry

I don't know why but that voice sounded bad. I looked back and there was a guy standing over the boy giving him his hand. I should have just probably continued going to the backstage but man... the look in his eyes.... i knew

that look i saw it in the library a few times, and i might be a smart-ass but i am not a asshole.... it would be so much easier if i was a asshole

Pervert: Now come with uncle here. He will make you happy.

(Y/N): Oh reallllyyyyy can i come to uncle?

Yea i was tipsy, i had a couple of drinks and my mind was doing stupid things

Pervert: What.... who are

(Y/N): How about you stfu and get away before i call the police ha ? Uncle!

The guy didn't even answer he just started running in the other direction. The little boy was looking at the guy running and then looked upon me

Boy: Thank you mister... he looked scary...

I just smiled upon him, hah smart kid.

(Y/N): Yea next time when you see guy like that you yell pervert! Got it ?

Boy: Sure thank you i will yell with all my voice like this, PERVERT!!!

Wait did he just scream that... no common this is not some...

?????: NOOO GET AWAY FROM MY SON, HELP!

You got to be FUCKING KIDDING ME, now, now you show up and this moment is this a manga what the fuck is this timing. I am not such a big believer of god, i like to think there is destiny or fate and at that moment fate was a pms bitch.

On the corner of my eye i saw "of course" the same biggest bodyguard who makes Braum look like a twig. He was running at my way full speed OHHH and he also has a power to go full stone..... Yay ... not!

?????: RAAAARGH!!!

I still remember how i loved watching pro wrestling, and i remember how sad i was when i found out it was fake... but man people can say what ever they want but some of those moves hurt like hell on TV even though they were fake. The spear this guy did to my stomach was definitely not fake. I can honestly say without shame I am barfing while flying through the air, oh look i had eggs for breakfast... i forgot .... FML

(TIMESKIP)

I was siting on the chair while two staff members were putting bandages all over my abdomen. The woman who was the boy's mother was standing on the side apologizing non stop and the rock train that is apparently called Malph was just looking down on the floor while holing one of his hands behind his head

Malph: Sir i am so sorry i have no words to apologize enough!

BoyMother: As well i am so sorry i didn't know, please don't blame Malph it is my fault i couldn't find a sitter for tonight and i had to bring him!

When i look better at her she was clearly a staff worker her. Then i looked upon the rock train and i could see he was feeling very bad... i just sighted

Boy: Hahah you were flying so fast, and you made such funny sounds and that stuff that came out of your mout....

He didn't even finish when his mother smacked him over the head. I just made a small smile, yep he is going to be a smart-ass, i cant stay mad

(Y/N): Yea its all OK, stuff like this happens. Just give me dinner since i lost my lunch and breakfast and we will be good

They actually smiled at those words

(Y/N): Now sorry i need to go backstage i have a meting with the KD/A

And then their faces went pale and they all looked to the floor right away... Oh common seriously. What now !?

Malph: I am sorry sir but you were out... ahem for about 40 min... they left 10 min ago

I couldn't believe what i was hearing are they kidding me. OK, OK no worries IL just make them take me to the party

StaffWoman: And i am afraid we don't know where they went.

MOTHERFU....

StaffWoman: They didn't want any uninvited people on the party, so it's kept secret on a need to know basis.

(Y/N): But cant you call the mndz or something i am sure he know where it is ?

And then they got even more pale and i started to understand what is going on

BoysMother: If i call him i will get in trouble for bringing my son to work...

Malph: And this is not the first time it happened that i knocked someone out... He will be mad on this situation..... i might even lose my job.....

FFS, are you kidding me, so now i can chose to either not go to the party where i would probably have a amazing time or i can get these two into big trouble probably even maybe costing them their job .... i am a smart-ass but regretfully i was not a asshole... why am i not a asshole! My life would be so much easier.

(Y/N): I see... fine can somebody just take me home then please.

I gave up... yea one of my biggest problems i give up to fast but i guess this way at least i wont have a panic attack when i meet the idols.... fuck i hate this i was really looking forward to this

TIMESKIPE (next day)

Mundo POV

Mundo: Yea baby you just make sure we get the kaching from that contract and alll is good baby yea, now Mundo go Mundo has work, CYAO from Mundo

Mundo was happy, Mundo made a good deal now, Mundo would be even more happy but he was reading a strange email. Apparently one of the VIP from yesterday didn't attend ? Mundo sure they all come at first. If they don't go to after party Mundo don't care. While Mundo was thinking the door to his office opened and Malph came. Mundo like Malph he a little slow but do his job properly

Mundo: Mundo happy to see Malph, now tell Mundo what you need

Malph: There was a situation last night... and i would feel better if i just tell you instead of hiding it and you maybe finding out about it latter

Ohhhh..... Mundo not happy anymore

Akali POV

Well last night went as much as we expected. We meet the fans, we went to the party... and it went all to shit. The TV stars started with the classic charms and when they see it was not going their way they started being aggressive. Luckily Evellyn was there and she was in a bad place ... i guess their shows will be looking for new actors.

A few more guys annoying us with their nice talk while constantly looking at our bodies. I mean that one was seriously drooling while looking at ass of Kai'Sa, good thing i accidentally bumped him into the table, hehe.

The strange thing is that that guy never showed up, i actually saw him in the VIP seats during the show he looked like he had a good time, but when it come to him nothing special really, if you could define average he was the definition of it. The only thing i found interesting is that when ever Evelyn tried to make eye contact with him he would blush and turn his eyes which of course she noticed and started to exploit whole night. I am starting to think that the reason for her bad mode was that he never came. Makes sense really you could see she was having fun

RING RING RING My phone started ringing at that moment

Akali: Yo ?

Ekko: *Yo Kali my girl how it going baby ?*

Akali: Hey what up Ekko all good, how it down there on the south. Gigs going all good ?

Ekko: Yea girl all fine we having fun here, planing to come back in 2 months i hear you guys gonna stay in Piltover for a few months.

Seriously already the info is out. Yea we are planing to stay, good place nice gear and wee need some time to prepare for the other album

Ekko: *Oh i watched the video of last nights show. Daaaang girl nice moves on the ending !*

Akali: Ah i know right i wanted to add ...

Suddenly you can hear Ekko getting pushed and somebody telling him turn on the speaker, since the girls were in the room with me and they were already looking my way i decided to do same

Yasuo: *Hey Akali we called you to ask how was it with (Y/N) ?*

Ahri: Who ?

Kai'Sa: Ah you know the guy from seat 2, the one that never showed up, their friend

Ahri: Ah yea him, the one who was getting red every time Evelynn was in front of him

While these two were talking on behind me Evelyn just had a evil little smirk. Yea she definitely noticed him blushing and he is definitely the reason she was upset on that party

Ekko: *No no man come on ? Don't play with me he is not answering any phone calls and he didn't turn on his laptop today since no info on Skype or discord. With who did he get lucky ? aaa ? Don't tell me it was Quin , you never put your dick in crazy!*

OK now i definitely had no idea what was going on

Akali: No Ekko he never showed up for the party not even for the "Meet the Idols event"

Both Ekko and Yasuo were suddenly quiet. Until Yasuo spoke in a careful voice

Yasuo: *Are you sure ? I mean maybe he just went stayed in the corner ? He hates to be in attention and you guys didn't notice him ?*

Akali: Unless his ability is go invisible then no, he was not there.

Ekko: *The hell man!*

You could hear Ekko was upset

Ekko: *I talked to Braum he hipped him up, in the end and he was even wearing nice clothes instead of his standard Jeans with Black shirt. He doesn't wear nice clothes if he is not looking forward to something.*

That was nice clothes ?

Ahri: Braum ?

Ekko: *One of your drivers and bodyguards. He likes stuff like us so it was a good fit for him to bring him, and according to Braume (Y/N) was looking forward to it*

Then Evelyn suddenly spoke with her slurry tone

Evellyn: Well considering he was red in the face 80% of the night and was drinking maybe...

She didn't even finish her words until those two started yelling in full force

Yasuo & Ekko: *HE WAS DRINKING ???? HOW MUCH?!?*

Kai'Sa just got flustered and said in a timid voice

Kai'Sa: I don't know, maybe one or two? I didn't really pay attention. And i saw his glass full those few times i looked towards him....

Yasuuo; *FUCK I TOLD YOU WE SHOULD HAVE JUST BOUGHT HIM A MOUSE!!*

Ekko: *THIS IS NOT MY FAULT, FUCK FUCK FUCK HE KNOWS HE SHOULD NEVER DRINK ALONE !*

Ok now I am worried

Yasuo: *Call the police NOW, give description fast fuck where is he*

These guys were having a full on panic attack, and u can see Ahri actual grabbing her phone. But before she could even start dialing

Mundo: No worries Mundo here knows what happened

I looked upon the door and saw Mundo standing there with one of our bodyguards. I think it was Malph i remember him because he was the biggest one of them

Mundo: Ahri did you check the survey email ? Go check, Mundo thinks it gonna give some explanation and Mr. Malph gonna give the rest

The big guy was actually pretty flustered and he started to speak in a weak voice.

Oooookkkk this went much longer then i expected il try to keep the future chapter to 3k words max, thank you all for staying with me and i hope you enjoyed it, now onto to the next one.

CHAPTER 3(If I Am Going To Do It Properly !)

Wow two chapters in 1 day ula la. I have to say when i started writing this yesterday i never imagined how much fun i would have because i am having a blast and without future a due lets continue our adventure.

PS: I am not sure but should i maybe put this story under Mature ? The swearing is weak in my opinion more like words in specific moments. But knowing my future plans there will be some more lets say adult talk, not to mention some forms verbal abuse. For lemon i am not sure i think i will suck in writing that but if i do decide to put it will be told in advance

(Y/N) POV:

Well last night was interesting... After Malph drove me home i just fell in my bed asleep. Which meant i didn't put my alarm on which also meant i was late to work today. How can such a small lady be so scary, i will never understand my boss. When i came this morning Yumi first slapped me on the head a few times for being late but then congratulated me for my birthday... then she was mad again and started slapping me again. The worst thing is that i noticed just then that my phone was broken, it probably broke during my flying lesson with the rock train Malph

(Y/N): FML *sight*

Today was Saturday, so it meant the library was completely empty, which is fine with me bcs i am to lazy to work today, not to mention that email that i was able to check on the work PC this morning. First i was shocked and i was not sure what to think when i saw it " KD/A VIP SURVEY" so i just decided to be honest... well honest without trying to get Malph intro trouble. The man was apologizing non stop on the ride back. He was a good guy, a little slow but good *"Dear KD/A team*

Thank you for the amazing concert i don't remember the last time i had so much fun, now for the "IDOL MEET" and after party i am afraid i didn't attend because of certain circumstance and i can not comment in any way that is beneficial to you.

With respect (Y/N) (L/N)

Nothing else i could really say. And i sent that email in the morning and that was that-. My biggest problem now is how am i going to explain this to Yasuo and Ekko. They will never believe me, probably gonna say some bullshit like " You chickened out"

????: ... se me

Already i can imagine that scowl, and even if they do they are probably going to laugh like crazy

????: ...cuse ME

OK, just one more hour of my shift and i can finally close up and go home. Maybe my new game finished downloading and i can kill some worries, and then...

????: EXCUSEEEEEE MEEEEEEEEEEEEEEE!!!!!!!

(Y/N): HOLY !!!!

I got a heart attack. A woman was basically in my face screaming at me i didn't even notice her presence, how did he even get this close to me what the hell. OK calm down lets just switch to business mode and finish this. But WTF, all day nobody and now hits loud mouth shows up

(Y/N): Yes hello, how may i assist you ?

????: Finally i was calling you for 5min already *humph*.

Did she just *humph* me. The woman just made a upset face and raised her head... oh great one of those people who think they are in the center of the world. Wait is that a camera behind her ?

Jaina: Hello my name is Jaina and i am the hostess of the show " STARS TODAY, DISAPPOINTMENT TOMORROW" i am sure you know of me

(Y/N):... yea sure

Nope have no idea. Not only am i not good with new people but now even a camera is in my face. This is like panic attack critical hit

Jaina: I would like to hold a talk with you about your night!

(Y/N): Sorry ?

Jaina: You were a VIP guest on the KD/A concert right ? I am here to have a talk with you as a private show.

Seriously ? Crap and i cant say no. If Yumi finds out we had a TV crew here and i turned them away she will be so mad, i guess i can talk about how it was and maybe promote this library, hey if i bring people thanks to this more pay right ?

(Y/N): Well *ahem* i guess so. I wouldn't mind..

Jaina: Prefect lets start this *grin*!

I don't know why... but i got a feeling this is a bad idea....

Ahri POV:

OMG this day started so bad. First off i had to talk to all those show directors about those 2 idiots from last night. Then i had to play with my schedule bcs one of the fashion designers cancelled and now this whole situation with that guy (Y/N)

I mean i cant really be angry on him. The survey email was not bad really in the eyes of normal people, but for our world it was a insult. He probably didn't even mean it. And now bcs I am the only one who has time now have to go to this library that Yasuo told me and try to talk to him before those media vultures get the chance.

At first we were gonna wait tomorrow and then all go together but then Eve actually found the video of Malph spearing him in the gut and him flying 5m until he crashed in the wall. I cant even imagine our faces then. Malph is telling his story and we are looking at him like he is crazy. I mean come on this stuff never happens, right ? And then Yasuo just started sighting over the phone while Ekko was laughing like crazy saying he would not be surprised if that happened, apparently that guy (Y/N) like to say he has bad luck.

Ofc i was still skeptical until i actually saw the video of him flying... its was very funny and to tell you the truth, i was surprised that guy actually decided to stay quiet to protect Malph and the staff member. Which Ekko just answered with " He's a smart-ass not a Asshole"

Ahri: Like that is supposed to explain anything !

As i pulled up to the library i almost crashed into the tree. The worst possible media already came, their sole purpose is to destroy celebrities. Even if we have a giant fan-base its gonna all go to hell when they are done with him. I ran out of my car and inside but i was already to late.

That bitch Jana was siting with him and all cameras were rolling and you can see the show started, but the worst thing is that its all live. I could show up but its just gonna be even worse if i interfere. I better see if i can do damage control right away and i pulled my phone fast calling Evelyn

Ahri: Hey Evelyn!

Evelynn: *Yea ? (sound over the phone)*

Ahri: Turn on that " STARS TODAY, DISAPPOINTMENT TOMORROW" site

Evelynn: .....*Shit*.....*Can you stop it somehow ?*

Ahri: No its already started.... i was to late....

Evellyn: *Ok we are all here in the penthouse and Kai'Sa is sending Mundo a message lets see how it goes maybe we will be able to fix it somehow.*

I turned off my phone and started paying attention to the two of them. You can clearly see the guy was unconformable and was wiping his face with a napkin and drinking water... oh god she is going to eat him up

Jaina: So Ladies and Gent's i am here with mister (Y/N), say hello good sir!

(Y/N): *cough* hh-elo *ahem*

Jaina: Now now, no need to be nervous we are here just to hear the truth and have your side of the story

She had such a evil smile she knew she had this in the bag... this is gonna be so much dmg control. We really didn't need this kind of attention

BRRRR I noticed my phone vibrate and i saw a message from Akali

I just talked to Yasuo he said this will either go two ways and to hope it goes the 2nd way

**What does he mean by two ways ? **

I don't know Ekko started jumping like a small child and he said we are about to see the greatest show ever if Jaina play her cards right

I have no idea what was going on her... these guys don't care, they don't have to deal with this and Ekko is just a child in her eyes.

Jaina: So mister (Y/N) you were on the KD/A concert last night as a Diamond VIP, right ?

(Y/N): *ahem* Y-yes mam, it was a b-birthday present from my f-friends*

Omg he was stuttering so much this is going to be a disaster and that bitch knew. She had one of the biggest smiles i ever saw

Jain: *GRIN* I bet you had a amazing time right ?

(Y/N): *Ahem* Yes the concert was aaa-amazing *cough* can i get some w-water pls.

Jaina: And how was the after party ?

And there we go, our carers are gonna take a huge hit

(Y/N): Sorry ?

Jaina: The after party how was the after party Mr. (Y/N)?

(Y/N): Www-ell i cant really say. I never went there

Jaina just raised her voice with glee

Jaina: I know because of the tragic disrespecting attitude of the KD/A staff

(Y/N): Sorry, www-hat ?

And then she pulled her phone and showed it to him probably the video and for sure she is showing it on her site

Jaina: To think that after helping that sweet young boy you will be attacked like this

(Y/N) was just quiet looking at the video and then at Jaina.... how am i ever gonna fix this dmg

Jaina: And after all of that the KD/A stars didn't even wait for you they just left for the party not even checking up if you are OK.

Then that bitch got up turned to the camera and made a big pose with one of her hands pointing towards (Y/N)

Jaina: This young man is a hero and those so called Celebrity STARS which love all fans didn't even dare to see how he is... how tragic *sniff*

You called that fake crying, Akali can do it better and she cant act if her life depended on it... crap i should really stop this. I was getting ready to charge

in and try to use my charms on all of them, maybe il be lucky and we can try something for the future but the words that came out next froze me in my place

(Y/N): Are you this naturally stupid or are you just playing ?

And all went silent with Jaina being completely frozen in her pose

KAI'SA POV:

(Y/N): *Are you this naturally stupid or are you just playing ?*

I was shocked we all were shocked even Evelyn put down her phone and she never puts down her phone during situations like this, i could only suddenly hear from Akali's phone as her friend Ekko starting to laugh and scream " *YES!!! HERE IT COMES"* and then Yasuo sighting and saying in a relaxed voice " *She pushed the Goku button"* ***(A/N: sorry it was stronger then me)***

(Y/N) POV

(Y/N): Are you this naturally stupid are you just playing

I was pissed, i was so mad i cant remember the last time i was mad like this. I know i was suspicious on the channel name but common seriously, this lady was taking every single moment and every single of my words to turn it her way. I don't care anymore this has crossed the line

(Y/N): Do you even hear yourself ?

Jaina: Mr.(Y/N) ? I...

(Y/N): Shut up while i am talking now!

She had such a shocked face on right about now. Even her crew were looking at me in awe, and considering they were snickering in my face a few sec ago it felt good.

(Y/N): First off since you are clearly here it means you know what happened last night no ?

She just nodded while i crossed my arms and my legs. I can only imagine my face i heard from my friends that i tend to get scary when i am mad... truthfully i never believed them since i cant remember the last time i was this pissed off.

(Y/N): Well apparently you don't. Because you wouldn't be asking these kind of stupid questions and saying such stupid statements with such a straight face!

Jaina: Mr. (Y/N) there is no ne....

(Y/N): I said shut up or do i need to repeat my self!

Holy shit was i growling ? My mouth was just working non stop and apparently i really was growling because she actually shivered

(Y/N): You clearly have no idea what happened and you came to a premature conclusion on your own terms just for publicity.

My voice was starting to raise and god damn it felt good. I had allot of stress inside of me

(Y/N): Did you maybe think i wanted for that to happen ?

Jaina: huh ?

(Y/N): You can clearly see i was choking on that video and Mr. Malph the hero that he is charged into my stomach because he had no time for a Heimlich maneuver

Jain: HUH ?

(Y/N): You could clearly see food coming out of my mouth.... it was chocking me !

I'm maybe not a brightest cookie in the jar but i understood what was going on her. She wanted to spit on KD/A for publicity. Now i am not such a die hard fan to lie on camera for them but her attitude and her way of speaking just pissed me so off i am going to make sure she never does this again. I hate bullies and i especially hate these type of people who will destroy anybody for their entertainment

(Y/N): And for what are you blaming the KD/A group for ? According to them i was knocked out 40min and they didn't even know it actually happened ? Are you blaming them for not having any fortune telling powers ? Wow that discrimination is amazing!

OMG the bullshit... i should have been a lawyer

(Y/N): What i see here is a pathetic woman who couldn't get a real job on the news or movie business so she is attacking people who are actually successful. HOW DARE YOU MADAM!

Yes, yes now bring it in but make it classy

(Y/N): And you know what i think about you and your show

And then thy all gasped.... crap did i just flip her on the camera... i said classy... meh hell lets do it all the way then

(Y/N): If i am going to do it properly !

I then raised my second hand i used both of them to show my middle finger. Crap i am so screwed it was nice knowing you world at least Yasuo promised to delete my browser history

Kai'Sa POV

(Y/N): *If i am going to do it properly !*

Wow... what just happened? Akali was screaming in laughter and her friend could have been heard from the phone laughing with her "

AHAHHAHAHAHAHAHAHHAHAHAHAHAHAHHAHAHA I KNEW IT. GOD! SUCH A LONG TIME SINCE WE SAW HIM LIKE THAT" " That's what happens when u push the Goku Button"

I have no idea what they were talking about. And i was also shocked that Evelyn was standing and in front of the TV having a look i didn't see in a very long time, of pure Happiness and Amusement... poor guy she set her sighs on him.

But what shocked me the most is me. I was giggling non stop. It was clear this guy was so embarrassed for the whole show, he was stuttering and sweating so much in the beginning and constantly looking around himself, it was clear that he felt so uncomfortable i know how it feels because i felt this so many times... but this this was AMAZING !

Kai'sa: he he he

Evellyn: Wow even our princess is giggling

Akali: Hahahahah, you have no right, hahaha to say anything, hahahah i can see your face !

Ekko: *Haha all hail LORD GRAY !*

Yasuo: *EKKO!!!!!!!!!*

Ekko: *Oh crap!*

Yasuo suddenly screamed over the phone and we stooped laughing once we heard those words. You can see our faces were shocked!

Akali: Lord Grey ?

Evelyn: He is a powerless ?

You could hear dead silence until Yasuo started to speak in a weak voice

Yasuo: *Guys pls, don't ask us anything it would not be right*

Now i was definitely shocked. A powerless person is more rare then a white Yordel. And to think there is someone so close to us.

Mundo: Wait ! Does Mundo se Ahri or are Mundo's eyes wrong

And then we all locked at the TV and were shocked to see Ahri standing in front of (Y/N) with her arms crossed over her chest, but the strange thing was that all her 9 tails were out and you can see she was she was ready to use her powers... what did we just miss?

Wow, you know what they say '' It's always the quiet ones" i hope you guys had fun and one more time i apologize i couldn't resist the Goku button. Maybe IL drop one more chapter tonight benefits of vacation and being single.... ignore the last part

CHAPTER 4 (It Was Raining Outside)

I have no excuses 3 chapters in one day... i really need to find a hobby while i am on vacation. But what can we do the show must go on. I hope you guys liked the previous chapter's and now finally its time for (Y/N) to meet our heroins. And what better way then for one of them to charge into his rescue. Btw i would love to hear opinions of you guys on the story so far i am open to all criticism just remember this is my first story ever DnD sessions i don't count :)

(Y/N)'s POV:

I have to say... i was feeling good, i had so much stress pent up, and when this bitch here started to act the way she did it just went boom! Still flipping people on camera is probably not the best thing i could have done...

(Y/N): So how about you pick up your crew and get the fu....

I froze because the look that this chick Jaina was giving me was screaming murder, not to mention her two cameramen were nothing to joke around. The badass mod felling i was in just evaporated like smoke... oh shit

Jaina: You bastard, think you can say all of this stuff to ME !

Oh shit, oh shit, oh shit!!!!

(Y/N): I-I-I want you o-o-ou....

Jaina: SHUT UP you stuttering powerless!

And there we go she knew i was a Gray and i froze in fear, it was over i am definitely gonna die, and to confirm my suspicions she started compressing what looked like a ball made of air in her hand... oh great a Air Elementalist i had experience with them and it feels like Mike Tyson is punching you. Mike Tyson who is 340cm tall

(Y/N): I-I you cant on tele...

Jaina: What do you care i am just a fake wannabe who is getting old

I NEVER SAID THAT !!!! Ah shit i pushed her Goku button.

And then without any more word she just released it towards my face, even if i am able to survive this i have a feeling she will not let me go... i will be lucky if i get with out of this with only a few broken ribs and limbs. As i closed my eyes and was awaiting for the impact i suddenly felt something rush in front of me and in the next moment a loud "BOOM" was heard behind me. You could hear the ripped papers and books falling to the floor.

When i opened my ass first what i saw was fluffy, that is 9 fluffy tails and a goddess standing in front of me in full height with her arms crossed over her chest, wait is that Ahri ! Not to mention the aura she was giving was making me more scared then the 3 assholes from the media team .

Ahri: Really Jaina ? Using your powers on him just because he rejected you ? There is no need to get violent.

Jaina's eyes just went wide, she actually backed off a little with her voice almost breaking in fear

Jaina: Ahri! W-w-what are you doing here ? Me and Mr.(Y/N) here were having a private chat

Then she made a small smile once she got her composure back and probably remembered she is on camera and the pop star wont try anything in front of it

Jaina: It's not polite to cut in during the dance, it makes you look n....

(Y/N): Actually she can ask me when ever she want's my answer is yes ! Oh and are going to pay for those books they are not air blast prof.

OMFG SHUT UP ME ! Me and my big mouth and it was not helping, because Jaina shot daggers in my way and i could see the air was compressing in her arms. But then Ahri just turned her head and made a

extremely beautiful mischievous smile. So you see that's where the trouble began. That smile, that damned smile. And then spoke in a very sexy voice

Ahri: I believe (Y/N) here has spoken, so be a dear and please leave his work place...

Until it changed to the sound of death itself with her tales just raising different directions just making her more menacing.

Ahri: Or i will get rough....

2min. In 2 min these 3 were running outside in full speed with all of their gear... holy crap never piss of this lady. Wait AM I ALONE WITH AHRI !? As i was getting a massive panic attack

Ahri: Hi there (Y/N). Are you ok ?

(Y/N): T....

Ahri: T ?

(Y/N): Than...

Ahri: Than ?

(Y/N): T-t-t-tha-a-a-a-nk y-y-y-y-o-o-ou !

Yep massive blush and panic attack. I could actually feel my face red like tomato, and i don't remember the last time i had such a huge stutter attack. Ahri was just looking at me and then she started to laugh... i knew this was going to happen, but what i didn't expect is that the laugh was not malicious she was actually laughing out of joy.

Ahri: Hahahaha, no no its OK it was my pleasure!

She was basically wiping tears away from her eyes using one of her hands to hold her stomach

Ahri: It should be me who should be thanking you !

Nani ?

(Y/N): M-m-may i ask why ?

Ahri: I actually came here to make sure people like her don't show up.When i saw her, the worst possible person to come and to tell you the truth i gave up. But then you did such a amazing thing to protect us that i have no words to express my gratitude

And then again she gave me that smile, that damned smile again !

(Y/N): It was my p-plessure

She just nodded with a huge smiled and after that putted one of her hand on the chin and looked my way clearly getting an idea

Ahri: When do you finish you shift ?

(Y/N): Ummm in about 10min...

Ahri: Perfect we are going for dinner

Well that escalated quickly

Evellyn POV:

Well that was dangerous. That girl was just about to use a powerful ability on a powerless he would be lucky just to survive that and he probably wouldn't be able to move for a long time if even ever again.

Lucky for him Ahri actually decided to interfere... and i have to say i cant remember the last time i saw her edgy like that, she was ready to fight on the camera which is rare for her. She may be a mischievous fox in private but never on camera. We have no idea whats going on since the feed go cut off about 10min ago. And Kai'sa and Akali were already starting to panic to what happened.

BRRR BRR BRR oh speak of the fox

I am going for dinner with our savior. Need to thank him at least somehow, see you later tonight

Oh my ? Well i guess we will just have to wait until evening to hear all about it

Evellyn: Darlings i have news

(TIMESKIPE)

I was sitting with Ahri in some restaurant about 15min away from my place during the drive here she started talking and it actually helped with my stuttering it kinda went away during dinner time now we were just waiting for desert and i was trying not to blush all the time. Not only was Ahri extremely beautiful we were drawing to much attention.

Ahri: So (Y/N) i have a question ? Is it true your a powerless i heard her call you that?

If i had Vastaya ears they would probably fall down now

(Y/N): Yea ever since birth, we checked doctors and they all confirmed it, no ability no power no nothing

Ahri just made a big smile. But i saw pity in her eyes.... i hate that

Ahri: That just means your special he-he-he.....

(Y/N): Yea sure....

And here it comes the uncomfortable silence... crap why do i always do this lets try to change the subject

(Y/N): So Ahri...

Common be a man be coll ask her the question

She then suddenly had a AHA face and put her hand over her mouth

Ahri: Wait what about your workplace!? We left it in a mess !

AH SHIT !

(Y/N): Crap you are right... and my phone is broken, sorry can i borrow yours!?

Ahri: Sure i need to go powder my nose anyway il be right back.

I quickly took her phone and holy crap this is the newest model it costs more then 80% of my stuff. I started typing Yumi's number which luckily was very simple, after a couple of rings she answered

(Y/N): Hey Yumi i need to...

The sound that greeted me was full of rage, and not i am always angry and mad rage i mean pure never ending rage

Yumi: *(Y/N) you son of a bitch HOW DARE YOU CALL what did you do to my library NO NO i don't care for excuses. You know i have only one rule respect the books and don't be late. YOUR FIRED!*

First i was thinking of saying that its 2 rules but then the rest of the call hit me... i was fired. I didn't even get a chance to say anything in my defense... My mind was just drawing a blank and i couldn't think straight... why... i just tried to do the right thing...why am i getting punished...this is why life sucks and this is why i hate my luck. After a few moments i decided its just better to leave so i decided to visit the hostess and ask for the check... i don't want to talk to anybody anymore

(Y/N): Can i please get the check, and can you make sure the lady that was with me gets her phone back.

The hostess just nodded like a professional and handed me the check... why is there that extra zero on the end. Amazing my last money just went to air. While i was leaving i could here two of the waiters talking and snickering

Waiter 1: Hahah he got rejected!

Waiter 2: What did you expect look at him and look at his date she was way out of her league probably some pity date!

Pity.... if anything i can say i was lucky it was raining outside because my eyes burned

(TIMESKIP)

As i opened the door to my apartment i understood why the door was unlocked, everything was destroyed all my clothes were ripped and on the floor in shreds and yellow pools... i don't even want to think what the pools are. My PC and ps4 were broken in the middle of my room and it was clear they even destroyed my other appliances like my coffee maker and micro.

Either Jaina and her goons. Or maybe some people who saw me with Ahri on TV and had a rage moment. I just sighted and went outside i knew it was raining but i didn't care luckily my apartment has a nice curve on the side so its a good place to sit... my whole life... destroyed in one night everything from my job to my home...

(Y/N): I guess i can go back to my parents?

But then i just shuddered, and not from the rain that was falling all over me just from the nightmare that i remember that place being, all those people there all that running while the other kids were laughing and me crying.... shit.. i hate my life.

Suddenly there was a bright light in my face, when looked to the side i saw Ahri come out of the car. At first she was looking at me and then she looked at the open door to the building behind me.

(Y/N): 3rd floor, number 314....

She just went inside and after a few minutes came back with her face in rage. And then in this rain just sat next to me and said probably the words i would never expect from her or any girl like her

Ahri: Do you want to come over to my place ?

To be continued next month...

Just a joke probably going to do it tonight or tomorrow who knows. But anyway we will see how it goes. I hope you guys enjoyed this and peace out!

Chapter 5 (Why Is There Ramen In The Bathroom!?)

No wise words it's to early in the morning.

(Y/N) POV:

(Y/N): Crap i cant sleep...

I was laying in a big king sized bed looking at the ceiling. It was probably about 2am i was not sure since i didn't have a phone courtesy to the rock train Malph. I think that i maybe got about 4 hours of sleep, I guess i was just to nervous considering my situation.

FLASHBACK

I was siting on the couch with Ahri next to me and Evellyn and Kai'sa opposite of me, Akali was standing on the side with her back to the wall.

Ahri: Well i guess some introductions are in order.

Ahri said with a big smile on her face and stared pointing towards the girls

Ahri: This over there is Evelynn, right next to her is Kai'Sa and the lady leaning on the wall is Akali.

I of course knew all their names but i still decided to act appropriately... btw did i mention i was having a MASSIVE panic attack i was in the room with 4 hottest girls i have ever seen in my entire life. Plus my mind was still processing what was going on, i just kinda accepted Ahri's invitation and to tell you the truth it was just now hitting me

(Y/N): *ahem* N-n-nice to meat you my name is (Y/N) (L/N)

The first to speak was Evellyn

Evellyn: Oh we know who you are darling and can we skip the stutter please, there is no need for that now and its getting old.

I actually got massively red on her comment, and i wanted to fall through the floor but Kai'Sa cut her off right away

Kai'Sa: EVE ! Don't be like that, ignore her (Y/N), hello and welcome its nice to meet you in person!

Akali then leaned on the couch on my right, crap she was so close

Akali: Yea ignore her (Y/N), she is actually happy that you are here. You should have seen her during your inter...

At that moment i just felt a massive chill from Evelyn. Even though it was directed to Akali it was so intense that my whole body froze up.... i want to go home

Ahri: Well leaving the introductions more for latter, i actually talked to the girls over the phone during the ride here, i guess you weren't really paying attention then.

She was right the whole ride her i was just out of it, i still cant believe how much shit can happen on such a nice rainy night. Then Kai'Sa continued

Kai'Sa: The thing that we are basically offering is for you to be under our employment until you get back on your feet.

While Kai'Sa was giving a explanation Ahri pulled out a few papers and left them in front of me.

Ahri: Basically we need help around the penthouse, we need somebody to do lets say some basic maintenance stuff around the house while we are here in Piltover.

I just raised my eyebrow at that statement

Evellyn: What she is saying we need a maid.

I could only open my mouth to the words "maid" and Ahri just facepalmed... have you ever seen a pop star face palm ? I just did and its cute.

Evelyn: You are gonna Cook, Clean do our Laundry. Well basically anything that we tell you to do.

I decided to go over the contract and after skimming through it my mouth just activated by itself

(Y/N): According to this i am basically your slave ?

Evellyn just made a seductive smirk and grabbed my chin in her fingers... Omg she is so close i can smell her perfume in full power, my face is going full crimson mod

Evellyn: That's right darling we have some bad experience in the past so we are leaving nothing to chance, i hope you understand we are doing you a huge favor with this. Usually people have to go through a whole screening process for something like this and would die for a job like this.

And crimson mod OFF. Basically they were taking pity on me... at that moment i wanted just to get up and leave, but truthfully i had no choice. And Evellyn just made a smile like she read my mind completely

Evellyn: Exactly you understand this is a good opportunity, and considering how much we are paying you, the option is a no brainier what's a little pride considering the positive outcome.

Fuck pride, pride only gets you into trouble or makes your life that much harder.

Ahri: Yea (Y/N) don't pay attention to her, she likes to tease. When you think about it, this contract basically makes you into a slave but its more for our protection.

(Y/N): What protection? I saw you in the library and without any shame i could say that you would kick my ass and i would probably enjoy it.

I shut my mouth right away but CRAP me and my smart-ass mouth. But Ahri just made a mischievous smile... damn that smile and even Evellyn snickered while Akali barely held her laugh in, only Kai'Sa got a little red.

Then Evellyn just made a evil smirk and said in a tone that send shivers to my spine

Evellyn: Oh so Ahri is past the stutter faze ? Interesting.

Which of course made me go crimson mod ON again, and not to mention activated my stuttering in overdrive

(Y/N): N-n-n-n-n-no i m-m-m-mean.....

The girls just started laughing again, and i have to say i enjoyed it. So screw it, i picked up a pen and signed the contract. Which made Ahri beam a smile... damn that smile

Ahri: Wonderful for now go get some sleep. That room on the end of the corridor will be yours, and you can start tomorrow. I am sure you have more questions for us and we for you but we can take care of it latter tomorrow.

Considering i was cold and i couldn't feel my feet i decided that going to sleep was a good idea. So i decided to go to bed right away

END OF FLASHBACK

Pfff impossible to sleep now, IL just have a smoke and it will help me relax. I should go to the balcony, these girls look like they are non smokers. I got up and put the clothes i was wearing all day which were btw still a little wet...

(Y/N): Crap... should i ask for advance.... nah i will just check my apartment tomorrow maybe can salvage something that not in the piss pool.

When i opened the door of my room and entered the living room of the penthouse i have to say... i saw something amazing.. the view was like i never seen in my life... it was horrifying

(Y/N): What the fu....

I guess i was still out when i was talking to the girls. Between recovering from the shock of my apartment getting destroyed, to the being in a room with 4 hot women i just finally noticed where i am... this was hell. And i am not talking about the fun kinda of hell.

There were clothes on all sides, wrappers from different instant food brand's everywhere, mostly ramen actually, to empty alcohol bottles and bear cans, the garbage... is that pile moving ?

Not to mention papers and notes and training equipment, have i said about the clothes it was on the ceiling ... how do you get a sock to stick on a ceiling ?

I was afraid to open the kitchen but i have to say it was normal a few dirty dishes here and there but most of it was in order.

(Y/N): Probably one of the girls likes to cook.

But then i opened the bathroom... holy shit it makes high school bathrooms look like royalty. And again with the clothes everywhere, and is that a bra sticking on the shower head... ok that one i don't mind he he.

(Y/N): Well technically its past midnight so lets start

And then i steeped into something that looks like leftover ramen... why is there ramen in the bathroom!?

(Y/N):... You know the street suddenly doesn't sound so bad. I hear cardboard boxes are actually peaty warm if you put some newspaper inside of them.

I know this chapter was pretty short but i am not a morning person and this was written during my morning coffee time so sorry for the extra mistakes. Il make the next one regular size or do you guys actually prefer shorter chapters ?

CHAPTER 6 (Red Is Just Another Form Of Yellow)

Apparently my neighbor decided to replace his windows today... can you imagine 10 hours of bashing all around you fml. Anyway time for our heroes to do some shopping.

***Akali POV**

Akali: *Yawn* good morning all, hmm ?

I came out of my room and the first thing i saw was just Ahri and Eve standing and looking all around in awe. As my brain finally processed what was going on i joined them.

Akali: Whaaaa..

Ahri: I know right.

Evellyn: Wow... i am impressed...

The penthouse went through a complete transformation, it was like a completely different place. Not at all the mess we spent living for the past month.

Ahri: All of the garbage is in the bags next to the door.

Ahri was looking at the 6 big garbage bags that were arranged next to the elevator entrance. You can then hear Evellyn from the bathroom with a voice that had only "I am impressed" tone.

Evellyn: All the clothes are drooped in the bin and all the tiles are wiped.

And then it got slurry

Evellny: Oh the bra is still on the shower head heheh.

Then i noticed that all our papers and notes were arranged in 2 piles on the table, good he didn't throw out any of them. Then all three of us walked into

the kitchen and saw Kai'Sa having breakfast...

Kai'Sa: Ohh good morning all, Want some breakfast? We have some poached eggs and cold cuts.

Ahri: Since when can u make poached eggs ?

Kai'Sa then just chuckled while we were just staring at her

Kai'Sa: Nah it was not me, (Y/N) did all of this. Everything was already prepared when i woke up

Thanks to my reflexes i was able to dodge Ahri's tail as it spiked up where my face used to be.

Ahri: Omg this coffee is wonderful !!!

Kai'Sa: Again (Y/N), he said coffee is the most important meal of the day. So he went to the 24h shop to get some other brand because our previous one was bad

Evellyn: You mean breakfast is the most important ?

Kai'Sa: Nop he confirmed and just said " Coffee" and then he just picked up the biggest mug and went to the balcony

I just made a huge smile on my face and poked Evellyn with my elbow

Evellyn: Fine fine, i will admit i am impressed. But don't look at me like that you all had your doubts

FLASHBACK

Evellyn: Since he left now lets be honest here. Is this really a good idea ?

Kai'Sa: I would love to help him since we play a big part in what happened to him... but still... we are also taking a big risk here.

Ahri: Hmm we will see how it goes. First lets see if he can clean this place up and then we will deal with any other stuff down the line. I know we don't do this stuff. But i really feel responsible.

Akali: Well Ekko and Yasuo know him for a long time, and excluding Ekko's judgment Yasuo is usually right and he says he is cool. But yea i still share your concerns somewhat. We will se how it goes. If he crosses the line we will make him disappear

END OF FLASHBACK

Akali: Well i guess this confirms his abilities as a caretaker

Evellyn just purred

Evellyn: Slave

I just rolled my eyes with Kai'Sa, while Ahri had one of her mischievous smirks

Kai'Sa: Well we just need to run past this Mundo now, he is our Manager and...

Mundo: Oh Mundo like these eggs so he fine

AAEK: HOLY !

(AAEK is gona be for all the girls at once.... yea to lazzy)

We all jumped when we suddenly noticed Mundo next to Kai'Sa who was just siting with a napkin on his shirt and cutting into eggs. Holy shit i like to call myself a ninja but this guy just made me look like a elephant in a Chinese shop.

This guy always does this... just popes up out of nowhere without a sound.

Ahri: When... how did you..

Mundo: Mundo has a mastery

Evellyn: That doesn't explain anything !!

Kai'Sa was just frozen...

Akali: Wait he is on the balcony ?

(Y/N) POV:

I was sitting on the the balcony drinking some coffee and lighting my 4 cigarette in these past 20min. When Kai'Sa showed up first to make breakfast she made a huge smile after looking all over the apartment and the breakfast i prepared, which of course made me blush like crazy... shit this life is gonna be dangerous. At least all my blood is going to my face instead of my little friend. After an attack of stuttering i was able to ask her if i can borrow her phone and she happily obliged.

First i called the police to inform them about my apartment. Once they found out who i was they just answered with *What did you expect, will send somebody when we get the time* I heard rumors that the current police chief is part of the group called "4 Perfection" and i guess they are true. After that i was looking through some sites until i found the one i was interested in. And crap it was bad as i thought.

(Y/N): Shit !

It was a video of my interview with Jaina and the headline was " Crazy KD/A Fan Attacks Media Team" The comments were going from

Wow no respect all the way to * He needs to go to prison* to even some bull shit ones like *There are children watching this show how dare you speak like that* i mean who lets their kids watch shows like this. No wonder today's youth is acting the way they do

(Y/N): I bet your favorite game is Fortnight you simps!

(No Offense to Fortnight players and simps out there we love you all)

There were maybe a few comments that went in the way of *Good job* and *This guy is right* but they were extremely rare... the most problematic ones were of course there and they are the ones that made me smoke like crazy *Powerless scum*, *Know your place Gray, the goddesses don't need your defense* *Die Powerless* *Die Gray* i was getting a huge frown until i saw a comment that made me spit out my coffee * STEP ON ME MISTRESS EVELLYN* and then i had a huge grin

(Y/N): My brother one day we will meet and our stories will be legen-wait for it !

????: dary

(Y/N): WAAAAAAAAAAAAH !!!!!!!

I just jumped out of the chair knocking both the mug and ashtray from the table and going face first to the floor. When i turned my head i saw Akali with a huge grin on her face that was basically saying * I'm still the master*

(Y/N): FFS woman you want me to get a HEART ATTACK, one more time and i will put bells on you i SWEAR!

Oh crap, did i just scream on my employer, not to mention one of the hottest girls that i would ever talk to. But contrary to my fears she just started laughing

Akali: Good ! I like it this way!

And she just extended her hand to help me up. Which i took and started picking up the mug and cigarettes

(Y/N): Thanks, and did you like the breakfast ?

She sat next to me after everything was picked up and jus leaned on her arm over the table

Akali: Yea it was amazing, Kai'Sa usually cooks but these last 2 weeks we were in chaos because of the extra work

(Y/N): THAT HELL ON HEART WAS AFTER ONLY 2 WEEK'S ????!!

OK definitely i just need a big cardboard box

Akali: Hahaha, yea sorry.

She actually had the nerve to give me a innocent smile!

Akali: Your not stuttering anymore

Ah! Well Akali always looked the cool chill type so i guess it was normal i stooped stuttering with her so fast.

(Y/N): I guess you are right *smile*

Akali: So what are your plans today ?

(Y/N): Well i need to go back to my apartment to see if i can salvage some stuff and then i need to get some new clothes maybe try to fix my laptop or phone considering i am borrowing from Kai'Sa.

Akali: Oh cool!

And then she made a frown

Akali: Ahri told me your apartment was destroyed completely?

(Y/N): Yea i cant believe how much shit can happen on a nice rainy night, i got fired, i had my apartment destroyed... and i missed my raid night on Aion.

Akali: Wait ! You got fired ? Why ?

(Y/N): Probably has something to do with me flipping off the TV crew, and then a huge ball of air destroying part of the library

Akali: Ah so that's why you left the dinner with Ahri. She thought you left because of the staff. So when she told us Evellyn...

She just suddenly shut her mouth with both her hands

(Y/N): So she what ?

Akali: He-he-he * nervous laugh* never mind. Anyway you want a ride to your apartment ?

(Y/N): Sure just let me go to the bathroom and we are good to go.

Evellyn POV

(Y/N): G-g-good morning, enjoy your breakfast

(Y/N) just passed by us and went to the bathroom. I just frowned, the stuttering was somewhat cute but you could see he was feeling uncomfortable Akali: Yo guys, wait where is Mundo ?

Akali came back and at her words i actually noticed that Mundo is gone... how does he do that. Ahri and Kai'Sa just shrugged at the same time

Kai'Sa: Apparently he has a mastery

Akali: Oh Ahri, the reason (Y/N) actually left last night was because he got fired not because of the restaurant staff

I just stooped eating and raised my eyebrow . Last night when (Y/N) left for his room, Ahri told us that when she came back to the table (Y/N) was gone. When she asked the hostess she just gave her phone back told her he payed for everything which was already impressive considering the bill and now that i know that he was fired even more so. Then she just made a unconformable gaze to the side

According then to Ahri she noticed that the hostess was looking at the two waiters who were snickering and even threw in a few comments about how they are better than him and she should spend some with them. Which for of course pissed me off.

So i made a call to the owner of that restaurant and made sure they suffer. At first i did it mostly for Ahri since i know the only reason she didn't brake their faces in was because they were all in public but now i am happy that probably (Y/N) benefited from this as well

Evellyn: Why ?

Akali: Apparently his boss didn't like that the library took the dmg

Evellyn: But that was Ahri's fault ?

Ahri actually had the nerve to make a cute smile and scratch her cheek

Ahri: Yea should have probably directed that attack to the wall or something

Akali: Anyway i am going with him to his apartment, he is going to try to salvage some stuff

Ahri had a very angry face then and spoke which was borderline with growling

Ahri: If i ever see the bastards that did that to (Y/N) apartment

Oho now i am surprised our foxy was actually showing her emotion so openly and furiously

Evellyn: Oh how cute. Does that mean i have competition ?

She just went completely red at my word while slamming her hands on the table, but of course she didn't notice the her tails were wagging left and right

Ahri: What competition i have no idea what you mean, and excuse me he is not stuttering when he talks to me and if there was even a competition and there is not, i would be wining

Akali: He's not stuttering with me as well

Which made Ahri go completely red and the rest of us then burst out laughing.

(Y/N): Akali we going?

Akali: Yep !

Kai'Sa: Oh and pick up some groceries!

After (Y/N) and Akali left in the elevator the room suddenly got dark and quit

Kai'Sa: Poor (Y/N)

Ahri: He is about to experience hell

Evellyn: Better sooner then later

And then we all shivered knowing what was coming next for him

ONE SCREAMING TIMESKIP LATER

(Y/N) POV:

I was with both of my knees and arms on the floor doing everything i can not to barf my breakfast, while Akali just casually got off her bike and was putting the helmet on the handle

Akali: You OK ?

(Y/N): That was a red light on the 24 street

Akali: Yep

(Y/N): And another one on the Doran's Lane

Akali: Mhm

(Y/N): Not to mention euro boulevard

Akali: Yea

(Y/N): *stare*

Akali: Red is just another form of yellow

(Y/N): ITS NOT !!!!!!

I thought my Step-Mom was a bad driver... but she is nothing compared to Akali. It took us yesterday about 40min to get to their Penthouse from my apartment when Ahri was driving, now it took us 15 on Akali's bike. First i was all red when Akali told me to sit behind her on her bike. It was extremely embarrassing since i didn't know where to put my hands, but all the embarrassment left me as we got out of the garage

After i got my bearings we made my way into my apartment i didn't even bother to lock my door considering everything was fucked up. As we entered again i saw my place completely destroyed

Akali: Those bastards

But i have to say i was feeling happy when i saw how Akali got angry for me.

(Y/N): *sight* i think one of the chairs is still alive so go sit there il see if i can salvage something

After about 30min my loot was ready. About 3 underwear 4 pairs of socks and one shirt were still alive and thank good i actually threw my leather jacket under the bed it was still intact and it was my favorite one.

Now came the worst part... my PS4 was a bye bye there was no saving it. Luckily my PC can still be fixed thank good i payed 100 $ extra for the reinforced frame, i still remember the pain when i accidentally drooped my first laptop then loosing all my saves and files

(Y/N): Ok the PC i could probably fix which is good, hey Akali i think i am done here

She was siting on the side going through her phone when i called her attention then she looked at the pile of salvaged loot and frowned

Akali: Only that ?

(Y/N): Yea... i need to do some shopping

Akali: Oh no worries we figured that, so here is a advance on your pay.

(Y/N): Thanks Akali i owe yo....

One, two, three..... 15.....29.....42..... WHAT THE FUCK wait wait... this are all 10$ bills right..... nop they are 100 ones....

(Y/N): Wait are you serious ?!

She just looked at me with a blank face and a frown

Akali: Is it not enough ? I have a my credit card with me so we can...

(Y/N): No no no, is this a years pay or something ?

She was just scratching the side of her head not understanding what i meant

How could they, that beautiful PS4 they deserve to die ! In all seriousness i hope you guys enjoyed this chapter and see you later i hope they stop the bashing soon so that i can concentrate !

Chapter 7 (Fell out of the truck)

Thank good the bashing finally stooped i could finally concentrate

(Y/N) POV:

We were currently surrounded by people and we were pushing through a crowd

????1: Tomatoes fresh tomatoes

????2: Cabbages and Lettuce finest on this side of Piltover

????3: Looking for a pet we have Yellow Tail Parrots today.

When Akali told me that we need groceries and considering i also needed some clothes, it was the prefect time for the Piltover south flea-market. Now this was my territory and it was good to be in the safe place considering these last few days

Akali: Wow!

At first she was skeptical when i told her where i want to go. But when came her attitude changed and now she was just looking like a little kid. I could see this was a first for her

(Y/N): You OK ?

Akali: Yea i am good, its just amazing there is everything here from food to clothes to even appliances is that the new 78inch TV ?

?????: Oh sister you have a good eye, its fantastic and usefully for you only 800$!

Akali: ONLY !? How come ???

?????: Oh my children work in Austria so its fine !

Akali: Yes define....

Before Akali could pull her money out, i just grabbed her hand and pulled her away

Akali: Wait (Y/N) its only 800 those things cost over 4k in a regular store

(Y/N): Yaaaaaa NO! If they say that their children work in Austria it means it's stolen.

Akali; Really... wow. You know about this stuff allot don't you.

(Y/N): I have been shopping on flea-market's since i was a kid. It's the cheapest and best place in my opinion plus the quality may be low on everything else but the food is top grade.

Akali: Hmmmm

She put one hand on her chin and you could see she was deep in thought

(Y/N): OK come with me.

I took her to a stall that i was a frequent visitor to

(Y/N): Good morning Yorick, what do you recommend today

A big old man turned around and had a big smile once he saw me

Yorick: Well well (Y/N) how are you today young man and who is this ? Your girlfriend

I just went completely red at that statement and i could see with the corner of my eye Akali had a smirk on her face

(Y/N): Ha ha very funny. I bet you never used that one before

Yorick just made a huge grin

Yorick: I did, but usually they were not holding hands like the two of you.

Wha.... and then i noticed what he meant.I momentarily dropped Akalis hand right away and i swear my face was burning more then ever

Yorick; There is seam coming out of your ears *ahahahhah*

Yorick was giving a loud laugh and even Akali was snickering on the side... wait is that a pink flush on her face ? Naaaah, impossible

(Y/N): *Ahem* Anyway i need to do some shopping and i will go bigger amount then usual, so i am expecting a discount, oh and can you let my friend do a taste test He just nodded with his head and cut a apple for Akali. After she took a bite her eyes just went wide and she gulped the whole thing

Akali: This is AMAZING ! So juicy

Yorick had a huge smile on his face *good job girl the discount is gonna be nice*

(Y/N): Yep i noticed this morning you guys probably only shop in convince stores, its not really the problem but the food her is all home grown by people who know their business, and they don't use fake chemicals to make it look nice or big.

Akali: I see

(Y/N): That's why Yorick is the master of fruit here, hes got the sweetest ones

Yorick just made a bow and motioned with his hands towards the wares

(Y/N): Akali anything specific i should look for ?

Akali then closed her eyes and raised her head after a few moments

Akali: For me i am good with bananas, Ahri definitely loves oranges and for Kai'Sa the apples are a no brainer especially the red ones. But for Eve i would go with strawberries... but i am warning you

I just lifted my eyebrow and she just waved her hand in a way that was basically saying *forget about it*

(Y/N): OK so Yorick i need about 2 kilos of Apples, 1kg of Banana, 1 kg of Orange and 3kg of strawberries, oh and you maybe have some cherries about 500grams of those ?

Akali just raised her eyebrow while Yorick was packing the stuff

(Y/N): Well i also like apples, and for the strawberries they are not always available, plus i have a feeling I'm gonna get on her good side if i bring her more

Yorick: Okkk that would be 42,8.

(Y/N): Oh common i am buying big make it 20

Yorick: AHahah very funny 42.0 since you are a friend

(Y/N): Well i let you see a beautiful lady so lets just make it a 20,5

(ONE HAGGLING TIMESKIP LATER)

(Y/N): Well that went well we it was only 35 in the end that comment on how juicy it was helped us massively

As i was humming happily i noticed Akali frowning at me

Akali: It was really not that expensive was there a reason to haggle ? I mean i told you that you don't have to worry about money when you are with us

Ah i see i forgot she is a first timer and this is kinda not her world

(Y/N): Ok, Akali look around what do you see around you ?

She then frowned and made 360 degree look

(Y/N): Most of these people here are actually part of the lover class, don't get me wrong there are middle class and higher class but almost all of them

are lower class going from day to day. Haggling is their way of life, so was mine for a good part of my childhood.

She was just looking at me with a blank face

(Y/N): Even that TV that you saw would have went cheaper if you were somebody who knew what you were doing, it would go to 300 believe me. Almost all of these people here expect you to haggle some even take it as a insult if you don't haggle with them. You understand me now ?

She just nodded and smiled

Akali: Yea that makes sense, your actually good explaining stuff

(Y/N): Well i did want to be a teacher

Her eyes suddenly started sparkling

Akali: Seriously that's so cool why aren't you.

(Y/N): I'm a Gray

My voice just went dark and low and i guess Akali understood it was a dangerous subject since she drooped it right away. Ah crap did i just kill all the fun. Then Akali suddenly stopped and she was looking at a stall with plushie toys. They are so popular and beautiful i keep forgetting they are younger then me and that they are still young girls, especially Akali who is the youngest of them.

(Y/N): See anything interesting ?

Akali: They look so cute ! Especially that bear ninja one

The old lady that was siting there just smiled

OldLady: Oh you like it dear i handsaw them by myself it will only be 5$

Akali: Ahhh i would love it

And then Akali did the worst possible thing she pulled out her credit card.... in my eyes it was actually extremely cute but the eyes of the old lady were just screaming *are you making fun of me*

Akali was getting flustered and looking at her credit card then to the lady, so i steeped in.

(Y/N): Sorry about that grandma she is actually a first timer here il take the bear and hmm let me get this one and this and definitely that one.

Once the old lady packed up the stuff i turned and gave Akali her bear

Akali: Bad idea to try to pay with the credit card ?

(Y/N): Oh yea

Akali: Sorry i will pay you back

(Y/N): Don't be ridiculous this is my gift to you i want you to enjoy it *smile*

Hmm again with a pink flush ? Cant be, right?

(Y/N): Anyway lets get some vegetables and groceries and i will just need a few minutes then to get some clothes.

Akali looked shocked once i mentioned clothes

Akali: Wait seriously ? Here ?

(Y/N): Do you know how many clothing boutiques actually buy from the flea-market and then they just put a price tag . Maybe not the ones you guys go to but most of them do. Most of my clothes are from here so lets...

Then i turned and saw Akali holding something that looks like bike parts with her eyes shining

Luckily i my hand was free so i just grabbed her on her collar and started pulling her

Akali: Waits its only 90$ and i asked him if his children work in Austria

(Y/N): Did he say that it fell out of a truck

Akali:..... um yea

(Y/N): There you go another lesson.

(RELAXING TIMESKIP LATER)

Since we got to much stuff i actually took a taxi back to the penthouse, thank god. Akali was waiting for me on the entrance and when i asked her how long did she wait she just said "Red is Yellow" ffs

As the elevator was going up the the top floor my arms were killing me i had so much stuff on me. Akali actually offered to carry half but i couldn't let her i needed to be a gentleman at least here. Ofc even that was destroyed when i put it all down to adjust my grip and she scoped everything with one hand and carried it out of the elevator like it was only 1kg heavy

Akali: We are back !

Well there goes my macho pride.

The rest of the ladies were siting all round the living room doing their own thing when we came in and greeted us with smiles

Kai'Sa: Hey guys welcome back wow that's allot of stuff.

Akali then drooped all the bags on the table between Ahri and Evellyn and had a big smile on her face.

Akali: Yea it was fun i actually went on the flea-market we have been missing out so much stuff there.

Kai'Sa perked up after hearing Akali and spoke in a happy voice

Ahri: Oh i saw it a few times it looked interesting next time we ca...

Before she could finish i heard a voice full of mock and another one that was chuckling and laughing

Evellyn: The hell is this a rag or a shirt ?

Evellyn was holding one of the shirts that i got

Evellyn: The hell is this quality i saw something like this only as dance props when they knew it was gonna get ripped or destroyed

Ahri was laughing like non stop holding her stomach and even Kai'Sa started giggling while Evellyn was just turning the shirt all around to see it from all sides.

(Y/N): I will be in my room, i need to fix my laptop

I grabbed the bag with my laptop and just went to my room without looking back.

OK i need to go easy with these chapter releases need to give you guys some cliff hangers but i am just having to much fun and free time.

CHAPTER 8 (Goblin Snot)

My head hurts so bad tonight !!!!!

Ahri POV:

(Y/N): I will be in my room, i need to fix my laptop

(Y/N) just picked up one of his bags and left for his room without world. I was having a hard time paying attention while the three off us were giggling and laughing non stop while Evelynn was making fun of this t shirt. Well not all of us since we suddenly i heard a noise and saw Akali holding one of her kunai that was slammed in the wall.

Kai'Sa: AKALI ! How many times do we have to tell you not to...

Then Kai'Sa went quiet once she saw her face, even Evellyn drooped the shirt and had a concerned look on her face

Ahri: Akali ?

She just grabbed a bag and pulled one of the cutest bear plushies i have ever seen. Wait is it dressed like a ninja ?!

Ahri: OMG it's so cute where did you get that !

Akali: It came with the rags

And then me, Eve and Kai actually loked at the bag and noticed a good amount of different type of clothes. Then the look of realization hit all three of us.

Kai'Sa: Wait ? Those were (Y/N)'s ?

Evellyn: Well... his taste is bad

Ahri: I thought you were going to take him to buy some elegant clothes ? Was Syndra's boutique closed ?

Akali just sighted and sat on the chair opposite of u while holding her forehead with her hand and the plushie with the other one.

Akali: I tried but he said he hates boutique and tries to evade them completely. Apparently he had some bad experience. But come on girl did you really have to laugh so much?

My ears went down since i actually felt bad on what happened, i mean the quality of clothes was funny but...

Kai'Sa: He probably feels like we laughed in his face

Evellyn: Well dear, lets be honest none of us would ever wear something like that

Then Akali just shrugged and showed us one of the bags and made a smirk towards Evellyn

Akali: Present's from (Y/N), there is one for everybody unless you find the quality bad Evellyn

While Akali and Eve were staring at each other, Kai opened the bag and she let out a happy glee

Kai'Sa: Ohhh its so cute !!!

She was holding a Purple KittyCat plushie that had a little black cloak and a wizards hat

I ofc love presents and went right away and pulled out what i assumed was for me which of course made me giggle and laugh on the cuteness of it Ahri: Ah its a white little fox OMG its so soft! And is this a TIARA on her head ???!!! OMG!!! It looks just like a princes !

While i was hugging my fox Evellyn went to the bag with a very skeptical look. The present's pattern was obvious now and i cant imagine Evellyn

with a cut.....

K,A,A: Ahahahahahahahahhahahahah

All three of us were laughing when Evellyn pulled out her present. It was a pink shark dressed as a pirate that had angry look, which made it massively cute, it was PERFECT! And i knew it was perfect since Evellyn just made a small smile and sat with it while holding it. Its not uncommon for her to rip present to pieces if she doesn't like them, i still remember the first time i gave her a bad one, i am still traumatized how the part were flying everywhere.

Akali: Well anyway im going to the gym i want to work out a little. You guys can decide how you want to apologize later. And Kai'Sa from now on we are only cooking with what (Y/N) buys.

Akali then left leaving us puzzled on her last words until we heard Kai'Sa biting into something on the side

Kai'Sa: Oh my ! This apple is amazing! It's so juicy !!!

Both me and Eve looked at each other and knew we fucked up

(TIMESKIP)

(Y/N) POV:

BOOM

My laptop was smoking now i have been trying to fix it for the past 6 hours and when i finally thought i succeeded it exploded with smoke in my face.

(Y/N): Fucking Ionian piece of crap!

Never buy anything that is made in Ionia ! Kai'Sa came at one moment a couple of hours ago to call me for dinner but i told her i am fine and that i will eat later. I was still pretty upset on how they treated my clothes. I know i should have expected something like that but still it actually hurt, i don't even want to imagine what they thought about the present's

(Y/N): *Sigh* i need a smoke... actually i think i will just go for a walk, what time is it ? Ah only 9:30pm.

I left my room and noticed that the living room was empty and then i remembered how Akali said they need to visit their Mndz. tonight. Good i was in a very bad mood anyway.

I picked up a set from my new clothes bag just some simple jeans with a black shirt and was going to leave... wait i don't have key-card to return later ? Meh lets just hope they will be back when i return and if not i could always ask the guard down in the garage to open it for me. I should probably lave a note

I left

hehe wouldn't be funny if they think i actually left them completely... nah this is very childish i better throw it out...

(Y/N): *Achoooo* ah crap

I sneezed pretty hard and the note flew out of my hand, not to mention i accidental knocked over the bag with my clothes

(Y/N): Crap lets just pick u....

Before i could finish my thought the elevator door opened and i suddenly had a big grin on my face

(Y/N): BRAUM ! My man how are you ?!

The person standing in front of me was 2m of muscle with a mustache that would make a 1920 gentleman blush in shame. He then just started laughing with his bear voice and northern accent

Braum: (Y/N) my i am fine ! How are you mate ?

(Y/N): *sight* meh so so. You know one of those days

Braum then just chuckled which sounded like a bear chewing

Braum: After what you went through i am amazed you see some days as just so so

We kinda both laughed at that statement while we were shaking hands

(Y/N): So what are you here ?

Braum: Oh i need to see the girls i need to talk about the job we gonna have in a couple of days !

(Y/N): Ah crap sorry man they are not here

Braum: OH that's to bad

????: Braum why you still, ah mister (Y/N) how are you !

Then i saw the walking rock train Malph coming behind him and i suddenly remembered that i had eggs fro breakfast again... i need to stop eating eggs

(Y/N): Drop the mister part Malph and i will be good

Braum then turned to Malph and started speaking to him

Braum: The girls are not here i guess we should wait..... or... hehe

He then looked down upon me and had a huge grin

Braum: (Y/N) you know i am friends with Ekko and Yasuo right ?

(Y/N): mmm yea ?

Braum: Ok, then speak nothing of this night they wanted to surprise you when they come back in a few months. Malph start the car we are going to have some fun tonight

Ooookkkkkkk, meh i have nothing else planed

(TIMESKIPE)

I was shocked and in awe and had such a huge grin on my face that it actually started to hurt.

Braum: You like ?

I was in heaven i am not talking about 5 cat girl Vastaya ladies in my bed heaven no real heaven much better heaven

(Y/N): Yes me like very much. Is this a freaking DnD bar ? OMG how do i not know about this place

Braum: Haha its a little on a hush hush usually only from a ear to ear. That's why even the sign outside is simple " Dirty Mug"

Yea and it was written so small if i didn't pay attention i would never find it, omg they are actually singing Bard songs on the karaoke machine... and then i saw the bar

(Y/N): Did that guy just drink the Dragons Piss ?????

Malph: The what ?

Then both me and Braum looked and Malph who was actually looking at us nervously

(Y/N): Ah don't worry Malph all these drink are safe... mostly.

He just looked at me wide eyed

Braum: Hahah don't worry he is just messing with you its just a name. Ok, lets go find some seats

We went to a corner and sat on some wooden chairs with a round table in front of us. After a few min a very pretty and *cough cough* busty girl came to serve us .

BustyWaitress: What can i get you adventurers tonight

Braum: Hmm i think i will go with some Manticore tail and some Grey-beard Mead and for my friend here some Dragon Leg and Mindflare, he is a beginner so we gonna start slow

Malph actually blushed when the Busty Waitress gave him a big smile. Then she turned to me which i of course answered with

(Y/N): Ok i will go with some basalisk breast and goblins snout !

After she left i started looking around again like a little child in a candy store

(Y/N): OMG i cant believe they never told me about this place ! I am gonna kill them when i see them

Braum was just laughing like a big bear

Braum: Haha they found out about it from me before they left for the tour, we were talking and they told me they want us all to go together when they come back not to mention they will be here for the quarter yea LARP

Malph just looked at Braum with confusion

Malph: LARP ?

(Y/N): Oh it stands for live action role playing that happens 4 times a year. We basically grab fake weapon's and start bashing each other up, usually its capture the castle or king of the hill sometimes even just a simple death-match. It tends to be very fun ! *Sight* I actually didn't go the last 5 times i just cant without those two.

Braum: Haha don't worry this time we will all go togeth...

????: Hey! Aren't you that guy that flipped off that lady on live ?!

OH CRAP!

KAI'SA POV :

Akali: He is not on the balcony !

We were all running worried around the penthouse. Apparently when we came back a few min ago Ahri found a note on the floor that just said "I left" without any explanation. When we checked the room we also saw that it was a mess with his laptop that looked like it exploded and all the clothes that he bought were scattered in the living room.

Akali: It's because you guys were laughing in his face !

Akali was extremely upset we all were, he doesn't look like a person who would just pick up and leave because of that, but when you think about all the stuff that happened to him these past few days. That laugh could have just been the last drop in a full glass

Evellyn: OK darlings how about we just all calm down, he is a grown man its his choice. If he has left he has left. There is nothing much to say.

Even though Evellyn was looking calm and speaking in a normal voice i could see her furiously taping on her phone and when i took a look she was checking social media account with (Y/N)'s name.

Ahri then came out of the elevator

Ahri: He is not in the Gym and the security guard didn't see him leave.

It was clear she was panicking as well since her tails were moving no stop

CRACK

When we turned our heads we saw Evellyn putting down a glass on the table which was almost completely broken

Ahri: Eve?

She just showed us her phone. She apparently found (Y/N) social account... it was not pretty

It was clear it was not used in a couple of years but the comment were still there going from *You bastard* and *How dare you* to *Die powerless* i guess these were the people who saw the interview. But what caught my attention was the post from more then 10 years ago probably the time he stopped using it, *WOW you were a powerless how dare you lie to us* *omg i cant believe i was friends with you* *we don know each other anymore GRAY!*

I know people were discriminating on the powerless but this much... i cant really say much since i had a similar view of them just a few years ago.

Ahri: Ok, i am sure it's all fine

Yea she was definitely worried. But then i heard Akali behind me talking on her phone

Akali: Oy Yasuo wake up now !

The voice that came on the other side sounded very tired and sleepy

Yasuo: *What !? Do you have any idea what time it is !?*

Akali: Listen we have a problem (Y/N) is missing

Then another voice answered in the distance

Ekko: *(Y/N) is kissing ? My man gj*

And then what shocked me the most is when Evellyn grabbed Akali's phone and screamed

Evellyn: NO you insufferable little shit ! HE-IS-MISSING !

The two voices suddenly started shuffling on the other line probably jumping out of their bed after Evellyn's screams, until Yasuo finally spoke in a clear awoken voice

Yasuo: *Wait wait stop. OK explain everything*

ONE EXPLANATION TIMESKIPE LATER

Ekko: *Ah crap, he is very sensitive when it comes to his shopping on the Flea-Market*

After we explained everything Yasuo and Ekko just both sighted and Yasuo said he was gonna check some online accounts

Ekko: *Ok Yasuo is gonna check some online games maybe he went to a Net Caffe since his PC is broken*

Ahri: But just to pick up and leave after such a trivial thing

We could hear Yasuo in the back

Yasuo: *Considering all the shit that happened to him these past few days i am not surprised, and probably that broken PC was the last straw he was very proud and happy when he bought it... but just to pick up like that and leave..... it is strange*

Ekko: *The one thing that would calm him down and help him get his emotions to normal... not to mention you guys were real dicks by the sound of things !*

Evellyn: Seriously we should just drop this whole thing and ignore it, probably just a call for attention!

I would believe her if she was not tapping her foot non stop while looking at her plushie on the sofa

Yasuo: *AHHHHHH!*

We could hear Yasuo on the phone suddenly perking up and then getting quiet

Yasuo: *Emmmm can you put Kai'Sa on the phone*

I just raised my eyebrow while Eve handed my Akalis phone i also presumed to turn of the speaker

Kai'Sa: Yes Yasuo ?

Yasuo: *The speaker is off right ?*

Kai'Sa: Mhm

Yasuo: *I know where he is, but i am afraid the other will kill him if i tell them....*

TIMESKIP

I couldn't believe my eyes

A nymph, one of peace's proponents,
never flights but seduces opponents,
Their violence she quell,
as if using a spell,
you should see her material components

Or my ears. The singing was so bad! But the whole bar was screaming in happiness and waving their mugs all around while singing along.

There he was (Y/N) in the middle of bar standing on the table with a mug of something in his hand and a mic in his other one singing... if you can call that singing and then he started another one.

I'm a BAAAAARD!

It's not so HAAAAARD!
My jingling shoes can leave quite the bruise!
I'm a BAAAAARD!

I'm a BAAAAARD!
I fling Death through the air with the slightest of cares!
Is it your CAAARD?"

Is this hell. A pretty lady which i presumed was the waitress

Waitress: Hello, are you maybe lost ? No offense but you don't look like somebody who comes to places like this.

Kai'Sa: Um... what is this place

Waitress: Oh its a bar for nerds basically *smiles* it's actually a fun place but you will have a hard time fitting in alone

(Y/N): How about another ONE !

My eye just twitched

Kai'Sa: NO (Y/N) pls don't !

But the rest of the people here just yelled *HAR HAR !* and he continued... is everyone tone def here and what does HAR HAR mean ?????

Waitress: Ohh you know (Y/N) ?

Kai'Sa: Yea i actually came to pick him up *sight*

Waitress: Haha that's good he has had allot of Goblin Snouts, so he is in no condition to go home alone and his two friends are already under the table

Goblin snouts ? What in tarnations are Goblin Snouts and what friends... ah that's Braum and is that Malph why are they here!?. The waitress just chuckled once she saw my face and spoke again

Waitress: Yea ever since people started to buy him drink they got drunk....

Kai'Sa: Sorry ?

Waitress: Yea allot of them watched the video and approved of his actions, some of them even have experience with Jaina since they are mostly techies who work as support staff and cameraman so they have bad experience with he...

Before she could finish (Y/N) suddenly yelled

(Y/N): Kai'Sa is that you ?

And then all of them looked at my direction... oh no i am so bad with strangers if the girls are not with me.

(Y/N): It is YOU!!!! MY PRINCESS YOU HAVE COME !

PRINCESS !????

(Y/N): Brave adventurers meet the fairest damsel you will ever lay your eyes upon, princess Kai'sa ALL BOW and back off she is mine

Fairest damsel, princess, IM YOURS !!!??? I was extremely red i cant even remember the last time i was this red and it got even worse when the whole bar started bowing down and yelling " Hail princess Kai'Sa" Even the waitress was giggling and hitting my side with her elbow while speaking

Waitress: Your Knight is waiting for you my lady.

I was so embarrassed but... i was smiling a little

(Y/N): AH she is shy.... THEN LET ME SING A SONG TO BOOST HER COURAGE !!!

The whole bar : HAR HAR!

Please lightning, hit me now....

I can from personal experience confirm that Goblins Snot is a fantastic drink! Until next time

CHAPTER 9 (GGEZ)

I actually had a hard time deciding on the tittle of this one to many options to chose from.

(Y/N) POV:

Ah shit my head hurts so freaking much ! Why did i even drink that amount... i guess when they all started to buy me drink's and to congratulate me i lost control... shit cant remember the last time i had a black out. But for some reason i feel so extremely comfortable, and what is this smell! It's so nice.

And then i opened my eyes.The rush of questions was going non stop not to mention my face was going completely crimson ! I was basically lying down on Ahri !!! By the looks of it we were on the living room couch with my hands behind her back and my legs were somehow being held by her tails whit one of her arms around my next and another on... on my butt !

(Y/N): What... how..

As i tried to move i probably stirred her and then she just grabbed me even stronger and pulled me to herself even harder. Me face was directly in her neck... wow she smells nice and thank good all the blood was in my face !

????: Mundo think's you are enjoying yourself, no ?

I was able to move my head just a little bit to the side and then i saw their Mndz. Mundo siting on the chair across us drinking coffee and smirking.

Mundo: Mundo can see that you are confused, so let Mundo jog your memory.

And then he started telling me what happened last night

FLASH BACK

MUNDO POV:

Mundo came to visit the girls since some of the papers were wrong, Mundo was just in time to see Kai'Sa leaving. After Mundo heard what happened and saw the faces of the girls, Mundo decided to stay just to see if Mundo needs to call the cleaners

After about 1h the Elevator door opened and Mundo saw Kai'Sa coming inside carrying (Y/N) bridal style with his hands ever her neck. Mundo was actually happy because he saw Kai'Sa was extremely red. Mundo cant remember the last time he saw Kai'Sa so red.

(Y/N): Ooooooohhhhhh heeeey guuys, why you still up ?? You were not waiting for me by chance awwwwww!?

Mundo was already thinking of who to call since the stares that Ahri, Akali and Evellyn were giving him were screaming murder. It will not be a first time Mundo has to hide a kill, Mundo also has that mastery

Ahri: You have allot of explaining to do (Y/N)

Oh for sure Mundo is gonna call somebody Ahri was furious and was in her public face mode. Mundo feels bad for (Y/N) . Then (Y/N) just suddenly looked at them with a deadpan face and turned to Kai'Sa

(Y/N): Why are they mad my fair maiden ?

Fair Maiden ? What did Mundo miss ?

Which made Kai'Sa go even more red.

(Y/N): Meh *smoch*

First he kissed Kai'sa on the cheek which made her just let him go, and Mundo has to say he landed on his feet elegantly. Then he looked over the three girls and first went to Akali while Kai'sa ran way to her room

SLAM poor door

Akali: Don't look at me with such a blank face do you have any idea how pissed off i am right now?

Mundo would wish that Akali stops bringing her knives out when ever she gets mad. Mundo had his work cut out for him when ever she do that on TV, do you know how hard is to explain why a pop star brings knives out when ever she gets upset.

(Y/N): Hmmm you should have come! Your abs would have been perfect for the 'Shocking Touch' oh and *smoch*

OK, Mundo is confused

Akali: Whaaa...

Bcs he just lifted her shirt and kissed her bellybutton... ok Mundo needs to find out what he was drinking! Mundo needs to try that. Of course this made Akali go extremely red, where she was just opening her mouth like a fish and suddenly she just disappeared in a blink of a eye, you could hear the door closing in the distance... hmm Mundo has mastery but she has skill

SLAM poor door

Next he turned around and went and stood in front of Evellyn who was looking down on him, Mundo thinks to stand like that in front of a lady that is dangerous as Evellyn is a very bad idea. Oh Mundo really hopes you don't try anything bcs she WILL murder you. And Mundo was not sure if she is just gonna murder him now because that look even made Mundo shake.

(Y/N): Evellyn

Evellyn: (Y/N)

(Y/N): We need to go to prison

Evellyn: Why ?

(Y/N): Because i need to visit your father

OH NO (Y/N), Mundo is sure this is a bad idea! Just don't (Y/N)

Evellyn: What !?

(Y/N): Well he is still in prison for stealing all those stars and putting them in your eyes *smoch*

Ok Mundo is IMPRESSED NOW ! After (Y/N) dropped such a cheesy line Evellyn actually lowered her guard and he grabbed her head pulling it down where he kissed her on her nose while not letting go of it, then he kissed her nose one more time and smiled.

(Y/N): Mmm not only is your nose sweet but those eyes are amazing from up close

Evellyn was looking at him for about 10 seconds with a shocked expression until she just turned around and went to her room slamming the door.

SLAM poor door

Mundo has to say... GGWP (Y/N)

Then he turned towards Ahri who had a frozen expression on her face. Mundo cant blame her after all that happened she was clearly expecting something and even though she looked like she was gonna stand her ground of all that evaporated in a few seconds

(Y/N): Ahri!

Ahri: Yes (Y/N) ?

Then he started walking towards with his finger pointing in her direction

(Y/N): All of this is your FAULT !!!

Ahri: Excuse meeeeee!

(Y/N): Its that damned smile of your i would jump off a building for that damned smile ! Take responsibility !

Ahri: Wha wha wha wha wha... !

CRASH

While Ahri was backing off and (Y/N) going towards her, he tripped on some clothes that were on the floor and then the both of them fell on the couch.

(Y/N): Mmmm you smell so nice *snore*

And then (Y/N) started snoring while on top of Ahri while hugging to himself. OK, Mundo was wrong ... GGEZ (Y/N). Mundo can say he has seen a complete dominating victory tonight !

Ahri then looked towards Mundo with a shocked expression and Mundo did the only thing Mundo could, Mundo threw a blanket over them and left

Ahri: MUNDOOOO!

END OF FLASHBACK

Mundo: So that its! Mundo is happy the girls are happy! Now GL today (Y/N) Mundo thinks you are gonna need it and Mundo hopes he doesn't need to call his people latter

After that Mundo just left again with (Y/N)'s shocked face

(Y/N) POV:

Ahhhh i remember all of it NOW ! Everything from singing to calling Kai'Sa my princess to crashing into Ahri!!!!! Did i really kiss Akali's bellybutton OMFG !! AND WTF WAS THAT HIGH SCHOOL CHEESY LINE !

(Y/N): OK ok ok ok ok ok, just calm down just calm down i am sure i can explain everything

Ahri: Oh really ?

And i froze. Ahri then pulled my face in front of her while looking at me with a deadpan expression

Ahri: Why are you quiet ?

(Y/N): Em... i-i-i-i-i um.... i m-m-m-m-mean... w-w-w-wa

And then she just moved one of her legs between mine while the other one went behind me and actually squeezed my ass while purring in my ear with a sexy seductive voice

Ahri: Sorry can you repeat that ?

I was wrong... not all of my blood was in my face at that moment.

ONE LONGER THEN NECESSARY SHOWER TIMESKIP LATER

Yea i am gonna die today that is for sure. OK lets recap how did this happen

Ahri at some point finally decided to let me go, the most embarrassing thing was that i am sure that she felt my hard on completely and by the mischievous smile she was giving me she was enjoying my reactions, i swear she even rubber her leg there a few times on purpose. After that i had to take a very long shower. And when i came out all the girls were up and siting at the table for breakfast and the only seat available was between Ahri and Evellyn.

Ahri was siting on my left with her elbow on the table while using her arm to support her head. She was looking at me directly and was eating her sausage cuts extremely slowly and erotically and she was enjoying my reactions because she was throwing me a mischievous smile every time i glanced over her

(Y/N): *gulp*

Evellyn was on my right and she didn't even look at me once. Every time i glance to her she is looking at her plate but when i ever i remove my sight from her i feel shivers down my spine. And as soon as i look back she is watching her plate

(Y/N): *double gulp*

Akali was siting across me and just staring with me with a serious expression. But the most scary part is that instead of using a knife to cut her food she was actually using her Kunais and when ever i would glance her way she would apply pressure even harder cracking the plate with it... poor plate it looks like it went through a rave

(Y/N): *triple gulp*

Siting next to her was Kai'Sa who when ever i threw her a glance she just got red in a face and did a *hmph* turning her head to the side. But the cannon things on her shoulders were out and i had a feeling they were ready to shoot at a moments notice

(Y/N):*quadra gulp*

Evellyn: (Y/N)

(Y/N): *PENTAGULP*

(Y/N): Y-y-y-y-yea ?

Evellyn: When are we going to visit my father

Kidney Punch !

Akali: No no i think we should do some belly shots first

Kidney Punch, Kidney Punch!

Princes: Maybe you want to sing a song for me

And pause !

Ahri: Oh i am smiling, i guess i need to take some responsibility now, no ?

Kidney Punch, Kidney Punch, Kidney Punch

OK lets deal with this, common (Y/N) your older then all of them and you are a man

(Y/N): OK, guys liste...

Then Evellyn just snapped her head towards me

(Y/N): *Ahem* I m-m-m-mean there is a e-e-e-explenation for this

Akali: Ohh really *crack* you don't say *crack* i would love to hear it *crack*

That poor plate... and why does it have to be a sausages today !!?

(Y/N): Y-y-yea i think its just a misunderstanding

Kai'Sa: Mhm so pleas explain us

Why are her canons aiming at me now !?

(Y/N): *Ahem* You see i wrote that note as a joke ! An-a-a-and it kinda slipped my mind

Ahri: Ah it just slipped your mind ?

One of Ahri's tails actually went around my neck

(Y/N): Y-y-y-yes just, it kinda happened i sneezed and one thing led to another

Omg just kill me this can not get any worse.

DING

Braum: Helooo, good morning, sorry to intrude

Suddenly Braum walked out of the elevator and made a big smile when noticing me

Braum: There you ARE !

OH GOD NO !

Braum: I was sure you left with that waitress considering how she hit it off with you, and i know what you were staring at her chest the whole night.

OH FFS

Braum: What did you say you wanted to do to them?... Hmmm oh yea you said you were gonna....

Before he could finish his sentence

Evellyns tail blades came out and her skin started going pink, Ahri started glowing blue and all her 9 tails were wrapping around me, Akali had more then 5 Kunais in her hand and Kai'Sa cannons started to charge while aiming at my face

And it just got worse... and why the fuck am i happy !?!

A actually got on of my real life friends to take a look at the story, and the thing that he brought to my attention is that i didint really describe some of the characters on the side. I am mostly focusing on characters from Lol with a few original but guess i can maybe do a chapter that's going to explain their features with a few pictures of them for those that never played Lol.

CHAPTER 10(Shadows them-self were rising!)

Wow 10 chapters already i have to say i never imagined this would be so much fun. I tried writing a few stories before in my private but considering my job is a waiter on a cruise ship i spend 9months working 11h a day and even when i do get my vacation there is just to much stuff to do. So i guess now all of this is coming out. Already i have a idea for a few more stories but am going to finish this one first. And yes writing Mundo's POV is a guilty pleasure.

(Y/N) POV:

Breakfasts this morning was a disaster. It was all ready one the final countdown to a explosion until Braum came and just decided to add more fuel... Luckily by the end of the day things somehow calmed down. Which i still have no idea how,i guess me groveling, apologizing and making pancakes for dinner assisted , but i am not going to a look a gift horse in a mouth. Only Kai'Sa was still giving me some dirty looks but considering i kinda embarrassed her in public, so i deserve it.

Ahri: (Y/N) when you are done can you come

I was on the balcony still playing with my broken PC at least now it's not exploding but the damage was still bad. I killed the cigarette in the ashtray and came back inside finding the all the girls in the living room doing their own thing.

Ahri: Oh good, by the way did you fix your PC ?

(Y/N): *sigh* it's not gonna explode anymore but the booting process and memory power are fucked up, i am gonna need to jack out some Memory and maybe replace a few electrical diodes on my motherboard

The girls were just giving me a blank look...

(Y/N): Ummmm i need to buy some new parts and then it will work

Which apparently they understood since they just nodded.

Ahri: Oh and the reason i am calling you is because i want to make some plans for next week

(Y/N): Hmmm

Ahri: Well we still didn't have a welcome party for you, i was thinking maybe a pajama party !

The rest of the girls just rolled their eyes and i just had to join them

Ahri: Ummm no ?

Kai'Sa: How about just go out for dinner ? I mean come on pajama party in our age ?

Ahri: *pout* Fineeee

Holy shit she is so cute when she pouts.

Then Akali spoke. Wait is she doing pushups while her legs are on the ceiling light... wtf and holy shit that is impressive and i think i understand now how that sock ended up on the ceiling

Akali: You also need to get a new phone ! That shit yesterday would have been evaded if you had one

I could only weakly nod, if i even try to comment something i have a felling the bomb will be armed again. Ahri then just smiled and pated to sit on a couch between her and Evellyn. So i just followed her instructions and sat there which made Evellyn just get up without a word and leave... it felt really bad i guess she was still mad at me. Ahri just gave me a smile and returned he attention to the TV.

After a about a few minutes something drooped in my lap and when i looked down it look like a new phone... wait is this one of the newest models. When i looked up i just saw Evellyn as she was making her way to the kitchen

Ahri: Oh yea we did get new one's yesterday. I guess you can use that one until we buy you one.

I looked over the phone and it was good. It was a model that came 3 months ago... and she already got a new one... actually even Kai'Sa was playing with a new phone it was not the one from yesterday morning. I guess they need to keep up with the trend

(Y/N):Oh this is perfect, and in my eyes its new so its perfectly fine i definitely need to thank Evellyn when she comes back.

Akali: Don't you want a new model ?

(Y/N): Nah this one is spaceship grade compared to my old one

Then i took out my sim card and inserted turning on the phone... and it went crazy

BRRrrrRR *BRRrrrRR* *BRRrrrRR* *BRRrrrRR* *BRRrrrRR* *BRRrrrRR* *BRRrrrRR**BRRrrrRR**BRRrrrRR**BRRrrrRR**BRRrrrRR**BRRrrrRR**BRRrrrRR*

Holy shit... 80 missed calls and about 129 missed messages, 40% of that was from Ekko and the rest from my Step-Mom and Dad... wow even a few from my sister... go figure guess it was bad to be so long without a phone on my birthday i should give them a call them tomorrow

I suddenly felt somebody sit on my side and it was Evellyn she was so close both our shoulders and knees were touching and then she just drooped a bowl filled with strawberries in my lap.

My face was in complete confusion at first, until she just leaned her whole body on me by putting one arm around my neck while with the other one she used for the strawberries and started eating it very slowly next to me. Then she just purred in my ear

Evellyn: I heard you bought so much just for me my little pet

Akali: *whisper* *yep i knew this was gonna happen*

Which made my face go completely red and my mouth started to move like a fish. Which apparently Ahri was enjoying since she just moved in closer and leaned hr face down like to inspect the strawberry while making sure that i got a good look on her cleavage.

OH MY !!!!! And Kai'Sa actually had a nerve to giggle ! Then Evellyn just spoke in a no bullshit voice

Evellyn: Tomorrow we are going to the mall and your going to get a new phone.

(Y/N): But what about this one ?

Evellyn: I gave you just until we get you a new one because the way things have been going

(Y/N): But n....

Evellyn: AND that's final !

(Y/N): *gulp* Yes mam!

While Evellyn and Ahri were enjoying themself teasing me Kai'Sa just took the remote and turned the internet option on our TV. Which made me raise my eyebrow but before i could react Evellyn just applied pressure using the hand around my neck and Ahri put her legs over mine

Evellyn: We don't want you to run away now dear.

Evellyn said with a seductive smile while Ahri was giggling and why did Akali have popcorn in her arms suddenly !

And then Kai'Sa looked at me with a very innocent smile... that smile for some reason was screaming payback in my face. And then she just pressed the button on the remote

(Y/N):

I am a dwarf and I'm digging a hole
Diggy, diggy hole, diggy, diggy hole
I am a dwarf and I'm digging a hole
Diggy, diggy hole, digging a hole

(Y/N): Whaaaaaaaaa!!!!!!!!!

And there I was in the middle of the 'Dirty Mug' with my jacket spinning over my head and a Goblin Snot in my other arm singing a song.

Akali: Wow Kai'Sa is right you do sound like cats fighting

Kai'Sa: Wait until he starts to dance !

And then they all started laughing like crazy and try as i did to get up and turn of the TV it was just impossible to move next to Evellyn and Ahri who were holding me down... FML... why am i enjoying this

TIMESKIP

I had to wake up at 7:15 because Evellyn told me to be ready by 8:30. And i need at least a hour of being awake to be even able to speak normally let alone go somewhere. When i entered the kitchen Kai'Sa was already preparing breakfast, and once she saw me she just smiled without saying anything and handed me a cup of coffee... bless this girl! She really is a princess

I was catching up with my messages and online account while on the balcony and i decided to send a message to Yasuo and Ekko telling them i will call them by the end of they day, that way they can prepare since they are a different time zone then us... then i looked at number of my Step-Mom and Dad and just decided to call them latter if i send them a massage now they will want to talk and i am really not in a talking mood this morning... actually make that all mornings

After about 1h me and Evellyn were in the elevator and were going down, i know i spent some time with the girls already and the stuttering was gone but i still felt a little uncomfortable being alone with her.

As we were going down i noticed we stooped one floor above the garage

(Y/N): I thought we were going by car

Evellyn: Oh we are dear. But my private garage is here, down there is the common one.

And then the doors opened and i could just open my mouth and stared in awe.

(Y/N): You guys were not kidding when you said money is not a issue

The whole floor had about 30 Cars and i may not be a car person but even i cant tell this was high quality stuff that costs millions not to mention some of these cars i only saw on movies.

Evellyn just snickered at my words and motioned me to follow her

Evellyn: Maybe half of these cars i bought my self the rest are giving to me as Courtship present, promotional sponsor and even some as peace offerings to try to stop me from destroying their lives or the lives of their children.

(Y/N): *whisper* and i got you a stuffed toy...

I think Evellyn heard me because she suddenly stooped and was looking at me with a frown on her face, it looked like she wanted to say something but decided not to. I should probably get her a better present... but man i don't think i can afford something like that... actually i think i need to buy new present for all the girls

(Y/N): Wait ! What was that last part ?!

TIMESKIP

Unlike Akali, Evellyn's driving was very different. She also drove fast but i kinda felt safe, you could see she has experience and that she is not driving fast just for the joy of it... it gave more of a feeling "I can so i will"

We got to the Piltover central mall which was the biggest one in the city i heard there were 5 floors but only the first three were opened to the general public. Apparently you need to have a special pass to enter the top ones. Those thoughts were quickly confirmed because as soon as we entered the elevator Evellyn pulled a purple card and after swiping it the Nm 4-5 lighted up...

Once the doors opened i suddenly understood why its not open to everybody. It was like a different world compared to downstairs. Everything was sparkling clean there were golden decorations all over the place with fancy pictures and is that a fountain in the middle of the hall... and holy shit its made out of silver and gold !

By the people that were walking around i was sure this was only for high class it could all be seen from their clothes to their posture... and not a single one of them was carrying their bag's. Every single one of them was being followed by a young man in a butler suit and every single one of them looked like he came from a highschool drama and his future has been decided in modeling.

????: Good Morning Mistress Evellyn.

I then turned around and saw about 5 of these handsome guys waiting

????: Who would you like to accompany you today ?

And then they all smiled and bowed... crap i thought i was a average guy.. but they make me look like i came out of the gutter trash with my looks and clothes. Not to mention my feeling was kinda confirmed since i was drawing attention. All around us there were frowns and snickers from the butlers and shoppers.

Evellyn: No need today

And she just started walking down i of course started to follow her right away but i heard in the background

????: Another toy ?

????: *snickers* Nah look at him probably some charity case

????: *laughing* Haha so pathetic

I was kinda mad Evellyn made no reaction she either notice them or she didn't care

TIMESKIP

After about 3h we were walking out of one of the many stores we visited. My hands were already massively full i think i had 9 bags in each and it was getting heavy. It didn't help that the butler boys were passing by every now and there, and they laughing in my direction... i need to work out. As Evellyn was looking around probably deciding the next place she want to visit a voice was suddenly heard.

????: Evellyn darling , it so amazing to see you

A beautiful woman who can probably compare to the pop stars came and hugged her which Evellyn returned with a smile and a happily answered

Evellyn: Hello Le'Blanc, doing some shopping before the party ?

She then laughed and motioned to the 3 butler bastards... i mean boys... nah il just call them bastards and each of them was carrying at least 10 bags in each hand without even a sweet.... i definitely need to work out more.

Le'Blanc: You and the girls are coming right ?

Evellyn just frowned on those words

Evellyn: The truth is we were planing not to... you parties are always big and loud. Plus they tend to be problematic for us

Le'Blanc: Oh come on don't be like that, you are all my friends plus it will help my image. And since when do you worry about trouble. The only reason that guy from last time is still alive is because Akali grabbed him first before you got the chance

Evellyn just made a evil snicker

Evellyn: Well what did he expect after slapping her ass, he should be lucky its only his arms and ribs that are broken *whisper* i would have done much worse.... fine we will come

Holy shit... these ladies are dangerous... and i like it... The Le'Blanc finally noticed me

Le'Blanc: Why hello there, i don't believe we meet? My name is Le'Blanc its a pleasure. And you are ?

And then she just extended her hand.... do i shake it or do i kiss it... i mean she looks like a high class lady... ah screw it

I took her hand and kissed it

(Y/N): My name is (Y/N) (L/N), p-p-plesure

Which made both her and Evellyn look at me with a shocked expression which, means i probably looked like a douche doing this. It was only confirmed when the three bastards started snickering and laughing. Oh lighting strike me !

Le'Blanc: OH myyy Evellyn!

Evellyn: And they say chivalry is dead !

They were actually laughing bordering with giggling but the good kind of laugh. It made me go completely red in embarrassment. But i felt better since the three bastards were upset

Evellyn: This is (Y/N) he is our new slave *cough* sorry Maid

That's NOT BETTER !

Le'Blanc: Hehe well a pleasure non the less, will you be joining us at the party tonight

(Y/N): Well... high class party's are not really my thing

Le'Blanc: *smiles* high class ?? Oh my. Pish posh i insist

(Y/N): Well i guess if the girls don't mind

Evellyn then put a arm under her chin and looked me once over

Evellyn: You definitely need some new clothes then, there is Syndra's boutique down the hall so we need to find something for you. Your regular clothes would stand out to much

Le'Blanc: Ohhh perfect then while our Knight in shining armor is doing some shopping we should grab some coffee

Evellyn: Sure dear

Then Le'Blanc grabbed Evellyns hand and dragged her away.I was left alone in the middle of the hall with the bags... suddenly i felt extremely small... Evellyn just keeps pissing me off today

SMALL TIMESKIP LATER

I left the bags on the entrance since apparently all shops had areas for it. Then I entered what i presumed was Syndra's boutique. The place was giant and it had everything from formal to casual wear. I went to a corridor that looked like it was dark formal.

(Y/N): I guess il just get a dark elegant shirt with some pants and i will be...

Then i saw the selection Black, Dark Black, Cyan Black, Dark Light Black..... dafuq 90% of this looks completely the same to me ! Can people even tell the difference !

????: May we help you sir ?

As i turned around i saw two ladies that were standing behind me with professional smiles...

(Y/N): Ummm yes i-i-i am looking for some d-d-dark elegant clothes

One of the ladies smiled then

ShopLady1: Ah are you scouting for your buyer then this section here is perfect

ShopLady2: Or if he wants something more businesses then the section 2 corridors down is better

(Y/N): Um no i-i-its for me

Both of the ladies then just raised their eyebrows and were looking at me probably standing and waiting for me to start laughing like i made a joke. Then when they understood i was serious they started to laugh out loud... and it was not a good laugh. I know that laugh i felt it a few times in my life

ShopLady1: Hahahahahah wait sorry sorry... are you serious ? really

ShopLady2: Are you sure your not joking with us ??? Hahaha

Crap i was red from toes to ears i wanted these to tell these two bitches to go fuck them self but i couldn't... Evellyn was a regular here. And even though i was pissed off at her for bringing me at a place like this and leaving me alone i couldn't just lash out

(Y/N): *Inhale* Ummm is it a problem if i want to buy something

My stuttering was completely gone and i was doing everything i can not to make a scene, i didn't need any more shit after that scene with Jaina

Shopbitch1: OMG he is serious... ahahahahha

Shopbitch2: Hahaha. I was sure you were lost

And then they just gave me a evil glare

Shopbitch1: I am afraid this shop is not for people like you

Shopbitch2: I am afraid you cant even afford our socks... pfffffff hahahahahha

I was burning with embarrassment and rage i wanted to cry and yell and the same time, it was taking everything i can not to scream

(Y/N): I see... *gritting teeth* then i am sorry to bother you... i will just leave

As i was getting ready to leave on of the girls grabbed my shoulder

Shopbitch2: One moment sir, i thought i saw you put something under your shirt, hey go call the security guard

I wanted to punch her... i wanted to punch her so hard !!!! But again i couldn't...

(Y/N): *sigh* fine

They probably meant this as a joke to mess with me. But something just snapped in me and my face was completely emotionless . That of course just pissed them off and one of the girls went to the phone.... i don't know on who i was more angry the shop bitches, Evellyn or myself!

EVELLYN POV

Le'Blanc: HE KISSED YOUR NOSE !!!

I love Le'Blanc like sister but seriously she needs to learn not to raise her voice

Evellyn: Yes deary he pulled my head down after such a cheesy line and kissed my nose

Le'Blanc: OH my! I have to say i am impressed! It's almost impossible for a man to shock you let alone even get a kiss in, and he did both. I think i am going to have to spend some time with him tonight he has peaked my interest

Huh....

Le'Blanc: *gulp* I am joking Eve i am just joking don't make that kind of face

What face ? Am i making a face... heh strange. I guess he kinda peaked my interest during the interview but he won me over with that stupid plushie! Nobody ever even though of giving something like that to me. And i have to say i am smiling more since he came

Evellyn: Oh sorry dear look at the time i should probably go check on him and we need to go back if we are gonna make it for the party.

Le'Blanc: You don't trust his taste ? *giggle*

Evellyn: *smirk* Not even a little you should see what kind of shirts he wares all of them either have a rock band a dragon or some kind of 20 side dice on them. There is even this old leather jacket which apparently he considers classy

As i was getting up one of the servants boys assisted me. There was also another one behind him and i knew those the bags were mine.

ServantBoy1: Where to next mistress Evellyn ?

ServantBoy2: Lisandras perfumes just released a new brand and its on shelf's today, may i suggest that

Evellyn: Thank you for your offer but no. And may i ask why do you have my bags ? Where is (Y/N)

And then one of them just smirked while the other one snickered

ServantBoy1: Oh don't worry about him! He has been taken care of, but don't leave yet let us take yo... GUAAAAH !!!!!!

LE'BLANC POV

ServantBoy1: Oh don't worry about him! He has been taken care of, but don't leave yet let us take yo... GUAAAAH !!!!!!

OH MY ! Before that servant could finish Evellyn grabbed him by his neck and lifted him up. The poor boy was chocking and was losing color in his face

ServantBoy2: Mistress Evellyn wha... AHHHHHHHH !

And the second one got impaled by both of her tail blades and was crashed into the wall with blood spraying everywhere. In a matter of seconds the light around Evellyn started to darken and its like the shadows themself were rising from the ground

Evellyn: *growling* W-h-a-t-h-a-s-b-e-n-n-d-o-n-e

I don't think i ever saw Eve like this, that man that was with her is more interesting then i originally thought !

Le'Blanc: You know this is your fault right

Then she snapped her head with those gloving amber eyes towards me... i am a proud woman i have never been scared in my life... but today... today i wanted to run to the bathroom

(Y/N) POV

The elevator door opened and i entered he penthouse. My whole body was sore after that security guard literary threw me out. I just took a taxi back home since i had no intention to wait for Evellyn, i was still angry at her... or was i angry at myself i didn't care anymore

Kai'Sa: (Y/N) are you OK ??!!

(Y/N): Hmm ?

Kai;Sa: You have bruise on your knee !

(Y/N): Ah yea don't worry about it i just fell

Technically it was true

(Y/N): Il be in my room i need to make a call, se ya later

Well this chapter went a little longer then expected

CHAPTER 11 (Your lucky i like you ! !)

So apparently my real life friend reed my story, and after he finally finished laughing his ass off pointed out something that i actually didn't pay attention to. I was actually not explaining the look of some of the character. I kinda just automatically assumed you guys will now from the original Lol looks with a few tweaks that i mentioned, and he who never played Lol actually had no idea how to imagine them. So i am probably just gonna publish a chapter with pictures and small explanations of side characters like Mundo, Jaina, Malph and so on ...

PS: THERE IS LETS SAY A FORM OF TORTURE IN THIS CHAPTER I WILL GIVE YOU A HEADS UP IF YOU WANT TO SKIP IT

(Y/N) POV:

ding dong ding, ding ding ding ding dong ding **(Skype sound... yea its sucks)**

(Y/N): Hey guys !

Ekko: *Omg he is alive !!!!*

Yasuo: *Hey (Y/N)*

I was siting in my room when the Skype on my phone started ringing. The rage from this morning deflated completely once i saw who was calling

(Y/N): How are you all doing ? Is Ekko listening to you Fedyuo ?

Yasuo: **sigh* Hardy har har, very funny*

(Y/N): I try

Just what i needed after a bad day. Then Ekko's excited voice could be heard over the call

Ekko: *Ok man i just cant wait anymore, I GOTSSSSS TO KNOW ! How the hell did you end up from flying and barfing to living with KD/A girls*

(Y/N): Oh you know the usual. I flipped off a TV crew, got fired then had my apartment destroyed. They got Grozdana man !

Grozdana was my beautiful PS4

Yasuo: *Seriously man poor Grozdana she will be remembered ! But if i didn't hear all of this from a few different people for sure i would think you were bull-shitting me*

Ekko: *And he says he is a powerless! Only a power can bring this much bullshit !*

(Y/N): Haaa then i would gladly be a Gray !

Yasuo: *chuckling* *Nice try (Y/N), but i can see your smile, i have it your enjoying yourself ?*

Ekko: *Ofc he is enjoying himself! He is surrounded by the four of the 10 hottest women on this planet... tell me did you bang somebody ? Who is it? Is it Akali? I bet its Akali!*

Then Yasuo just smacked Ekko on the head

Yasuo: *Stop being such a child !*

I just snickered and made a grin

(Y/N): A gentleman doesn't tell

Then both of them were looking at me with shocked faces

Ekko & Yassuo: *WAIT SERIOUSLY? WHO ?!!!*

Ah i really needed this. These two are so easy to tease!

(Y/N): Nah man nothing happened i just sle... *cough* never mind

And then they started with a barrage of questions and i had to end a call making a lie the connection was lost... i know those two and even though they are my best friends, they couldn't keep a secret if their life depended on it.

(Y/N): I think im gonna have a smoke now! I feel better after this call.

And my good mod was gone as soon as i got up and felt a little join of pain in my knee... shit im mad again now. As i left my room making my way to the balcony Kai'Sa, Akali and Ahri were setting up for lunch. Until Ahri noticed me and made a concerned look on her face

Ahri: Ummm (Y/N) is everything ok ?

(Y/N): Yea no worrie...

Before i could finish my sentence the elevator door opened and Evellyn walked in... oh she had all her bags with her probably one of those bastardbuttlers carried it for her... and she's even carrying them all with one hand like it weight's nothing... i really need to go to the gym.

She then noticed me and gave me a once over while i was just standing with my eyebrow risen. Then she froze her gaze on my knee and started making her way towards me

Evellyn: darling that knee wha....

(Y/N): Yea don't worry its of no concern to you.

I just answered with a blank expression... i was maybe acting like a dick but she deserved it.

Evellyn: Ah i see. Anyway i have a present for you

She then started rummaging through her bags and gave a box that held the newest model of phone. It was the same model that they were now using.

Evellyn: Darling you left before we could buy it so i picked it up on the way, plus its black and i know yo...

(Y/N): Yea no thanks

I said as i returned the phone to her

Evellyn: Excuse me ?

(Y/N): I don't need it. I am perfectly happy with the phone you gave me, now if there is nothing else im just gonna go for a smoke before lunch

Evellyn: umm no darling

(Y/N): *smile* OK perfect ill see you guys in 5 min !

Akali POV

Ummm what just happened ?!

When we came for lunch Kai'Sa told us that (Y/N) came half a hour ago with angry expression. Apparently he was also limping a little because of a scrape on his knee. At first we thought maybe he really just feel down and we know how Evellyn gets during shopping. Both me and Kai'Sa left her and Ahri a few times because they can spend a whole day in the mall.

Then you see (Y/N) coming out of his room with a angry expression and when Ahri called to him he just made a fake smile like everything was ok... and then Evellyn showed up and everything went out of the window

(Y/N) was clearly upset and Evellyn and she was actually acting soft and meek. That alone was scary, and when she tried to give him the phone he just refused her and left. The scariest thing is that instead of bursting in rage and going after (Y/N) Eve just sighted and put down all the bags... i knew it was a bad idea to send them together to 'that' mall even i hate going there and Kai'Sa stays maybe a hour max because of all those servants. Both of us cant stand them when they start annoying us with mistress this and that.

Lunch was set up and (Y/N) came back inside and instead of siting on his usual place between Ahri and Evellyn he just went and sat on my place.

Evellyn was just staring at him... this will not end good

TIMESKIPE brought by ADDSKIP

(Y/N) POV

OK i think i am ready. I took a shower, shaved my bear that was starting to grow in and i actually pulled out lets say nice clothes. It was from the Flea-Market but fuck them. Black jeans with a Dark Green shirt without any logos or markings and black boots.

Then i left my room and as i entered the living room and froze as i opened the door. I think my chin was down to my stomach

Ahri: *giggle* Careful (Y/N) you have some drool coming on the side

I then noticed that all of them were looking at me and giggling, my face must have been very funny but man i have to say... MAMA MIA those are some spicy meatballs !

They were all in elegant dresses that in my opinion covered to little, but man i am not complaining! Even Akali was in a casual dress which was shocking even though it was a mini skirt down there, Kai'Sa was in a long frilly purple dress with one of her legs exposed, Ahri had a blue dress that only covered one of her shoulder and exposed her back, and Evellyn had a tight dark red dress that didn't cover her side... *gulp* tonight is going to be hard to stay soft.

Then we all entered the elevator and i was frowning

Kai'Sa: (Y/N) why are you upset ?

(Y/N): Nah you guys look beautiful but i have a complaint....

AAKE: Hmm ?

(Y/N): Why are you in high heals !

AAKE: Huh ?!

(Y/N): *sigh* all off you are already taller then me by a good margin and now i cant even compare

Evellyn then just turned to me and said in a seductive voice

Evellyn: Oh are you feeling insecure my pet

Which of course i completely ignored with a straight face, i was still mad at her and turned my attention to Akali

(Y/N): Thank you for thinking of me and not wearing any!

Akali: Um.. sure, i just don't like them...

AKALI POV

Ah crap (Y/N) don't use me in your fight with Evellyn she is throwing murder our way!!

As we got down to the garage. I went to my bike while the rest to Evellyn's car until (Y/N) suddenly spoke up

(Y/N): Akali mind if i ride with you ?

Akali: Sure i don't mind.

I was surprised since he was crying like a baby the last time he was on my bike... but then i saw Evellyns face... this will definitely not end good.

TIMESKIP

I was standing in the corner of the mansion drinking some soda. On our way here Akali was driving slowly compared to last time and even asked me if something was going between me and Evellyn which i just answered with a shrug. Once we arrived at the party everybody just went their own way, Evellyn tried to talk to me one more time but i just left like i saw someone... and now i am alone in the corner.

This is pretty much expected when Le'Blanc invited me. All of the people here were famous in one way or another from movie stars to singers to businessmen. Everyone was talking in group's and i even noticed the girls a few times but thy were always talking to somebody and always in the center of attention... i guess they really are the most popular here.... *SIGH*

????: Oh no no no we cant have that

I turned around and saw Le'Blanc who was smiling my way and then she just extended her hand... i took and shook her

(Y/N): Thank you for inviting me, amazing party

She kinda frowned when i shook her hand but put on her smile again.... did she really expect i was going to kiss it again....

Le'Blanc: *smiles* i actually want to introduce you to somebody (Y/N)! She is looking forward to talking to you

She then pointed to a person that i just now noticed was standing next to her. She was a beautiful woman in a amazing elegant dress... wait are those diamonds on it

Le'Blanc: Ahhh Taric darling so good off you to come

And then she left... and i am alone with this woman... oh goody

(Y/N): *cough* G-g-good evening my name is (Y/N) (L/N)

She then smiled

????: Hello (Y/N) you can call me Syndra

(Y/N): Hmm Syndra where did i hea....

And then i frowned and sighted... just great... ah fuck it lets not make a scene

(Y/N): Ahem before you say anything i would like to apologize

She just lifted her eyebrow and before she could say anything i continued

(Y/N): I don't know what you heard but i didn't steal anything and i am sorry for the scene that was made because of me, so can we please drop it at that

She had her mouth opened and then made a huge smile and started to laugh

Syndra: Hahahah i am sorry for laughing hahaha she was right you really don't belong here hahahha

I apologized and this lady starts laughing at me and tells me that i don't belong here... this is why i hate parties *SIGH*. Then i guess she noticed my face and started waving her hand and wiping her tears

Syndra: Wait wait sorry. I am not laughing at you and i didn't mean anything bad by it. Its actually good !

To that i just raised my eyebrow... god i have been raising my eyebrow so much these past few days i think its going to get fixed up there

Syndra: All of these people think thy are something special and have their head up their ass so much that they cant even see their shoelace anymore

(Y/N): Pffff hahahahahha

Ok that was a good one, i have a feeling she is a smart-ass like me. Then she took a deep breath and looked my way all serious and calm

Syndra: It is me who should apologize to you. The way my workers treated you was disrespectful and plain rude. I can only say sorry i will make sure something like this never happens again.

(Y/N): *Ahem* No its ok... i mean its not OK but i understand it's not your fault i know people act differently when their boss is not there.

She just laughed again and pulled out a black card and gave it to me, on the back it said Syndra's VIP

Syndra: With this you have 50% discount on any purchase you do in my shop's not to mention anybody who comes with you is welcome to the same privilege... just don't bring Ahri to much or i will be ruined *wink*

(Y/N): Hmm thank you very much... but me and clothing stores...

Syndra: Ah not to worry your face is in the system and as soon as you show up you will be treated like a king ! And let me tell you a secret, the cloths that i use in private are all from the Flea-Market

After that statement i just couldn't hold back my grin and we started laughing together like crazy, some people were even looking our way and commenting

????1: Ohh my is that Syndra ?

????2: Who is she with ?

????3: Oh that guy must be showing the new look she is planing to release i have to get that !

After the last comment we were actually crying in laughter. After about 5 min both of us finally calmed down and Syndra spoke in serious voice

Syndra: Anyway the two girls have been fired, i didn't punish them since that will just be to much after what Evellyn did... well it was already to much. There is a good possibility that they will need a mental hospital.

(Y/N): Haha well its ok just geti.... wait what do you mean by that? What did Evellyn do ?

Syndra then just looked at me with a frown

Syndra: You don't know ?

(Y/N): Know what ?

She then just snapped her fingers and a girl ran to us delivering a tablet... holy shit that was cool ! After a few taps she handed the tablet to me and at

first i had no idea what i was looking at until realization hit me and my face was frozen in shook.

FORM OF TORTURE COMING SKIP IF IT MAKES YOU UNCOMFORTABLE SKIP TO THE NEXT BOLDED PART

It was the inside of Syndra's store. The two bastardbuttlers were on the floor and if you zoom in you can see that one was unconscious with severe neck bruising while the other one was wailing on the floor and had two huge puncture wounds on his shoulders that were bleeding.

A little to the side the two bitchworkers were siting naked on the floor with their face makeup completely destroyed with their crying.

In the corner the security guard was... holy shit! He was impaled on the clothing hangar... he was still alive because he was twitching and clearly stile conscious... it looked like he wanted to scream but he was to weak and barely even keeping his eyes open

And siting near the entrance like she was the queen of the world was Evellyn. She had such a angry expression that it made my whole spine shiver even though i was watching all of this on camera.

(Y/N): Holy Shit!

Syndra: There is more....

(Y/N): What !?

Syndra: After that she made my employees get outside and....

She just tapped the tablet a few times and a new camera was showing the center of the mall with the two girls walking around completely naked in front of everybody. Evellyn was just standing behind watching all from afar.

Then Syndra tapped the tablet again and the sound turned on. As soon as a man would stop one of them would go to him and

BitchWoker1: E-e-e-excuse me sirrr... w-w-will you use your cock to clean my dirty mouth...

HOLY SHIT !

Every time a guy would stop to look at them they would go to him and say the same thing... most of them had shocked expressions and just continued going away... but some of them actually grabbed the girl and went to the bathroom with her ....

(Y/N): .... i have no words

I was pretty shocked at the whole scene, after some time Evellyn left but the girls continued doing the same routing glancing all around afraid that she will show up and punish them for not doing what they have been told.

(Y/N): How... *gulp* how long did this last....

Syndra: For about three hours, until they were sure she was not coming back and the rest of the security finally steeped in... by the end the girls were not in a good situation and were just siting on the floor looking at empty air, one of the guys will have a hard time speaking for the rest of the life while the other one lost more than 60% of usage in his arms... the security guard.... is still in surgery.... they are trying to save his spine

<u>OK YOU CAN CONTINUE READING NOW</u>

Holy shit... that was just... to much.... i mean they deserved to be punished... but this. I am not one of those guys that will forgive somebody just because its a right thing to do. But this was brutal

(Y/N):Umm what about the police ?

Syndra just did a *humph*

Syndra: 90% of people who meet Evellyn are scared shit-less when they see her. Believe me when i tell you they will not act and even if they do, their mndzr will just take care of it.

Then Syndra looked to the floor and scratched her neck

Syndra: And i am one of them who is also scared, that's why i came to you (Y/N)... i heard she is looking for me and she even called my office. I want to ask you to stop her bloodbath

Ah i see. I wondered why she tried so hard... i mean she is cool and its clear she felt bad, but not something that will require her personal intervention... I guess all those rumors about Evellyn were true...

(Y/N): *sigh* your lucky i like you !

She then just looked at me with hope in her eyes

(Y/N): I will go talk to her... anyway i need to apologize as well to her i was acting like a dick because i thought she didn't care

Syndra's eye just twitched and she had a shocked expression

Syndra: You were acting like a dick towards Evellyn... wow

Yea i am starting to understand that i fucked up bad... i better get a drink before i find her

And that's it for this chapter, i planed more but i got sleepy part2 will come tomorrow

CHAPTER 12 (NUUUUTCRAKEEEEEER!)

Wow i slept bad last night, the weather got a little warmer and the mosquito attack was unreal... this is why i love the snow almost no bug's then ! Anyway off to the next chapter and be WARNED! I'ts gonna start with a flash back from one of the bitchworkers so if your not into that thing SKIP THE FIRST PART IL GIVE A HEADS UP!

BitchWorker2 POV:

BitchWorker1: *sob sob* i don't w-w-a *barf*

My coworker was siting on the bed next barfing in the bucket and crying non stop. Both of us were currently in the hospital because she had a mental brake down... i was com... *SLAM*

BitchWorker2: aaaaaaaaa !

The door of the room slammed closed as her stupid boyfriend rushed in to her...

????: Ummm mam ?

Ah i am under the bed... why am i hiding under the bed... it will not help... she will find me... i cant hide from her.... no no no save me noooo....

????: MAM ! Are you ok ?

Ah... what.... i looked upon the police officer that was standing above me...

PoliceOff: Can you please tell us the story again

BitchWorker1 Boyfriend: WHAT STORY! ARREST THAT BITCH ALREADY !

The 3 officer's just got pale faces and looked away

PoliceOff: Well *cough* i mean we need to get the facts straight *cough* before we can do anything

BitchWorker1 Boyfriend: WHAT FACTS !? LOOK AT WHAT SHE DID TO THEM! TO ALL OF THEM WHAT MORE DO YOU NEED !

Yea there is no point they will do nothing... power is everything and she..... no no no i am sorry mistress i am sorry

PoliceOff: Mam !

Ah yes yes i am safe now i am safe... is that shadow moving... oh my god that shadow is moving... why did this happen *sob* if we only didn't *sob*

SKIP UNTIL THE NEXT BOLDED PART IF YOU DON'T LIKE THIS STUFF

FLASHBACK

Bitchworker1: Hahaha serves him right

Bitchworker2: Haha yea, he should learn he doesn't belong here

We were having a blast! We had amazing sale in the morning i had a date tonight with a guy i liked for some time and tomorrow is payday

Bitchworker1: Hey mind if i get out a little early today !? My boyfriend is gonna pick me up and take me to dinner since its my birthday

Bitchworker2: *snickers* sure sure you deserved it, good job with that man hahaha

Bitchworker1: Well he deserved it with that face he was giving us in the end! Here we are using our precious time on him and he dares look at us like that !

Well this was fun ! That guy didn't deserve anything else what did he expect when he came to shop here! He should go to a second-hand store. We were lucky Trundle showed up he likes to get rough !

Bitchworker2: Oh and the way Trundel told him to remove all the stuff from himself haha

Bitchworker1: OMG i know right i t was so pathetic, good thing he actually refused to get striped i don't want to look at him ahahahhahahahah

Bitchworker2: And the way he was stuttering in the beginning! He should act his age ! it was so pa....

SLAM

We both jumped as the front door of the store slammed. At first we were shocked but then we had huge smiles on our face's !!!!

Bitchworker1: madam Evellyn its such a pleasure to see you

Bitchworker2: yes madam we are so happy to see you !

I love Evellyn! We both did she was our ultimate idol ! The diva who doesn't care about what ever they think about her. I still remember her first concert before she was in KD/A when she just stooped the show for 15min because the back up singer was bad ! She is so amazing. Hmm why are the lights so weak suddenly...

Bitchworker1: Let me assists you we have a new style that came just this morning ! It will be perfect for you !

Not to mention every time she came to shop we got present's! One time i said how a dress looked amazing and she bought it for me ! The next time she left shoes from a different store with us because she liked the ones here more i still have those shoes.....

????: aaaaaah p-p-p-please s-s-stop

Then like for the first time i finally saw her.... it was like the void itself has opened its maw and was staring at us. In her left hand she was holding one of the ServantBoy's by his neck. His face was completely blue and you could see he was barely breathing, a little above her on the side was another ServantBoy and his shoulders were impaled on her tail blades he was wailing softly.

And then she just drooped the both of them on the floor.

Bitchworker1: Umm ma-m-am-madam ?

The door then opened and Trundle walked in on us with a huge grin on his face

Trundle: Haha the guy sure can fly ! Hey that idiot is lying on the sidewalk in front of the mall. He should have just striped when we told him to hahaha.....

SLASH

Trundle: Waaaa!

In a next instant Evellyn suddenly extended her claws and scratched Trundels face which made him scream in pain

SLAM

Trundle: *cough* *cough* wha... *cough* why is this *cough* why is this wood standing in my *cough* chest

Then she picked him up by his head and impaled in on the standing cloth hanger that was holding a business suite. We were frozen in fear this scene was not happening! This is a nightmare right

Evellyn: Strip...

Bitchworker1: Madam ?

Evellyn: Did i stutter ? I said STRIP!

END OF FLASHBACK

..... ahh, my mouth is dirty again

Bitchworker2: Excuse me officer. Would you like to use your....

AND DONE! NOW BACK TO THE PARTY!

(Y/N) POV:

I was walking through the 3d floor of the mansion... wow its huge! Her mansion alone is bigger then my high-school! I was trying to find Evellyn... man how come when ever you want to evade somebody they just keep showing up. But when you need to find them they are never there!

As i was going through the floors i saw the girls on the way Ahri was surrounded by what i presumed were fashion followers since almost all of them had fancy unique clothes. In that group allot of men who looked like Vastaya were present... i guess she is drawing attention like crazy not only was she beautiful but she was one of the rare female vastaya in the show buizz. It was mostly guys on dramas and soap-operas you could bet there were extremely handsome. She was giving a beautiful smile to all of them while actually puffing her chest a little teasing all of them... he-he i would love just to put my face in that che... ok no

Akali had a huge group as well, on the one side were clearly all girls, they were screaming in glee when ever she moved and on the other were people who i presume were those types that like to look at in the mirror and talk to them-self's when they are in the gym, there was also alote of guys who followed the trend of rap as well by those giants hats and oversized pants. They were all flexing and huffing and puffing like pelicans while taking to her. They were all staring at her waist that was exposed with her abs showing up... man i would love to just grab her and pour a drink and put my face..... ok ok no no back!

On the other floor Kai'Sa was surrounded by men they were all trying to keep her attention, you could see she was uncomfortable by her look. But she still tried to keep her face professionally smiling. I mean i cant really blame them it was hard not to ogle at her! She was almost taller then all of them and and her dress was exposing one of her legs and the side of her amazing ass... omg that ass is so thick my face would feel amazing between thos... ok ok no no back to reality no !

One guy older guy couldn't apparently control himself and grabbed her ass with his hand... omg he cant even grab it all how thick it is !!

I actually got extremely pissed and wanted to go there. But Kai'Sa just suddenly flashed purple and in super speed turned to the guy, and smashed his royal treasury

SMASH

UUUUUUUUUUuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuu. Me and every single guy in the room suddenly grabbed their treasury and actually bended a little, while the guy just fell to the floor twitching with his eyes rolled back... he was knocked out in less then a second. One of the people that was standing next to me who looked like a Japanese Host from those crazy shows just screamed in bad English

JapaneseHost:NUUUUTCRAKEEEEEER!

People actually backed off a little and she was left standing alone.... its always the quiet ones that are the most dangerous

Then i saw Evellyn siting in the corner with her shades on and legs crossed. People were staying away at least 4m since the face she was making was sending shivers even down to my spine and i was standing on the other side of the room. Then one younger guy started approaching her. I recognized him as a singer since i saw his face a few times on the internet and i think he was being famous for being a playboy and taking his fans after concerts. He approached about to 2m close until she looked at him and then he just ran away... is that a yellow puddle behind him... holy shit !

(Y/N): Well.. time to go die

I just finished my drink and walked towards her... can i run away... no

Some of the people actually gasped and made shocked sounds when they noticed me approaching Evellyn. Some guys even snickered and i heard comments like *oh he is dead* *haha she going to destroy him* *oh maybe she will step on him... i want her to step on me*... wait that last one! Could IT BE ! My soul friend ! My brother from another mother..... nah probably not and i need to deal with Eve..

After a few moments of getting stares and whispers i finally stood directly in front of Evellyn... crap the look she had was making me shake in my knees

(Y/N): *ahem* E-evellyn

Evellyn: (Y/N)

Crap not even darling or maid just (Y/N)... i guess she is really pissed on how i treated her

(Y/N): *cough* i want to t-talk

To what she just raised her eyebrow and made a evil smirk

Evellyn: Ah you want to talk ? Well i am so sorry but you see i am busy... now if there is nothing else i would like to be left alone (Y/N). And don't you need to talk to that person that was calling you when we came in ?

Ahhh.... fuck it... some of these guys play doctors on TV so lets hope they learned some stuff during their acting career.

(Y/N): *sigh* Ok listen here Evellyn... i am sorry i should have not treated you like i did, but its your fault as well. You heard all those comments and you just ignored them.

She frowned and started to say something but i just put my fingers on her mouth shu shing her, which made the whole crowd gasp. OH MY GOD me everyone is looking at us !!! FML... fuck it its to late now

(Y/N): Still i am sorry for acting like a dick and i want to thank you... i meet Syndra and she showed me what you did to those people... i don't really approve everything but i still liked that you did it for me so thank you

And then i lowered my head and removed her glasses

(Y/N): And don't wear sunglasses indoors they hide your beautiful eyes

Hey my Grandpa said always give a compliment when they are angry, and plus it was true her eyes were amazing

And then i grabbed the back of her head and kissed her nose. As i did that the gasp was huge and some people even drooped their drinks in shock

(Y/N): Hmm you really do have a sweet nose! Anyway il see you later and thank you... i don't know if i said this but i found you in that store very sexy and hot... yea i admit i lied of not approving it was amazing... bye

And then i just walked away without giving her a chance to answer me anything i was passing next to Kai'Sa who just had her face frozen... oh GOD she saw everything

.... well i am still alive... lets hope i wake up in the morning

KAI'SA POV

At first i was upset... these parties are always awful not only do we always get separated every time we got smothered with all of this attention. While i was being surrounded by the men (Y/N) showed up and was looking towards Eve with a complicated expression. I knew that they were fighting and i was sure it was Eve's fault! But i didn't like how it was going. I still remember when Sera left us after that fight with Eve and Ahri and i didn't want (Y/N) to leave...

I like (Y/N) very much. He was very nice and was just so different compared to all the people in our life up until now. I really didn't want to lose him yet... i never felt like this about somebody and i found it strange.

I was going no go talk to him maybe try to smooth things over with him and Eve until one of these men grabbed my ass. I just kinda turned and hit him and when he fell to the floor somebody yelled 'nutcracker' with a bad accent. Then before i got a chance to talk to (Y/N) he was already standing in front of Eve, and after a few min that happened .

I was frozen in shock as (Y/N) passed me and went to another floor, when i looked around i saw half was looking at him and the rest were looking at Evellyn in frozen shock. Then almost all of these guys actually did a military salute towards him... men

????:hihihi

Huh ? I turned my head and all thought left my head.

EVELLYN WAS GIGGLING !

Evellyn: Hihihihi *giggling*

The queen diva herself that can make babies cry by just passing by them was giggling like a little girl while holding her nose with one hand ! You can clearly see i was not the only one who was baffled because the whole room was looking in shock. Even Le'Blanc who knew Evellyn as long as Ahri was just standing there with her eyes wide.

Then Evellyn probably remember where she was and just looked up and round in the room... and she WENT RED, which she never did ever since i meet her! That of course didn't last long since she just stood up and had a extremely scary face! In about 5 seconds the whole floor was empty and the only ones left were me, Le'Blanc and ... is that Syndra who was just shaking in fear... everyone else ran away

Le'Blanc: Ummm Eve darling *gulp* S-s-syndra wants t...

Evellyn: WHAT !

Syndra: HIiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiii

Syndra just suddenly fell to the floor and started apologizing like crazy while shaking and crying. But Eve was not paying attention to her... she was looking at the door that (Y/N) left out but she never drooped her hand from her nose... I then looked towards to one of the mirrors on the side with a blush

Kai'Sa: Huh ? Why do i have such a happy face

Well the first part went a little longer then i expected.... i just wanted to put small flashback but i guess i started enjoying myself and it just went off.... yea im kinky and sick in the head, deal with it. Onward to the next one and it's gonna be the last one in the party arc. I didn't actually plan for this party arc to be so long... but my imagination just went crazy

CHAPTER 13 (Priviet Madam)

OK my internet is having a stroke so i will try to finish this chapter somehow.

(Y/N) POV:

(Y/N): Well i am still alive... that's good

I was standing on the balcony finishing my smoke and trying to relax and chill after the scene with Evellyn. About ten minutes ago the main door of the mansion just busted open and i saw maybe 20 guys running in full speed scared... nah it cant be.

(Y/N): Well lets go back inside

Much to my disappointed the party was in full swing even though it was already 00;30am. People were drinking dancing and having fun.... i want to go home and play some games *sigh*

I was actually thinking of leaving but i guess it would be bad tack If i leave alone before the rest. Yaso gave me one of his wise speeches once because i left without informing them

There was clearly no point in going to the girls since Akali was there drinking with some people and laughing while Ahri was dancing in the middle of the floor drawing everybody attention. *sigh* they really are popular... how the hell did i ever end up with any of them..

As i was contemplating life i suddenly heard a line that i made me spit out my drink

????: Baby baby! They say that ZoeyLand is the happiest place on earth but they clearly never stood next to you !

PFFFF *cough cough*

When i looked i had towards the sound i saw one of the guys talking to one of the female guest's. I guess the unique thing about her was that she had pure white hair which was very rare here not to mention she was extremely beautiful in that pure white dress. The woman was just looking at him with blank face until she spoke

????: Izvineeti, pazhalusta ? **(rough translation would be '' Excuse me)**

????: Um mm is that a yes ?

White haired girl: Sto? **(what ?)**

The guy just had a defeated face and i walked away while i was snickering like crazy i guess the girl noticed me because she was making a frown and looking my way... ah crap was i that loud

(Y/N): *ahem* Priviet Madam, izvinite za smex (**Hello madam, sorry for the laughter)**

Then her eyes just went suddenly wide and she had a big smile !

????: *Ah you speak Russian ?*

(Y/N): *Yes actually *ahem* s-sorry for laughing*

????: *No no its ok ! He was the 15 one today and i was having already having a bad time since i cant speak English. My name is Ashe my i know yours ?*

I actually had a big smile, i liked using my other languages especially when i'm out and not online... it made me feel special

(Y/N): *My name is (Y/N). I presume your from the North ?*

She just made a big smile and nodded

Ashe: *Yes i was here for a photo shoot since we are going to have a fashion show next week in this city. And then when i came her a couple of days i noticed nobody knows how to speak my language. May i ask ? How do you know my language ?*

(Y/N): *Um would you believe me if i tell you that i learned it online while playing games. Most of them i learned that way... but my writing and reading is very weak compared to my speaking*

Ashe: *Wait others ?*

(Y/N): *Um yes i also speak French, Japanese, Spanish, German and Serbian next to Russian and English. But only English and German i can read and write*

Ashe: *smile* *WOW that's amazing !*

She had a incredible smile on her face that made me go full on red and then as the song changed she suddenly perked up and grabbed my hand, which of course didn't help my blush at all.

Ashe: *I love this song ! Lets dance*

Wait WHAT !

(Y/N): *Wa-wa-wa-wait i ca...* ah FML

AKALI POV:

Akali: Haha yea your right that is funny

No it was not... this was like a 50 story that i heard about a bike thing... this is why i don't like Le'Blanc's parties. I know we are here because she is our friend and to help boost her image but she has no reservations in inviting people.

Every time we have some kind of situation on her hands because people just don't want to back off. I remember last time when i broke the arms and ribs of that guy who thought it would be smart to pinch my ass, and a couple of time before that Ahri literally ripped out the tongue of that cat vastaya that was apparently in heat and was constantly trying to stick his tongue in her mouth... heh good times

Ahri was dancing on the floor being in the center of attention like usual. But by the face she was throwing me few times she was ready to go. I can se some of these guys are getting ready to be hands on and she had to keep her image so she wasn't in the mode to break hands and rip out tongues

????: *smile* VAU, zto udiviteljno !

Hmm when i turned my head and i saw (Y/N) talking with a northern girl. I recognized her immediately as Ashe he was one of the most popular fashion models in the pat 2 years... which i found strange since i know she doesn't speak English and i know (Y/N) is somebody who gets a little red when somebody talks to him let alone a foreign strang... wait why is (Y/N) BLUSHING SO MUCH WITH THAT GIRL!!?

Suddenly Ashe said something to him and grabbed (Y/N) which made him let out steam out of his ears and pulled him to the dance floor and started dancing around him!

At the beginning it started pretty normal and (Y/N) was clearly embarrassed and was moving his hands a body like a blow up mascot... Ashe apparently noticed made a smirk and changed her dancing

OY WHY ARE YOU GRINDING YOUR AS LIKE THAT AND KEEP THOSE HANDS TO YOURSELF! She then started basically grinding with her back towards him while going around and moving her hands all over his bodies he off course was just opening and closing his mouth like a fish while his hands where paralyzed on the side

WHAT !!!!!

She then grabbed his hands while putting one on her ass and the other one her hip.

Akali: That Bitch!

????: Umm sorry, listen Akali i once saw this bike th...

Akali: Can you shut the fuck up its annoying !

When i busted out on the guys around me they just had a shocked face... why was i getting so angry at that bitch ! Yes its clear (Y/N) is felling uncomfortable that's why i better go and help him... yea i only want to help him

Akali: yea so le.... oh shit

And then i saw Ahri standing still there in the middle of the dance floor looking at (Y/N) and Ashe... and then she started walking towards them with all of her nine tails out... oh shit

(Y/N) POV

I was in the middle of the dance floor with Ashe summoning every form of any power and self control to not to get a hard on. I don't even want to think about the way she is dancing on me but she shocked me completely when she putted one of my hands on her ass. And then she continued grinding on me basically... well there goes my self control *YOU RAAAAANG*

She clearly noticed it because she then just purred in my face

Ashe: *Hey want to get out of here?*

Which of course i was just opening my mouth trying to let out sound... there was only one thing i could say

(Y/N): **gulp* I would like tha...*

Before i could finish something went soft went around my waist and forcefully yanked me away from Ashe just as a giant Red waterfall poured

all over here . I was looking at her with a frozen expression and Ashe just stood there shocked.First i looked towards my waist and i saw a tail being wrapped around it it was holding me tighter by the second. Then both me and Ashe looked at the side and saw Ahri standing with a giant empty bowl of punch.

She had a smile on her face... and that smile was setting of every single alarm in my head

Ahri: ohhh i am soooo sorry !

We were just looking at her with shocked expressions.

Ahri: I wanted to refill the punch but i accidentally slipped

Then Ashe looked towards her dress that was completely now wet and red with stains

Ahri: I will gladly buy you a new one *smile* but you should go, you don't want to catch a cold

Ashe then just turned around and left the building at almost a running pace

Ahri: (Y/N)

(Y/N): *gulp* Y-y-y-y-yes Ahri ?

Ahri: You should go to the bathroom and wash your face with some cold water

I noticed that she was looking down at my pants.... *gulp*

(Y/N): Ummm.... can you move your tail first

Ahri: *smiles* Of course

She didn't remove her tail right away... and that smile.. that damned smile wanted to make me run for the hills in fear

** ONE COLD FACEWASH TIMESKIP**

When i left the bathroom i saw Kai'Sa who was waiting for me... even though she was smiling it felt wrong... She then just informed me that they all had enough and that they are going which i happily accepted. As we were going out i saw Syndra and Le'Blanc siting on the side so i decided to say goodbye... i actually had fun tonight when you think about it

(Y/N): Hey! Thank you for inviting me Le'Blanc it was fun!

Le'Blanc: Glad to hear it (Y/N) i hope you will come for a another one... i saw you had fun with Ashe *grins*

(Y/N): *ahem* yes... it was anyway thank you and good bye Syndra it was nice meeting you

Syndra: Definitely (Y/N)! We should meet up for coffee sometime i think you and i will get along.

I can only agree and smile since i knew she was a smart-ass and smart-asses tend to get along. As i turned around Kai'Sa was just standing there with her arms folded over her chest.... ok i have a really bad feeling about this.

When we finally got to the parking all the girls were already there....

Akali was siting on her bike and when she saw me she just gave me a evil grin

Akali: Come (Y/N) lets go, you can ride with me well get home fast !

And then she started adding power to her bike, which became extremely loud and started to shake

gulp

Ahri: Ah don't be like that Akali. I think (Y/N) was going to go the different direction, Ashe's hotel is on the other side of town *smiles*

Oh shit i want to run the hills that smile is scary today

(Y/N): Ummm

Kai'Sa: Are you sure Ahri? I thought he made plans for coffee with Syndra? Do you want to stay here maybe and wait for her ?!

Wait common it's just coffee !

And then i looked towards Evellyn who's growling almost made me piss my pants

Evellyn: Get the fuck into the car and shut the fuck up before i fucking make you fucking sit there do you fucking understand !

(Y/N): YES MAM!!!

OK, OK, i am not a dense idiot but common they cant be getting mad because of me! And it makes no sense when you compare me and them.Wait are they seriously jealous!! Crap i have such a big grin on my face now i better control it before they kill me... but i just cant stop. This party was AMAZING !

Ok the last part was a little rushed because my internet decided to have a stroke any every 3 min the site would ask m to save because i lost connection.... I think the next release will be introduction on some of the side characters that we have seen until now still not sure depends on how the picture hunting goes. And i like to apologize i know a little bit of Russian but its a very big pain in the ass to change the keyboard type.

A Thank you for me and a bio for our sides

So i would like to begin with a thank you for all of you that are reading this this story up to this point. I have to say i have been extremely bored this past month considering this extended vacation because of corona. You know that you are at the critical point of boredom when even the stuff you were enjoying becomes just slow and uneventful. This which started as just a experiment with a first story actually earned a special place in my heart. I never expected that i would get this many readers and that people would actually be enjoying it. Just on example was last night when decided to play one game of Lol after about of 2 weeks of ignoring it. This guy in enemy team suddenly ask's me " Wait Depore202 ? are you maybe the guy who is writing the story? You have the same nick." I was like holy shit ! It was a epic moment what are the chances like 0.01 % in my opinion... by the way a message to him " I AM SORRY!!! YOU PROBABLY GOT REPORTED LIKE ME XD" .... yea we kinda got talking and the game was gone to hell XD i didn't even pay attention to the game anymore and i have to say we lost because of me !

Ok enough about me lets try to introduce our side characters

First of of course is Manager Mundo my personal favorite and yes its my guilty pleasure to write his POV'S. And i am sorry i forgot to mention he is of the Demon race

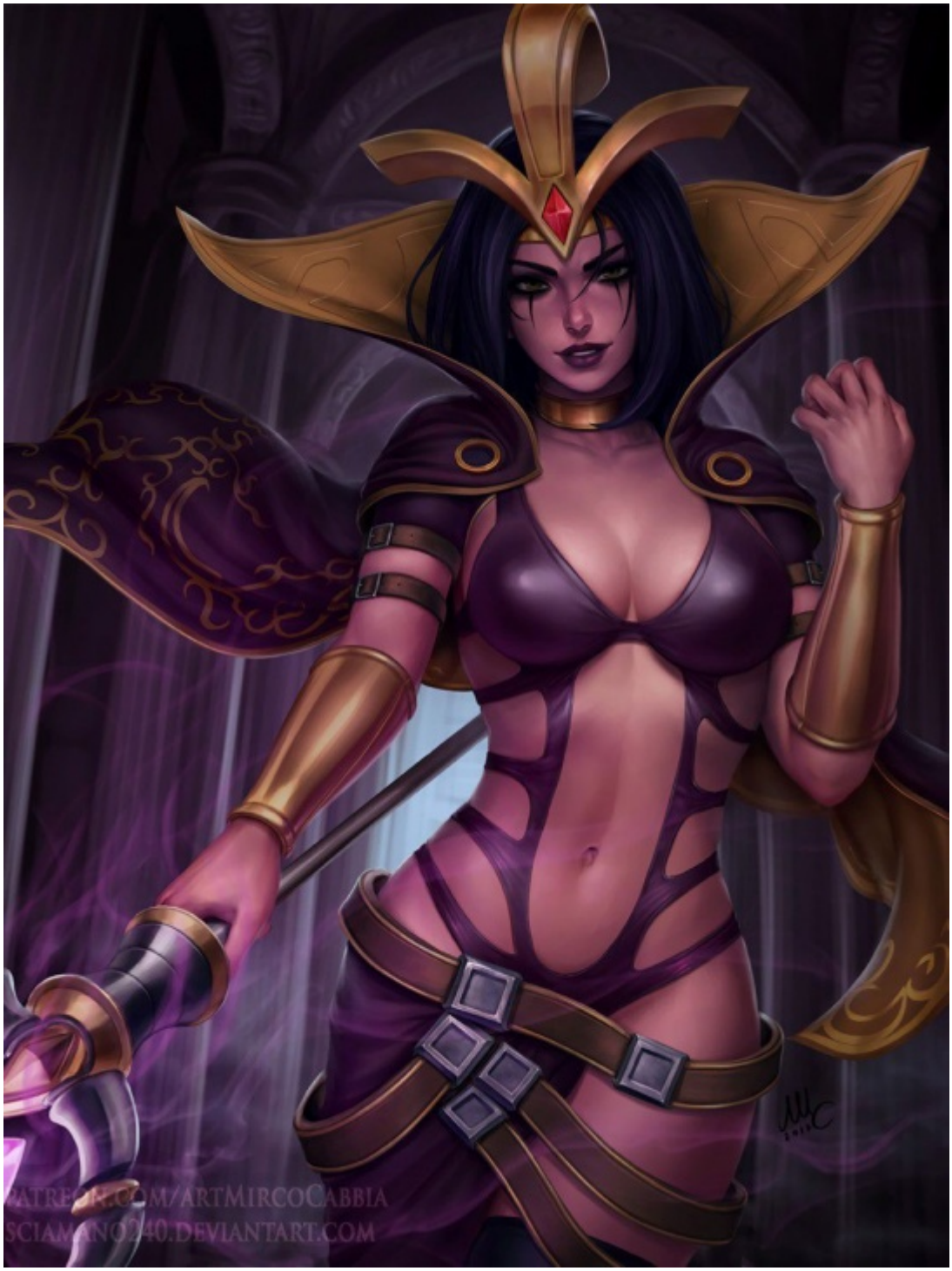
Next we have Yasuo who is the part of the group of True dmg and right after him Ekko they are both (Y/N) best friends

By
SLEEPINGCAT

Then we have Braum the man with the brawn, accent and mustache

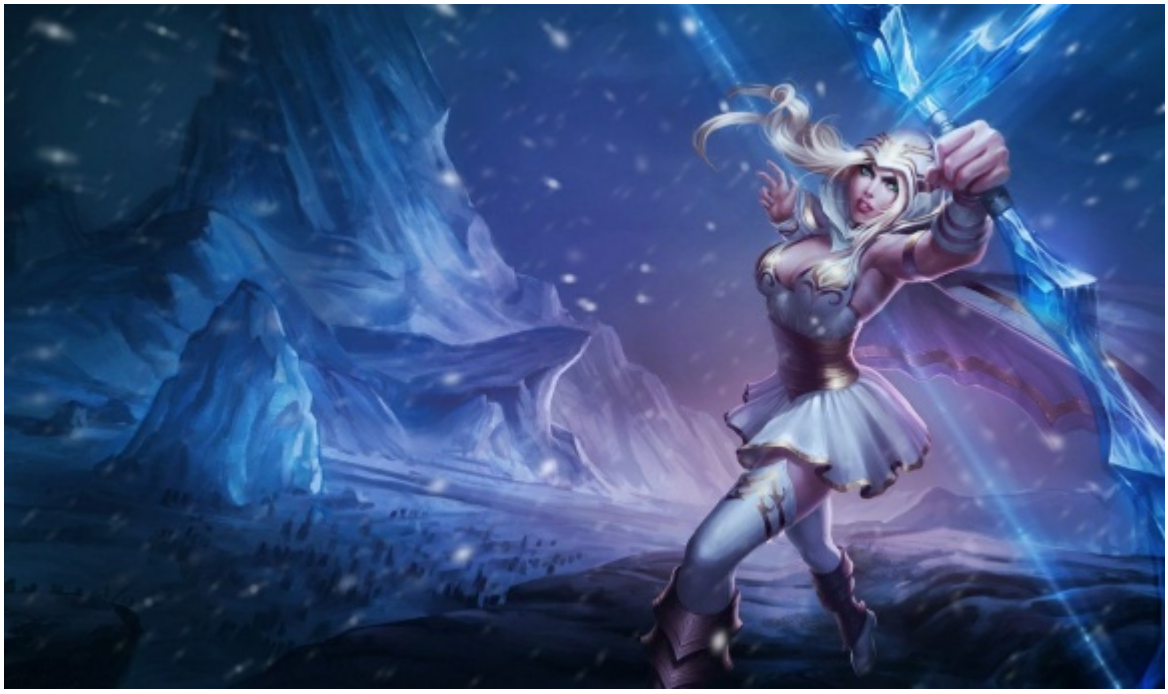
I couldn't really find any good picture for Malph so we are going to say this is him when he activates his Rock Form Ability.... i am still not sure how (Y/N) survived that one

Then we got the lovely and sexy madam Le'Blanc.... uff ulala.. *ahem* (yes she was frequent rule 34 search)



And the smart-ass Syndra even though she looks like a badass she will still fall to the floor and cry if she runs into Evellyn in a dark alley

For Ashe i was kinda disappointed i couldn't really find a good picture mostly just cosplay stuff so just imagine her without the BOW



And lets not forget the person responsible for how all of this started Jaina... i was actually having a hard time deciding if i am gonna put her or someone else... but then i remembered season 5 on Lol where she would terrorize me when ever i picked my fav Leona...

And last to make the list which i am sure you all forgot is Prof. Zilean and yes its a perfect picture for him !

Ok so that until now (i think i forgot somebody). Of course im gonna introduce more characters but i don't want to spoil anything in advance. I am either gonna put a picture when ever they show up or i am just going to do another release like this a few chapter down.

Anyway thanks for staying with me thorough this! Then next chapter is coming by he end of he night and its going to be a screamer *wink wink*

CHAPTER 14(TAKE RESPONSIBILITY and scream for me !)

Crap the letter R actually broken on my keyboard so its always coming out when ever i press it... why couldn't i brake something like X or Z ! And there is technically mature content in this chapter... in my opinion its not.. but some people may find it offensive.. you can just skip it down the line (but lets be honest you will not read this stories if you find it offensive :P)

(Y/N) POV

????: Carrots fresh carrots !

????: Oh mister you look like a man of culture look at these limited edition comics

????: Old appliances for new appliances come for this amazing deal

I was on the flea market with Kai'Sa. She said she wanted to visit it with me since the groceries we brought a couple of days ago were amazing according to her. I need to remember about that guy with the comics.

The party in my opinion was AMAZING ! Not only was Syndra cool, i was able to fix the stuff with Evellyn, and Ashe.... he he Ashe *cough cough*

It got a little dangerous when we were driving back home... i was actually extremely happy the girls were clearly jealous. Now i don't know if it was because thy were tipsy from drinking or just because they had a bad night but it felt amazing for them to react like that! Luckily it all got fixed when i pulled out the Syndra's VIP card since they all actually screamed in glee when they saw the 50% discount. No matter how much money you have everyone likes a good deal !

It was 9am on a Saturday and the market was extremely busy. Already a few times Kai'Sa actually got swamped with a crowd. The cutest thing is that she was so shy, i heard that Kai'Sa doesn't like big crowds if the rest of

girls were not present and i enjoyed that i was not the one constantly red for once.

Of course me with a smug face didn't last long since after about a 5th time of her falling back behind me she grabbed my hand and had no intention of letting go... and i again i am the most red one here !

Yorick: Ohohohoho (Y/N) is that yo...

(Y/N): Oh shut it Yorick i know, listen i need the same like last time and i am willing to pay 25 $

He just raised an eyebrow and before he could say anything Kai'Sa steeped

Kai'Sa: Ohhh! Are you the wonderful merchant who grew those apples ! You are amazing sir i never tasted anything so delicious before *innocent smile*

Wow is she shining... well it was working since Yorick just made a stupid smile and started packing everything without even talking about the price. GOOD JOB KAI'SA ! just like we practiced in the car ! Next time i am bringing both you and Ahri ! Im gona make it give away for free

TIME SKIP

I was in the kitchen making lunch while Kai'Sa went to take a shower... i have to say my macho pride was gone again. We bought two times the amount we had the last time and i had to stop every few steps to put the bags now and catch my breath. In the end Kai'Sa just picked up all the bags and carried them rest of the way without even grunting she was even giving me a smug smile that was basically rubbing the situation in my face, you could see she was enjoying it. I really need to go to the gym!

I was chopping the vegetables with a grind on my face thinking about the party again and how the girls were jealous until i noticed Ahri who just went to the fridge next to me and started rummaging through it

(Y/N): Hello Ahri

Ahri: Mhm

I saw she was pulling out some left over dinner from last night so i decided to stop her with a hand on her shoulder

(Y/N): Hey wait. Lunch is going to be in a couple of mi...

SLAP

Ahri: Don't TOUCH ME!

I was just frozen in shock as Ahri slapped my hand away from her shoulder.

Ahri: *sigh* il just eat this in my room i am busy today

.... ok she is just in a bad mod nothing strange it happens right.

A couple of minutes latter the rest of the girls showed up for lunch

Kai'Sa: Hmm where is Ahri ?

(Y/N): She said just grabbed some leftover's and went to room saying she was busy

Evellyn just made a confused look but continued eating while of course teasing me

TIMESKIP

I was in the middle of cleaning the toilet until i heard the knock on the door.

Ahri: (Y/N) can you hurry it up !

She sounded better compared to yesterday so i guess she is OK today ! I flushed and wiped everything one more time and started moving outside when i open the door i saw Ahri standing in front of me then she just looked down on me and did a *tch*

HUH ?

(Y/N): Um Ahri? Are you OK

She just narrowed her eyes and spoke in a rude tone

Ahri: Yes i am OK (Y/N)! Now if you are done with your stupid questions can you move away so that i can use the bathroom

SLAM The door slammed behind me and i was just standing there frozen in shock... every brain cell was working in my head hoping to understand what was going on while i was making my way to the living room.

(Y/N): Did i say something... or do...

Could be the way i was acting... i kinda had a big grin plastered on my face these past few days because of the party and the way the girls reacted... could it be that women can actually sense stuff like that.

The door to the bathroom opened and Ahri came back... OK lets try to fix this

(Y/N): Hey um Ahri d-d-d-do you want to go to Syndra's store tomorrow we cou...

Ahri: *tch* can you STOP with the stuttering its so annoying !!! And no i DON'T WANT to go with you tomorrow.

SLAM

She just rushed past me and slammed the door.... to tell you the truth i wanted to jump off the building at that moment

TIME SKIP

I was siting and eating breakfast with the girls... well almost all of them

Evellyn: Ahri still dosn't want to eat with us ?

Kai'Sa: No. When i went to pick her up she just refused and said she will grab something later

One of my hands was on the table supporting my head while i was eating my food slowly

Akali: um (Y/N) are you ok

(Y/N): *sigh* yea i am fine

I was depressed it was clear Ahri doesn't want to talk to me or have anything to do with me. A few more times she passed by me yesterday and she either frowned or made a growling noise... i guess i will be leaving soon. There is no way this can continue like this.... its only a matter of time before the rest of them start acting like her... crap that's what happens when you assume things.

Not to mention to rub salt on the wounds i had my weakly nightmare last night white Zilean... but to make it even worse it extended to me being on a KD/A concert where everybody was laughing at me... fuck

Akali: *ahem* Anyway want to hit the gym with us today ! I know you were asking about it. It will be good to for you !

(Y/N): Yea sure

TIME SKIP

I went to the gym with the girls that was one floor down and i have to say WOW ! the whole floor was clearly a personal gym for them with equipment raging from the basic stuff to gear that is for people with powers.

Akali: Ok (Y/N) you will do some warming up with me over there.

I followed Akali and we started doing some warm up rout-in... wow her whole body looks freaking AMAZING especially her waist... and man those abs ! Then i looked to the side and almost fell over when i saw Kai'Sa stretch in a way that i thought was impossible. It actually looked like she noticed me since she made a small grin.... did she just put a her leg behind her neck....

Evellyn also made me open my mouth when she started to bend in ways that gave made my blood boil ! And like she new that i was watching her she then suddenly just took a position that was basically making me stare directly into her ass.... ok ok baseball think about baseball !

Akali: Ok we are going to start slow and then we are going to speed up as we go

(Y/N): Ok sure

HELL ON EARTH TIMESKIP

I was laying on the floor after about 1h doing everything in my power to breath. There was a lake of sweet under me and my shirt that was originally gray was now completely black with all my bodily fluids, i lost the feeling in my arms about 30min ago

Akali: OKKKK !

I looked towards Akali and she barely had any sweet on her and even the other girls were still going full speed with Kai'Sa actually running and moving in super speed on a special treadmill and Evellyn.... holy shit she was lifting weights that said 80kg with one hand without even grunting WHAT THE FUCK ARE THESE GIRLS !

Akali: We are done with stretching so its about time we start with the real thing !

Nani?

Akali: Now its going to be a little hard but i think we can pull through

OH LIKEEEEEE HELLL WEEEE ARE !

RUNNING AWAY TIMESKIP LATER

Without any hurt to my pride i can say i ran away like a little bitch ! When Akali suddenly started pulling out weights that were in triple didgets i made and excuse that i hurt my back and ran to the elevator.

Yes definitely fuck working out they can carry the bags i don't care anymore my macho pride is no more! As i entered the living room, i decided to go to Ahris door. I was standing in front of it with my hand raised and i was ready to knock... i needed to talk with her to see what's really going on. I don't want to get fired if there was a stupid misunderstanding... if i have to il apologize.

Just as i was about to knock i actually smelled my self for the first time.... shit i stank !

(Y/N): Ok i better take a shower

As i was making my way across the living room and i put my door on the bathroom door suddenly i heard a huge crash behind me

SLAM *CRASH*

I turned my had slowly and saw Ahri standing in her underwear where he door used to be... it was now on the other side of the living room ripped off its hinges

(Y/N): A-a-a-ahri

Ahri: I told you not to stutter... its harder when you stutter it harder to control myself*breathing heavily* and that smell.... its so strong

(Y/N): Ahri... are you o...

Ahri: *huff* SHUT UP (Y/N)! This is your fault !

And then she looked at me and every fiber in my body froze in fear. This was not a human looking at another human! This was a predator looking at its prey. All of her 9 tails were out and were standing stiff, her eyes were glowing and her irises were actually narrowed

It took every bit of my strength just to not to run away in fear

(Y/N): W-w-w-hats wrong i am sure we c-can talk...

Before i could even finish she flashed blue and she crossed the room grabbing me for my neck and slamming me into the wall

(Y/N): guuuah

All breath was knocked out of me and the pain was real... i was going to die... she was going to ki...

Ahri: *sniff sniff*

Then she started to sniff me and her breathing good even more rough she even started to growl

Ahri: *sniff* This is all your fault.... it was never like this *sniff*

And then before i could even say anything or understand what was going on she just slammed hour tongue into my mouth. That lasted for about ten seconds until both of us glowed blue and i felt like i was pulled through the air and at massive speed

The next thing i knew i was laying on my bed with Ahri on top of me.

(Y/N): A-a-a-ahri what are yo...

The nails on her hands extended

slash *rip*

And in less then a second all of my clothes were ripped open, she was just siting on top of me with a feral look in her eyes and breathing heavily while licking her lips and teeth, until she finally spoke in a voice that actually made my spine shiver

Ahri: This is all your fault ! You just couldn't stay away. Take responsibility and scream for me !

TIMESKIPE

It was 5 am... about 16 hours have passed since i came back from the gym... i was laying naked in my bed looking at the ceiling while my whole body was screaming in pain.

All over my body were scratches that were mostly focused on my back and chest, one of my arms actually had a hand print bruised in from the force that i was held there while the other one had a dislocated shoulder.My legs looked like they went trough a pinata party considering how bruised and scratched they were, and my little friend down there... i was not felling him anymore when Ahri finally stooped about 15min i lost all feeling in him, every time i would go soft she would just stick her mouth and me making me drink her saliva and my little friend will be up and readdy in no time.

I read some rumors online that some vastaya have special properties and sell their saliva as aphrodisiac on the black market but i never payed to much attention ... huh i guess it was true

Then i looked at the side and saw the girl in question who did all of these thing to me. She was sleeping with a satisfied and happy expression hugging me like a body pillow, while i was using her tails as extra cushion.... i don't even want to remember what she did with those tails.

During the last 16h i even lost conciseness a few time but i would be awaken fast after Ahri would furiously scratch me with her nails or bite me on the neck because it was not fun if i was not trying to move or scream how she liked to repeat all night... yes my neck had so many puncture wounds and hickies that there was barely any clean space on it

I was carefully watching her face because a few hours ago when it looked like she stooped i tried to leave the room. I was able to get as far as a door knob until she forcefully pulled me back and started jumping on me constantly whispering to me "so you want to run away bad boy..." apparently she was enjoying that extremely since that's when the tails started to get used.

I am still not sure how i survived at some of the moments last night! I was sure i was going to die. After 15 more min of waiting when i was positively sure that she finally had enough i took my chance again to run away. At first

when i started to leave she stirred and started moving her arms looking for me... i froze in fear but luckily it was just a reaction of loosing me as a body pillow.

After that i was barely able to hold my grunts as i limped out of the room with my busted legs, luckily i had some support while holding to the wall but still even that was hard because both of my shoulders were screaming in pain.

As i finally left and closed the door behind me i fell in a siting position releasing the breath i was holding..... holy shit.... excluding the fear for my life... THAT WAS AMAZING !

Akaly: OMG (Y/N) ARE YOU OK !!!

I then saw Akali who was just standing in front of me with a extremely concerned look while holding some instant ramen

(Y/N): W....

Crap i could even speak my throat was so sore from all the bites and even my tongue felt numb from what Ahri was doing to it

Akali: What ! ?

(Y/N): Wa...ter

As soon as i said those words she ran to the kitchen and ran back with a glass of water helping me drink it.

Akali: Holy crap... look at all these wounds...

Akali then garbed my shoulder which just made me grunt in pain

Akali: Crap that's definitely dislocated... grit your teeth

pop

I wanted to scream in pain... but i was barely able to hold it in until it finally subsided. After one more glass of water i felt like i was finally able to speak

(Y/N): Why... are you awake ...

Akali then just scratched the side of her face

Akali: Well when we came back from the gym we saw the broken door.... and then we heard the screams and moans from your room...

I just raised my eyebrow

(Y/N): And you didn't think... to help

I felt like a very very low whisper in the back of my head was saying "good thing they didn't"... i think im sick but man... that was....

Akali just got red and started wawing her hands

Akali: We did ! We knew Ahri was in heat and we figured she finally lost control... me and Evellyn actually came to your room and opened the door

Then she just looked away

Akali: *gulp* The look she gave us frozen in place especially when she screamed "COME! I DARE YOU TO TRY TO TAKE HIM FROM ME "... she was actually hissing !

Oh i remember hearing that but i couldn't see anything because my head was being smothered by her chest...

Akali: So we just decided to keep watching in turns in front of you door in case you actually got away somehow... Evellyn told me she thought that the she saw the knob starting to open but then she just heard a scream and Ahri laughing again ...

Yea that's about the time i tried to ran away

A weak voice in the back of my head again " good thing you didn't" ..... man

Akali: When i came to replace Kai'Sa she was basically with ears on the door because according to her you got quit a few times for about 5 min a few time. But she didn't go in because you wold start moaning and screaming again

And that's about the time i lost conciseness a few times

Akali: (Y/N) we are so sorry we knew she was in heat... but it was never this bad

(Y/N): Uhu...

I cant feel anything waist down

Akali: She usually just stay in her room for those three days... i guess this time she just lost control. We should have listened to Evellyn and made you stay in a hotel or something

(Y/N): U yea sure...

Akali: Next time we will do it like that!

(Y/N): Yea su.... next time ?

Akali: Um yea it happens twice a year every six months and it last about thre... (Y/N)... why are you smiling ?

Oh am i smiling... i guess i am smiling hehehe... crap who turned of the light

Akali: OY (Y/N) open you eyes... HEY STAY WITH ME

And i just fell asleep finally

By my standards this is not enough to be called Lemon... but i guess some people may find it.. anyway enjoy this chapter and onward to the

next on i think il try to write one more before bed im actually not that sleepy tonight

CHAPTER 15(ABUSED HOUSEWIFE)

OK time for a nice relaxing chapter.... yea no

(Y/N) POV

I woke up after sleep for about 24h after my ordeal with Ahri... he he *cough*

I actually even woke up yesterday once in the afternoon in what i presumed was Akali's room since it was full of graphite and ninja posters, but my body was so sore i just decided to turn around and go back to sleep. Now after 24h i could actually move my body without grunting and the feeling to my little friends was back... THANK GOD ! I was actually scared there for a moment

When i entered the living room i saw it was 4am and it was completely empty. I then noticed that Ahris room had the door back on and my room's door was open. When i peaked inside it was cleaned up compared to the mess yesterday morning but the smell of sex was still extremely strong. I guess that's why it's still open to air out a little.

Akali is also probably sleeping with one of the girls since i was still in her bed today. My stomach started to growl like crazy and i a very long time i actually decided to eat something before my usual coffee and cigarette... holy i was hungry. After doing my usual routine of relaxing on the balcony after breakfast i went to the shower since i noticed it was not only the room that was smelling of sex.

We had a huge triple mirror in our bathroom and i gave myself a once over... wow...

My whole body was in day old scars and bruises. The scars were already diapering since they were extremely shallow like when you cut your finger on a paper... but the bruises will take time... especially my neck... fuck it was a disaster.

The cold shower felt amazing and while was letting the water fall over me i remembered the night with Ahri... "YOU RAAAAAAANG" no no DOWN..... you had enough my little friend.

It was 6:30am by the time i did everything and while i was thinking of making breakfast for the girls but i noticed that i was out of cigarettes... and i still didn't know how to deal with Ahri when i see her so..

(Y/N): Hmm maybe i should take a walk.. it will also be nice to find that guy with the comics on the Flea-Market.

So i just wrote a note saying "Going out, il be back soon" don't want any confusion like last time. As i was about to leave i saw my neck again in the mirror and it looked bad... good thing it was cold today so i had a excuse to put a scarf. After a little bit of rummaging i found a scarf that looked that it could fit both men and wommen

TIMESKIP

I decided to walk to the Flea-Market since it was early and in about a hour n half i was on the entrance

????: Cabbages fresh cabbages !

????: Exotic spices ! We got everything from Russia to Ionia !

????: Hey mister you look like a man of culture, how about some adult magazines...

If this was a day before my adventure with Ahri i would have taken him on the opportunity right away... but after that night this was the thing i needed i guess the comic guy is not here today... *sigh* and how the hell will i deal with Ahri later

I guess il just walk around maybe il find something interesting and pick something up, no point in wasting all this time coming here. Guess i can grab some cherry's first and make some pancakes tomorrow

After about 5 min of walking

Yorick: Oh where are your girlfriends ?

(Y/N): You sound extremely disappointed.... what happened to your favorite customer being me

Yorick: *hahaha* Sorry boy but when you bring some candy to my eyes.... oy (Y/N) you ok ?

He then made a serious face and i noticed he was looking towards my neck... crap i the scarf actually fell of a little i guess he saw the wounds... could they look much worse then i think they do

(Y/N): Yea Yorick no worries i had a accident, forget about it

Yorick: Hmmmm if you say so

I was actually a little happy the old man was getting concern for me, but there was really no need to be worried... i cant really tell him i enjoyed the reason i got these scars... he he ... no (Y/N) back to reality

(Y/N): Anyway i need about 2kg of cherries and 1kg of bluebe....

????: ARE YOU KIDDING ME!!!!!! TODAY !!!!!! ARE YOU FUCKING KIDDING ME !!!!!!!!

There was a beautiful blonde lady standing on the stall next to me she was screaming on the phone in rage. Me and everybody who was in a earshot just suddenly stomped and were looking her way

????: WHAT DO YOU MEAN YOUR SORRY !!!! DO YOU HAVE ANY IDEA HOW BUSY WE ARE TODAY!!!!..... I KNOW ITS YOUR CHILD BUT TODAY!!!! JUST MAKE YOUR WIFE HAVE YOUR CHILD TOMORROW! IT'S NOT LIKE ITS GOING TO GO ANYWHERE !!!!!! HEY!!! he just hang up....

HOLY SHIT!!!... did she just tell the guy on the phone to make his wife have her baby tomorrow... ok lets just grab my stuff and run away this lady is clearly crazy and...

Yorick: Oy Kayle! What happened?

Seriosly Yorick ! Why are you drawing attention to us

Kayle: *sigh* our assistant chef just called in and said he cant make it to work today... and we are full today !

Yorick: Ummm aren't you full like every day ?

Kayle: That's not the point !

Well this lady is crazy i just better grab my stuff and...

Yorick: Hey (Y/N)

OH FFS

Yorick: Didn't you tell me you like to cook. And i remember your pretty girlfriend mentioning how she loves your cooking

The blonde lady Kayla just suddenly looked my way like she finally noticed me

Kayle: You can cook !????

(Y/N): Ummm it's j-j-just...

Kayle: SPEAK UP MAN!

(Y/N): YES MAM! It's just home cooking nothing special

She then just made a huge smile and grabbed my hand and started pulling me

Kayla: PERFECT! YOUR HIRED !

(Y/N): Sorry WHAT !?

Kayle: Ok first we need about 40k of potato and then about 56 of onion

(Y/N): Wait wait i already have a jo...

Kayla: And then i should get some flower as well about 80kg

(Y/N): LISTEN TO ME !!!!!!!!!

TIMESKIP

I was standing in awe. In front of me was one of the biggest and fanciest restaurants i have ever seen. And ofc i knew the name of this one. It was on the 1 place's place to eat in the world one of the worlds wonders called 'Law&Chaos'

I heard the reservations for this place need to be made 2 years in advance. And there was even that one time when the president was refused entry because he just showed up... it was a big chaos on the internet for it. The place that makes ZoeyLand look like a simple backstreet park... and i was standing in side of it

(Y/N): You work here....

Kayle: What ? I don't work here i own it with my sister

(Y/N): Wait wut !? Seriously?

She then just chuckled but got her serious face on when about 20 people ran out to the van and she order them to take all the groceries inside

Then she motioned me inside and took me directly to the kitchen... and i have to say it was amazing... our penthouse was huge and this kitchen was about 2xtimes that.

Kayle: OYYY Morgana ! We have a problem

Suddenly a woman who looked similar to Kayle showed up. While Kayle was full of color and blonde with light makeup Morgana was here complete opposite with dark hair a pale skin bordering on the color of gray and dark complexion

Morgana: What wrong ?

Kayle: That idiot of assistant chef of yours cant come... apparently his wife is "having a baby"

OK seriously woman what did you expect ! And why are you saying it in such a snide voice... oh god if her sister is like this

Morgana: Kayle! Don't be like that! A baby's birth is precious !

Oh... shes an angel! I suddenly feel better. Morgana then noticed me and smiled my way

Morgana : And who is this ?

Kayle: That's (Y/N) he will be your assistant today!

(Y/N): *ahem* umm its a pleasure but i am not that experienced...

Kayle: Nonsense Yorick said you know and that good enough for me

Morgana then just perked up

Morgana: Ohhh if you Yorick says that then for sure you have some skills....

Ok this is getting out of hand... Yorick never even tried my cooking.... sight

Morgana: Please just for today! We will get a replacement for tomorrow but i really need assistance for today its not complicated i promise *smiles*

Oh GOD those puppy dog eyes.... FML

(Y/N): Fine... but please don't expect to much

TIMESKIP

The good part of the day Morgana spent teaching me some of the menu stuff and trying to explain what exactly i would be doing. It was nothing complicated really cutting here and there with a little frying and basically

just assisting with what ever she needed. At about 17:50 that was 10min to opening time i walked back into the kitchen with the uniform they provided me

As i entered i noticed some of the staff was looking my way and even Morgana was staring and then i remembered that i didn't have my scarf on and the sleeves of the jacket were pulled up above my elbows showing full bruising on my arms as well my neck... crap how am i gonna deal with Ahri

Morgana: (Y/N)... are you ok ?

Ah she was looking at Ahris handy work with concern

(Y/N): Yes no worries Morgana don't think about it i am good

Ohhh i am better then good he-he-he... NO (Y/N) SNAP OUT OF IT !!!

Then before she could say anything i heard Kayle yell

Kayle: Ok people its SHOW TIME ! WE OPEN IN 10 sec

And then just as Kayle gave the announcement, Morgana changed... completely

Her skin went paler, dark demonic wings grew out of her back and her eyes were shining with a purple menacing light

Morgana: OK YOU PIECES OF SHIT MOVE!!!!!!!! WE ARE GOING TO MAKE IT PERFECT TONIGHT SO SHUT UP AND KEEP THOSE HANDS MOVING !!!!!!! I DIDN'T HEAR YOU MAGGOTS !!!

Cooking staff: YES CHEF !!!!!

Morgana: YES CHEF WHAT !!!!!

Cooking staff: YES CHEF! WE ARE PIECES OF SHIT !!!!

....

.....

.....

WHAT THE FUCK

Morgana : (Y/N)!

(Y/N): YES CHEF!!!!

Morgana: YES CHEF WHAT!

(Y/N): YES CHEF I AM A PIECE OF SHIT!!!

Morgana: WHY THE FUCK ARE YOU STANDING THERE THEN YOU SORRY EXCUSE OF A PIECE OF SHIT MOVE!!!! GET THOSE POTS HEATED UP

(Y/N): YEESSSS CHEF!!!!!!

sob *sob* i want to go home

DURING MILITARY DRILL-HELL ON EARTH PIECE OF SHIT TIMESKIP LATER

MUNDO POV:

Mundo was happy. He was eating in Law&Chaos a place MUNDO made reservations 19 months ago.. And the food was amazing

Not only was the waiter staff extremely professional the food that was coming was beyond divine.. Mundo would sell his soul to came eat here every day. Mundo is happy

As Mundo was preparing to leave since its 5min until closing time Mundo saw something strange. Mundo thought he saw (Y/N) ruining from the kitchen and towards the restaurant owner which was also the lead hostess Kayle... Nah Mundo's eyes may be wrong. Mundo is sure (Y/N) still working for his KD/A ladies..

Then Mundo again saw somebody who looks like (Y/N) running back to the kitchen opened the door and went inside then Mundo heard

????: (Y/N) YOU PIECE OF SHIT IT TOOK YOU 2,4 SECONDS LONGER THEN NECESSARY! GO PEAL THE POTATOES YOU SORRY EXCUSE OF A PIECE OF SHIT !!!!

(Y/N): YES CHEF!! I AM A PIECE OF SHIT !!!

.... ok Mundo is sure that is (Y/N)'s voice... but Mundo is confused again... (Y/N) tends to make Mundo confused so he took out his phone and called one of the girls

Evellyn: *Yes Mundo what do you want ?*

Oh she sounds mad...

Mundo: Um Mundo thought he saw (Y/N) so Mundo wants t...

Evellyn: *WHERE?*

Mundo is sorry (Y/N)... Mundo hopes he doesn't need to call somebody tonight for you

Evellyn: **growling* Mundo *quiet voice* you have 3 seconds*

Mundo: Um (Y/N) is on the near of Infinity Street and Frozen hall

At last Mundo only going to give a vague instructions... Mundo hopes you can runaways before Evellyn comes... Mundo is sorry (Y/N)

AFTER MILITARY DRILL-HELL ON EARTH PIECE OF SHIT TIMESKIP LATER

Finally it was finally 00:01 which meant we were closed... holy crap this was almost exhausting as the night with Ahri... he he he.. NO (Y/N)

As soon as it passed midnight Morgana returned to her sweet self... I am going to have nightmares after today

Morgana: (Y/N)

(Y/N): YES CHEF I AM A PIE.... *ahem* sorry

She just chuckled... dammit woman your crazy

Then Kayle walked in and moved to me

Kayle: Hey (Y/N) thanks so much for today

I was also looking at her skeptically because when i went outside to tell her Morgana's info she was sweet and nice like a Angel... these sisters are fucked up in the head

Morgana: Anyway we defiantly owe you !

Kayle: Yes and here is you pay for today.

Hmm its a good amount of money... but maybe i can get something better money is not really a problem with the girls

(Y/N): Actually i don't need the money i was actually wondering if i can ask for a favor

Kayle&Morgana: Hmm

(Y/N): There are a few people i would like to bring for dinner but i know your reservations are impossible... sooooo

Kayle just made a frown and pissed of face but Morgana hit her with her elbow on the side and then she just sighted

Kayle: At least give me a heads up as late as noon ok

(Y/N): AWESOME ! Thanks

Kayle: Oh and don't you ever dare tell anybody i did this... that annoying president is still giving us the hard time for refusing him !

Morgana: And if you ever need a job give us a call !

Yeaa... NEVER, NOT GONNA HAPPEN!

After about 10min i left and was making my way towards the penthouse i was already about 2 streets away when i heard my name

Morgana: (Y/N) you forgot your scarf

Ahhh.. Morgana ran to me and while she was giving me the scarf she looked toward my neck again

Morgana: Listen (Y/N) if you are in trouble me and Kayle can help

(Y/N): Ah no no don....

screeeetch

Suddenly a car did a full drift stop in front of us with the light basically shining on the both... the car was extremely fancy with darked out windows... and i had the feeling i knew who was in it. When i noticed the name on the plate was "D1VA" i was sure then who it was.... FML

Then the door opened and Evellyn walked out.... holy shit i haven't seen her pissed like this ever since that morning after the 'Dirty Mug' but i left the message why is she.... then i remembered what time it is.... oh brother

Evellyn was looking at me and then at Morgana who i have to say just frowned and stood her ground... oh wow usually people start running in fear but she was holding out ! Not bad chef not bad at all.

Then Evellyn's eyes widened a little... i noticed that she was looking towards my hand which was picking up the scarf... which also looked like we were holding both of our hands together... oh is she jealous ! yaay... NO! BAD (Y/N) you could die.... ok seriously i need to think about my current

living situation this is the 5 time i am in a life and death situation in these past few days!

Then Evellyn just spoke in a seductively mocking voice

Evellyn: Oh darling! Am i interrupting you and your "friend" here

The word friend was said in a extremely mocking voice actually... this is not gonna end good. How the hell did i suddenly after 27 years of my life started to constantly find my self in these kind of situations !

Morgana apparently didn't like her tone and just turned to Evelyn while crossing her arms

Morgana: Yes you are. And who might you be ?

Did those shadows just move... and why is the lamp suddenly flickering

Evellyn: I have no reason to answer that

Then she walked towards me and grabbed my hand

Evellyn: Lets go home darling

Before she could pull me away Morgana grabbed my other

Morgana: I think (Y/N) can decide by himself

NANI ?

Evellyn: And who are you to decide what darling wants ?

She was hissing

Morgana: (Y/N) you don't have to go with her ! We can help you

NANIx2?

Evellyn: I don't think darling needs your help. He is happy with us !

Holy crap they are pulling on both of my sides

Morgana: I don't think he is. I can see the bruises

Wait it cant be

Evellyn: Those bruises were done out of passion !

Morgana: Call you what you want but we know what it is

... AM I A FUCKING ABUSED HOUSEWIFE SUDDENLY !?

And why the fuck do i want to smile!!! I need to go visit my psychiatrist this is getting out of hand.

And then Morgana tried to pull me but Evellyn had a death grip on me, and during the process i just heard a

POP

Morgana: Huh?

Evellyn: Darling ?

Ahhh my shoulder got dislocated again

(Y/N): AAAAaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa

TIMESKIP

We were in the Elevator that was going up to the penthouse. After my shoulder poped Morgana and Evellyn finally let me go. And by luck i was able to explain somehow to Morgana without giving her to much detail that i am not a abused housewife.... She was still skeptical and Evellyn still had a evil frown on her face. But when i told Morgana finally that i want to go

with Evellyn she stooped pestering, even Evellyn had a small smile after those words. Crap my shoulder still hurts !

As the elevator opened and i walked out of it with Evellyn i looked upon the scene of the rest of the girls siting and waiting there. Ok ok lets play it cool !

(Y/N): Hey guys you still up ? It's pretty lat....

Before i could finish i was basically knocked down by a super-speed Kai'Sa who just hugged me and was not letting go

(Y/N): umm Kai'sa...

Kai'Sa: *whispers* Idiot we thought you left

(Y/N): Kai'Sa

Kai'Sa: *whisper* don't you ever leave for a whole day like that again without calling !

(Y/N): KAI'SA !

Kai'Sa: Huh?

(Y/N): My shoulder is fucked up and your hurting me

Then she finaly noticed my face and let me go while helping me get up

Then Akali came to me looked down upon my shoulder and suddenly ... and very roughly poped it back in place

pop

(Y/N): Aaaaaaaaa.....

Akali: Next time you pull a stun like this im going to leave it fucked up for three days use your fuckin phone

Crap! shit that hurt... but man why am i smiling so much... i really have a problem.. hehe

Then the two girls left and when i looked behind me even Evellyn was gone. I then noticed that i was alone in a room with Ahri who was just standing in front of the couch looking down. Her fox ears looked like somebody just pressed them to the droop of her head and even her tail was not moving...

OK... what do i say here... shit i have no experience with stuff like i maybe had one girlfriend before all of this and that ended a disaster that give m nightmares.

(Y/N): *ahem* Ahri

Her ears actually twitched a little when i called her... OMG SO CUTE!!!!!!!!!!!!

(Y/N): *sigh*

OK... fuck it noting ventured nothing gained she already basically did everything she could to me. So i just got close and stood in front of her on.

She didn't need to raise her head much to look upon me since she was already taller. Its like she was giving me a once over and her ears twitched a little when she was looking at my arms and then her eyes went completely wide one she saw my neck

Ahri: Oh, (Y/N) i am so sory...

She started to extend her arm towards my neck but as soon as she was about 2cm away from it she stooped and pulled back with a terrified expression... i guess she was afraid that i would wince or slap it away..

Ahri: I know you are mad... but ple...

(Y/N): Yea i am mad

She just shudder at those words. But i continued i really hope this works common bullshit don't fail me now

(Y/N): I am mad on how you treated me and ignored me

Ahri: Huh?

(Y/N): Do you have any idea how hurt i was ! When you slapped my hand away i felt like i had a plague. Then when i tried to see how you were you called me stupid and after that when i started stuttering because i was having a panic attack when i thought i did something wrong you *tch* at me... seriously i was sure i fucked something up that you were gonna kick me out

She actually had a very confused look on her face and was looking down at me like i am crazy

Ahri: Ummm but what about me basically rap...

(Y/N): Ohhh that *grin* i actually loved that part ! Truth be told i was scared a few times on how violent you were but man... if i could do it again he-he.... WAIT I MEAN NO!!! d-d-d-d-d-dont pay attention to what i just said !

OH SHIT!!!! I just started talking how i really felt about that!!!! Oh crap i am definitely going to get kicked out no... And then without warning Ahri had a huge smile on her face and all our tails suddenly showed up, before i could even blink she jumped on top of me knocked me down on the couch and in less then a second i was lying down on the couch with Ahri on top and her arms and legs intervened with mine

(Y/N): A-a-ahri ?

Ahri: I am so sorry MY dear (Y/N)

YOURS?!

Ahri: But i just couldn't control myself during my heat period and had to say those things to keep you away !

Even the tails started wrapping all over me

Ahri: When you tried to touch me i almost lost my control and when you were stuttering so cutely it was like you were dangling a piece of meat in front of wolves

Baseball ! Grandma ! Sad Kittens ! Gremlins ! dang it man keep it together don't you dare wake up down there

Ahri: Ah i actually hurt you on you neck so much *lick* *lick* *lick*

And then she started to lick my neck all over... and no amount of Baseball playing Grandma did help in stooping me down there " YOU RAAAAANG ?"

Ahri: Oh... something is poking me !

And then she just looked at my eyes and made one of those mischievous smiles... damn that smile

Ahri: How about i show you just how gentle i can be?

Oh....oooohhhh... YAY !

I really don't know whats wrong with my internet tonight about 2 times i had to rewrite the last half because of the loss of connection and 1 time all the spelling check and fixes i did were never applied... so if you guys see some stupid mistakes just know that i am sorry and feel free to point them out

CHAPTER 16 (Let mama polish your sword)

OK i finally calmed down after a long night off sleep and some Yakuza 0 in the morning. Last night not only was it annoying since R is still broken on my keyboard, my internet decided to have a stroke and my work didn't save about 3 times can you imagine spell checking and tweaking 4000 words for it to refresh at the very end and fuck everything up. So instead of finishing the chapter by midnight i was done at 2am.... Lets see how it goes today!

(Y/N) POV:

So how exactly then did i find myself in this situation again ....

Kai'Sa: As i grinned i said "Well well aren't you a cute little half-breed!"

(Y/N): *cough* i-i-i made a nervous s-s-s-sound and said "Ummm miss can i help you! W-w-w-would you like a room..."

Kai'Sa: i liked my lips and "Shhhhh ! Your mouth can be used for better thing's then talking"

Wait! Why did she really lick her lips !?

OH GOD! I CREATED A MONSTER !!!!

FLASHBACK

(Y/N): *yawn* mmm something smells nice

I opened my eyes and the first thing i noticed is that i was not on my room and in my bed. I was laying down on the living room couch with pressure on me

AhrI: *soft breathing*

And then looked to the side and saw Ahri's which was breathing softly in my ear. She was currently on top of me hugging me with both her hands and legs while her tails covered us like blankets.

(Y/N): Ohhh yeaaaa... *grins* it was fun tonight

Last night after dealing with Ahri she decided to apologize by showing me just how gentle she can be... which i have to say... (Y/N) LIKE !

As i was grinning like a little kid in a candy store i suddenly felt a chill go down my spine... the source was coming from behind me.... I was able to move my head to the back and the image i saw removed my smile right away

Kai'Sa: I am glad you had f-u-n

Kai was standing behind looking down upon me and Ahri with a smile on her face... that smile made any possibility of my morning wood just go away...

(Y/N): Ummm Kai'Sa

Kai'Sa: Hmmm

(Y/N):*gulp* what is t-t-t-that knife f-f-f-for ?

Kai'Sa: *smiles even more*

(Y/N): Umm K-k-k-kai'S-a-a ?

Kai'Sa: Breakfast is ready

She was still not moving

TIMESKIP

We were siting at the kitchen table finishing breakfast, I was in mu usual spot between Ahri and Evellyn and was redder then the tomatoes on my plate. Kai'Sa stood for about 10 more min this morning looking down upon me with a knife in her hand until i heard the doors open and Akali and Evellyn entered the room... when they saw us they both just froze and were looking at me and Ahri with frozen shock...

The thing that definitely did not help was when Ahri finally woke up she just looked around said "G-morning" like it was the most normal thing to do gave me a kiss. She then just stood up and left for the bathroom leaving me but naked on the couch with my little friend on full display.

That made Kai'Sa just do a *humph* and she finally left my presence. That at all didn't make me feel better since i got a panic attack for being naked and while running to my room trying to cover my front with a pillow Akali whistled like a construction worker and Evellyn even freaking pinched my ass which made me yelp like a high school girl.... i could hear the two of them laughing for about 15min non stop.

I thought that thing will get better during breakfast, but man... was i wrong. Kai'Sa was still looking at me with this cold dead expression that was sending shivers to my spine. Man its always the quiet ones

During that time Akali was constantly looking towards me with a smug look and even drooped her fork on purpose a few times. Every time she would bend under the table she would make a soft whistle while looking towards my crotch .

Ahri was acting like a innocent child of course and even pushed her fork inside of my mouth a few times while saying "tasty right". It was of course always followed with a mischievous smile and purr.... Don't get me wrong i liked it... but it was not helping with the color in my face.

The strangest one was Evellyn she didn't say anything really but she was siting so close to me that if she was actually siting in my lap the difference would be small. Every time either me or her moved their hands they would touch and her legs were not any better. Not to mention she was always going for the salt that she pets returning to the other side of the table and

every time she would basically put her cleavage in my face.... stile not complaining actually

Akali: So Ahri when do you want to leave ?

Ahri: Hmm in about 20min i still need to take a shower

Akali: Ohhh i bet you do *grin*

Oh god... my face is going to become permanently red if this continues like this

Evellyn: I can give you girls a lift since i also have business in the city

Ahri: Oh perfect !

Wait... one...two...three.... i then looked towards Kai'Sa who just made a deadpan-face

Kai'Sa: I have no plans

Crap she probably thought i was hoping that she would leave as well.... how do i keep getting myself in these situations

TIMESKIP

I was sitting on the balcony having a smoke when my phone rang with a number i didn't recognize

**I tried so hard and got so far*
*But in the end it doesn't even matter ..... **

(Y/N): Hello who is this ?

Braum: *Hey (Y/N) its Braum i got your number from Yasuo!*

I had a small smile on my face, even over the phone he still sounded like a bear with a accent

(Y/N): Hey man ! How's it going ?

Braum: *Hahaha good good listen do you have any plans today ?*

(Y/N): Umm not really, i was planing to maybe to go buy the missing parts for my PC.. why ?

Braum: *Listen i just talked to a few friends of mine and we were planing to go to the 'Dirty Mug' for a DnD session and wee need a DM !*

I just made a huge smile... finally something i am good at !!!!

(Y/N): Sure man i would LOVE TO!

Braum: *Awesome brother see you at 10:30am sooo uumm in about 1 hour, K ?*

(Y/N): Yea see ya !

I drooped the call and had a huge grin on my face, already i was checking my cloud account for a few story sessions i had on it until i just heard a voice

Kai'Sa: Are you going somewhere ?

I turned around and i saw Kai'Sa entering with two cups of soda

(Y/N): Umm yea Braum called me. He wants me to join him and a few guys for a DnD session... il be back by the afternoon i think

Kai'Sa: Ah i see... ok

She actually had a very disappointment face and was looking down to the floor.

(Y/N): Um Kai'Sa... would you like to come with me ?

Shen then just made a huge happy smile

Kai'Sa: I would love to !

TIMESKIP

As we entered the dirty mug i felt good. This bar was awesome from the music to the atmosphere and to the sound of dice and card shuffling that could be heard from the tables all around us. Unlike the evening where it posed as a drinking tavern the day functioned like a gaming center

????1: Oh look its (Y/N), what up man !

????2: Hey broo good to see you ! You going to sing tonight !?

????3: Hey he came with his princess ! All hail Princes Kai'Sa !!!

Allot of the people i saw i recognized right away from that night and a good number of them recognized me as well, that's what happens when you go to a ear by ear bar. Not to mention i was grinning when they started to yell princes Kai'Sa and bow to her. She was extremely red and was doing her best not to run away.... ah crap i really need to apologize again.... nah i am loving thins!

Braum: Oh you are here ! Over here (Y/N) !!!!

And of course Braum was the loudest. Hahah freaking bear

As we made our way to the table i saw Braum with 3 of his friends... wait is that Garen !

Garen: *grin* Hey pipsqueak long time no see !

I just narrowed my eyes and made a similarly evil grin

(Y/N): Well well if it isn't Garen the bush master... or was it the hedge trimmer. You finally stop playing with yourself in bushes during Larping ?

Garen: You finally allowed to enter the big boy rides in ZoeyLand ? Or you still banned because of the height restriction ?

After about 10 sec of glaring we started laughing and did a hand-shake

Garen: Good to see you (Y/N)

(Y/N): Same man... sorry for not coming to the last few Larp's...

Garen; Yea bro man its all good. I understand you situation

The two random guys then introduced them self's as Kenny and Jimy... nothing really special about them just random nerd duds. And then it finally came my turn on to show Kai'Sa

(Y/N): Anyway Bram you already know her but this i...

Garen: HOLY SHIT ! YOU KAI'SA!!!!!!!!!!

Garen just yelled in full voice while jumping and almost knocking over all their drink's

Kai'Sa: Ummm yes, hello !

Garen: OMG I AM SUCH A HUGE FAN!!!!! CAN I GET A AUTOGRAPH

Kenny & Jimy: CAN WE SHAKE YOUR HAND !!!!!!!

Kai'Sa just went full professional mode gave them a big smile and took their hands

(Y/N): *sigh* Anyway she is a newcomer so go easy on her today and...

Garen: How the hell do you know somebody as Kai'Sa !!!

Oh good Braum didn't tell them anything... it will be very hard to explain and i had no intention of of this getting out of hand i know how Garen can be... a loudmouth like Yas and Ekko

(Y/N): Oh there were some circum...

Kai'Sa: We live together

I just looked at Kai'Sa with a open mouth... why the hell did she say this with such a serious face like it was a no brainier

Kenny&Jimy: Huh, um like in the same street or..

Kai'Sa: No. In the same penthouse and everything

Your not HELPING !.... oh god this is going to be a long day i just looked at Braum and he had the audacity to go through his phone like he was busy... TRAITOR !

Garen,Kenny,Jimy: EXPLAIN YOURSELF (Y/N) !

Motherfucke....

TIMESKIPE

In the end i was able to explain in the least possible detail that it was just a job as a housekeeper and they let go. Kenny & Jimy wanted to ask more questions but i found it extremely annoying and lucky Garen stoped them... he knew me for some time and he probably noticed i was losing my cool.

(Y/N): Well anyway the story is just gonna be a simple fantasy with your main objective being a delivery of letter... hmm for you Kai'Sa i think the best start would be a plain Warrior. Just until you get how thing are going.

Then Garen drooped in

Garen: Also when you speak try to think like that character. If you are going to play a warrior its best to be aggressive and proud instead of timid or smart. Try to adjust it towards your stats and alignment Kai'Sa just nodded while she was rolling stats for her character. Luckily she was a very smart girl and she was picking up everything extremely fast.

Kai'Sa: Umm what should i pick for race ?

Garen: Well a dwarf would be a good option fo....

Kenny: Common man you cant make a goddess like her a dwarf !!!

Jim: Yea brooo she needs to be an Elf or Assimar !

God... these two were annoying... it was clear they were one of those types. And they were pissing me off the way they were looking at her ! Luckily Braum steeped in

Braum: Nah just take a Half-Orc it will be perfect .

(Y/N): Also imagine yourself, imagine how you would look and when you talk or do as stuff as your character try to add life to it something. I will give you situations and yo will react to it.. hm lt me give yo an example Garen join me.

I then cleared my throat and started speaking in my DM voice

(Y/N): As you were walking down the street you suddenly heard *pssss hey come here* it was cloaked figure beckoning you to him

Garen: I suddenly stooped and looked towards the figure. Can i roll for sense motive or inspect ?

(Y/N): Go for inspect

Garen then rolled his d20 and it ended up on 17

(Y/N): While inspecting a clearly shady person you noticed a something moving under his cloak.

Garen: Hmm i frowned and put one hand on my sword while speaking in a commanding voice " No thank you good sir i am happy standing where everyone can see me"

I then noticed that Kai'Sa was looking towards me with a look of wonder and glee... crap she is making me red... don't stare at me like that

Kai'Sa: Wow ... (Y/N) your amazing !

And i am full on red now

(Y/N): *cough* its nothing special i have ex...

????: Hey all are you ready to order now ?

I looked to my left and saw the lovely BustyWaitress from the previous night

BustyWaitress: Ohhh hey there glad to see your back *smiles*

WOW that chest.... i would love to just put my face there and go.... i just got a huge shiver through my spine.... it was coming from Kai'Sa direction

(Y/N): *cough* *blush* umm just a soda please.. i don't want to dri...

Kai'Sa: One Chain-Lighting for me

I just snapped my head toward Kai'Sa in shock... i know Braum explained her the drinks and Chain-Lighting was one of the hardest and strongest one's! And not mention she was glaring daggers at the BustyWaitress who just keep a nervous smile.

TIMESKIP

It was 17pm and were ending out session, Kai'Sa was very good considering it was her first time and in the end she decided to go with a tall muscular Orc woman. She was also pretty much tipsy in the end bordering with drunk... dammit woman how many chain-lighting's did you have! Its scary how much you can drink and still sit up straight

Garen was pretty cool during the day helping Braum explain Kai'Sa some rules... but Kenny & Jimy were just pissing me off. Constantly playing the white knight and always trying to ask some private questions. At one moment i got extremely pissed and even almost killed them in game.

At one moment when i went out the bathroom Garen followed me and apologized for them. I know it was not his fault that his friends were dicks.... man why am i getting so angry i have Ahri.

As we were about to finish with them entering the inn

(Y/N): You enter the road side inn and a young Half-Elf boy greeted you

As Braum was about to speak Kai'Sa just suddenly leaned over the table and brought her face inches away from mine

END OF FLASHBACK

(Y/N): Ummm *gulp* t-t-the boy was clearly n-n-nervous " Miss i d-d-dont understand what you.."

Kai'Sa: I put my finger on the boys mouth " Shhhhh"

WHY THE HELL DID YOU PUT YOUR FINGER ON MY MOUTH JUST NOW !!!!!!!!!! Stop doing stuff that you are doing as your in game character !

Kai'Sa: You know i polish my own pole-arm. Se let mama polish your sword.

HOLY SHIT! *YOU RAAAAAAAAAAAAAAANG*

NO I DID NOT! My little friend was going crazy under the table while Kai'Sa was basically purring in my face and looking into my eyes! She was so close that you could barely fit a finger betwen us and i could feel her breath that had the smell of the multiple drink she had.

When i moved my eyes to to the side i saw that the guys were looking towards us with open mouths and wide eyes.... i actually wanted to smile when i saw the faces that Kenny&Jimmy were making

TIMESKIP

As we entered the penthouse i was doing everything i can just not to fall into the couch. We were finally able to finish somehow when Braum just intercepted in the role play. Kai'Sa actually had a very pissed off look and i think i even heard *Next time you will lose your job if you do this*... wow it cant be right... i mean its Kai'Sa

When we said our goodbyes and made a promise to meet up again for another one... i hope those two don't come... i wanted to grab a taxi but Kai'Sa was insisting she could drive... she could not! We crashed almost 3 times until i begged her to go extremely slow... i don't like driving especially when somebody is drunk i have very bad experience...

Kai'Sa just stretched while we were removing our stuff

Kai'Sa: Mmmm that was so fun ! I am so happy you took me with you cant wait for the next time

(Y/N): Ummm sure i am glad... but maybe next time don't drink so much... ok

She then just looked towards my way and the came and actually stood in front of me in full height... i have to say i was a little intimidated Kai'Sa was the tallest one of them all

Kai'Sa: Ohhhhh reallly ? But i thought you were happy that the waitress was coming our table so many timeeeees

... oh shit... no don't smile, don't smile...

(Y/N): Umm Kai'Sa its not like that

Kai'Sa: I am better then her!

(Y/N): Sorry ?

And before i could even understand what she meant she just grabbed me and slammed her tongue into my mouth...

I was shocked and frozen at what was going on, until i finally got the strength and courage to separate myself from her

(Y/N): Kai'Sa w-w-w-w-what are y-y-you

Kai'Sa: I told you i am better then some bimbo waitress

And she started walking towards me which i tried to balance by walking back

(Y/N): Wait meeee and A-a-ahri

Kai'Sa: She wont mind

Ok what the hell is going on here! Then Kai'Sa just stooped and frowned while looking down on me... then she just shrugged and turn to the kitchen

Ah that's it, she stooped i am disa..... NO NO NO NO NO you have Ahri down boy down

As i was doing some self control exercise i just suddenly heard a pooping sound and something like a spray can pouring... and then i saw that scene *GULP*

Kai'Sa: Ups... i spilled some over me

She was standing on the kitchen door with hear leg above her head using the door side as support while whip cream was all around her neck and chest while spilling al the way down to her private parts

Kai'Sa: I am sorry (Y/N)... i have been a bad girl... i think you need to punish me

*YOU RAAA

CHAPTER 17 (Sharing is caring)

I think i am going to start working soon since i just got a email that they extended my vacation again.... fuck this corona

(Y/N) POV

(Y/N): *whisper* It's always the quit ones

Kai'Sa: Sorry ?

(Y/N): ummm nothing just speaking to myself

Wow just wow... Ahri was amazing... but this girl... this girl is just crazy! Just now my mind was starting to work properly and i was starting to understand all the things we did these past couple of hours... and wow.. kinky

We were currently laying on the kitchen floor... there was no other place actually to lay down. The chairs were broken, the table was leaning because one leg was gone, the fridge was knocked to the side and there was food and broken plate and silver lying all around the kitchen around us...

Kai'Sa: I think we used up all the whip cream

yea... we used all 7 cans of whip cream and not mention all the cherry and blueberries i bought yesterday.... YAY!

(Y/N): I don't think il ever be able to eat lemons after today...

Omg the lemons... the stuff with did with the lemons

Kai'Sa: Yea.... pfffffff hihihi *gigling*

She then just started laughing and giggling at the same time, and i could only smile at this beautiful lady, i have to say it was amazing... omg we even broke the chandelier... how the hell did we...ah i remember i was holding on it while she was lifting me and had her face in my.... he he he

CRASH

Me and Kai'Sa both raised are heads and look towards the kitchen entrance

Ahri: Wha-wha-w-w-WHAT IN THE HELL !

Akali: wow.....

Evellyn:... is that chandelier lamp broken...

..... and then it hit me... OMFG WHAT DID I JUST DO!

Ahri was standing at the kitchen entrance with a shocked angry look all of her tails were out and they were standing up stiff without moving.

On her right was Akali who was just looking around with a look of amazement on the current status of the kitchen.

While Evellyn was on the right and was looking toward the chandelier, she was actually making a impressed face.

OH god.... What did i just do and Ahri is HERE!

Like me Kai'Sa got extremely red... but unlike me she just jumped up, basically danced through the girls evading them completely in super speed and disappeared

SLAM You could hear the door slamming in the distance..... traitor...

Akali:ummm (Y/N)... you still have some whip cream down there

.... kill me

Evellyn: Why are those chairs bent that way... and what the fuck happened to those lemons

omfg kill me

Ahri: (Y/N)

Yep i was dead, goodbye cruel world you decided to give me a few days of happiness and then take it all away. And then she screamed in my face

Ahri: WHY ARE YOU GUYS HAVING SEX IN THE KITCHEN!!! USE YOUR ROOMS NEXT TIME !!!!!!!!

Nani?

Akali: Umm Ahri didn't you guys do it in the living room....

Ahri: Thats not the point we don't eat there !

Akali: I DO!!!

Ahri: AND WE TELL YOU NOT TO !

What the hell is going on... next time... what next time... my brain cant comprehend at all whats going on. While i was having a crisis Evellyn just walked to me and crouched infront of me then she took her finger and swiped some whip cream that was still on my crotch... and put it in her mouth and made a slurping sound

Evellyn: *slurp* You understand you need to go buy some whip cream now darling, i like it with my morning coffee

Loading.....system crash out of embarrassment please reboot

Evellyn: Umm darling?

Akali: He has no color in his eyes...

Ahri: Omg Evellyn what did you do he is broken

TIMESKIP

Me and Kai'Sa were both siting on the couch with our heads looking down to the floor. We were surrounded by the girls and Ahri was in front of us giving us a lecture.

Ahri: And seriously the table is completely broken there is no way to fix it, and again seriously did you have to brake every single plate how are we supposed to eat tomorrow !

Evellyn: *smirk* even the security called because you guys apparently fucked up the water sprinkler and its showing as a error in their system, they have to come to fix it tomorrow

Akali: Not to mention that the fridge is gone as well and all the food is already spoiled

Oh god.... we really did go crazy...he he he...

Ahri: What do you have to say for yourself?

Ahri was standing in front of us just taping with her foot like a mother scolding her child

Kai'Sa: Would you believe... if i tell you that it all started with a Chain-Lightning and a pole-arm

(Y/N): Pffffff *cough cough* pfff haha *cough cough*

Dafuq am i trying to laugh now! I just basically got caught red handed by Ahri while having sex with another girl... but what i don't understand is... why is she not mad.

She is clearly mad because we destroyed the kitchen... but its like she dosn't care that i slept with another girl... i guess i assumed things to far again

(Y/N): *sigh* Yea sorry.... il clean it up all before bed... anyway il see you guys tomorrow il go for a smoke and clean everything then

Akali POV:

(Y/N) left with a sullen face for the balcony and looked one more time over to the kitchen... just wow... who knew Kai'Sa had it in her let alone (Y/N) he is always so shy... both of them are... its always the quiet people

Evellyn: OK leaving all of this stuff for later... dear i have to know what drink is that

Kai'Sa: Sorry ?

Evellyn: If it made you finally go crazy i just have to try it

Kai'Sa mood perked up on those words

Kai'Sa: OHHhh it's Chain-Lightning its very good but a little to strong, i was drinking it in the 'Dirty Mug' apparently it was made up by some bartender who liked to play awizard and chain-lighting was his favorite spell in 3.5

AAE: Huh ?

We were just looking at her with a blank face

Ahri: Umm Kai'Sa are you ok ? Do you have a fever

Evellyn: Or did you hit your head while you were going wild with darling

The last statement made Kai'Sa go red but she just wawed her hand

Kai'Sa: No no i was with (Y/N) in that bar that he got drunk at a few nights ago. He got called by Braum and instead of letting stay alone he brought me with him Ahri: And that's where you got drunk ?

Kai'Sa: Mhm. We were playing this amazing pen and paper game called Dungeons and Dragons. At first i was skeptical i only wanted to play for (Y/N) but it actually turned out be extremely fun, i even want to go again

Evellyn: And that's when you came back and decided to go girls go wild ?

Which made Kai'Sa go red again and just go 'yea'.. wow who would have thought she had it in her. The balcony door just opened and (Y/N) passed by us

(Y/N): Actually sorry guys... il clean it up latter i want to sleep now

I don't like that look at all.... and i was apparently not the only one who noticed since all the girls made frowns

(Y/N) POV:

Yea i am an idiot... i actually thought that there was something going between me and Ahri but i guess its was just her heating period... and that other time probably just a apology... i still don't know why i am so depressed. OK Ahri is not like that but i just had fun with Kai'Sa..

But that dark voice in the back of my mind was just telling me " she was drunk, don't get cocky" And then that memory hit... from that night a couple of years ago in my highscholl... i still remember it everything was white and beautiful from all the snow around us... well it was until i heard those words "Your a powerless... omg i cant believe i dated you! Your scum how dare you STAY AWAY FROM ME"

After that my life went to hell... the only good thing about that is that it was my last year of high school and i only had to survive that terror for only one year... but the nightmares are still real

(Y/N): Shit.....

knock knock

The door opened and Akali peaked her head inside

Akali: Hey can we talk

To which i just nodded and motioned her inside

Akali: So what wrong ? Don't tell me your upset because we gave you a hard time! Common you destroyed the whole kitchen

(Y/N): *sigh* no its not that... don't worry about it

Akali: (Y/N) the last two times something happened you made us worried, so speak or i am going to make you speak

She had a very dangerous look and she was pissed of... she was really going to kick my ass... i wouldn't mind if she used her abs... he he.. NO (Y/N)! OK seriously something is wrong with me

(Y/N): *sigh* its Ahri

Akali: You upset that she is mad ?

(Y/N): Actually i am upset that she is not mad

Akali: Nooo she is pretty mad, you destroyed her favorite cup

(Y/N): Akali.... can you stop with the bullshit

I was actually getting mad now, she was making a idiot out of me and i di.... aghhh. Before i could finish my thought she actually kicked me in the leg... holy shit this girls strong

Akali: I am not bullshiting you ! Now explain

(Y/N): She is not mad about me and Kai'Sa.... she caught us red handed

Akali was looking at me for a few moments until she had a look of "ah so that's it"on her face

Akali: Ahhh its that... actually it's a long time since we even thought about stuff like this.. ever since Sera

(Y/N): Sorry ?

She then just sat next to me and made a sad smile

Akali: I don't know how much of a hard core fan you were but about 2 years ago we had a 5th member Seraphin (Y/N): Ah yea its about the time all of you changed your looks ! By the way i love how you look now

Always throw a compliment no matter the situation... wait is she blushing ?

AkalI: *ahem* Anyway she was with us for about 3 months while we did that one song... and the she left us because of Ahri and Evellyn

I was paying attention full on now. If i remember correctly the story was that she left to be a solo artist. She is popular today as a solo singer but its not even close to KD/A when you compare them...

Akali: Yea i can tell what you are thinking about the way you are looking at me. She was a happy kid a little younger then me. Always smiling always chipper... but it was mostly fake she was truthfully very depressed.

(Y/N): Oh wow... i didn't know that

Akali: Yea so her attitude was pissing off a certain diva... you know who i mean

Yea... i do

Akali: Half of the time Evellyn was ignoring her while the other half she spend giving her a hard time... the situation was already on the edge until that situation with Ahri pushed her over the edge

(Y/N): With Ahri ?

Akali: *Mhm* we found Sera in a coffee shop and there was this coworker that knew her for some time... apparently she had a huge crush on him Oh god... i think i know where this is going

Akali: And then one time when we came back from shopping and we found Ahri kissing with the guy in the living room... apparently she found him interesting and made a move... after that Sera just lost it.

(Y/N): Lost it how...

Akali: She started screaming and throwing a tantrum, she was saying such mean things to Ahri that nobody should ever hear. At one moment.. we just had enough... don't get me wrong Sera was sweet but she could never replace Ahri so of course we all stood on her side. Then when she understood what was going on she just left...

(Y/N): How come nobody ever heard anything about this?

Akali: *sigh* Apparently Mundo made a deal with her, if she stays quiet and doesn't say anything he will do some calls and at least give her a leg up in her career. And for that guy... well he turned out to be a sleaze bag. Even returned a couple of days latter to Ahri like it never happened and when she said that she is not interested anymore he actually started to make threats

Oh stupid move

(Y/N): Let me guess. Evellyn steeped in didn't she?

AkalI: *grin* ohhh yea... believe me when i tell you that guy will never bother anybody again... *frown* But i don't know what Sera heard because when i called her to try to patch up things at least a little it ended in disaster, apparently it was our fault and her crush didn't do anything ... *sigh*

Wow who knew shit like this actually happened

Akali: So me and a girls made a deal. If ever a guy shows up we will share him

Nani ?

Akali: Yea we don't want ever for something like that to happen, plus we all love each other so much so we don't really mind, i mean common the things we do sometimes with each other makes sharing a guy nothing

NANI???????? WHAT THINGS !

Akali: Ummm (Y/N).... your kinda drooling

(Y/N): Hehehe... share... hehe

She then just giggled and got up and started to leave but suddenly she stood in her place and kunai flew bye my ear almost cutting it off

Akali: But if you ever even think about going to somebody else you will be sorry *growl*

And then she closed the door.... holy shit this girls are not normal... no they are batshit crazy how the hell did i get myself into this... and i am smiling so much... hehehhe

TIMESKIP

I woke up tomorrow at about 10am... wow i sleep good last night i also had a very big grin plastered on my face.. i guess Ahri really wont mind... hehe sharing...

As i entered the living room i saw Evellyn on the couch and playing with her phone. Then Kai'Sa entered the room and once she saw me she made a smile and gave me a quick kiss on my mouth she also put something that looked like a bagel in my hand

Kai'Sa: No homecoming for a few days i am afraid *blush* our fault

That last and her blushing face made me go completely red.... hehe share

After eating the bagel and having my morning coffee and cigarette i returned to the living room. The only ones there were Kai'Sa and Evellyn so i decided to join them

(Y/N): Ahri and Akali are not here

Kai'Sa: Ah yes apparently there is some sport fashion firm that wants to use Akali as a model so Ahri is going with her for the meeting.

I just nodded to that statement and then looked towards Evellyn who was still taping on her phone.... hehehe share

Evellyn: ....ing

Hehe i bet out of all of them she is the craziest one actually... hehe sharing is caring Evellyn: Darling your drooling

(Y/N): Huh ?

I guess i am... shit i need to stop thinking about this stuff its going to become obvious

She then just made a evil smirk and got close to me while wiping my drool of the side of my mouth with her finger which made me go extremely red. Which was apparently extremely satisfying for her because her grin got even bigger.... ok two can play at this game

(Y/N): *gulp* I noticed your not wearing your sunglasses inside anymore... i-i-i-i-it's good since i can s-s-s-s-see your eyes t-t-then.

To that she just raised a eyebrow and made a big grin

Evellyn: Next time when you try to tease me do it without stuttering... this only makes you look cute *grin*

.... yea she is still ways above me.

While i was doing everything to get back to normal our house phone rang and Kai'Sa went to answer it. Hmm that one never rings probably security for the sprinkles or something

Kai'Sa: Yes hello.... mhm.... is that so ?.... ok send her up

Hmm i wonder what that was about.

Evellyn: Do you have any plans for today ?

(Y/N): I was actually thinking of going to buy the parts for my PC

I didn't play it for the past few days and the i was starting to get the shakes like a drug addict without drugs. Then i heard the ring from the elevator door opening and i heard a voice that made every single fiber of my body freeze in shock

????: My little pterodactyl !!!!!!!! I MISSED YOU SO MUCH

No.... common no.... don't do this.... please no

CHAPTER 18(You have been marked)

Ok now i am pissed. After the R broken on my keyboard the E then followed it and i can also feel the T getting weak... never buy a Acer Predator there is always some shit going on with it.

(*Y/N) POV*

Evellyn was switching her look to me then to the door behind me. Her face was in shock. Kai'Sa was also standing there with her opened mouth... and then i turned and saw the worst possible person to show up at this penthouse... my step-mother

Diana: Don't stand there little pterodactyl! Come give your mother a hug!!!!

Evellyn and Kai'Sa: little pterodactyl....

FML !!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

TIMESKIP

I was currently siting on a cough while a beautiful middle aged lady was hugging and kissing me on the cheek.

Diana: I missed you so much my little pterodactyl *smoch smoch*

Evellyn and Kai'Sa were just siting on the opposite side in complete shock... i could tell that this was extreme since even Evellyn was quiet without making any comments. And then she grinned while looking my way meaning their shock was no was gone... FFS

(Y/N):OK OK stop Diana that's enough ! its embarrassing..

Oh wait... crap. And then right on Que tears started to form in her eyes

Diana: You still call me by my first name *sob sob* even though i have been your mother for so many years already *sob sob*

Oh god... i cant deal with this now

(Y/N): *ahem* sorry.... mom

Which made her stop crying in a second and she started smiling and kissing me on the cheek again... and then i saw those two evil women who had the biggest smiles on their faces

Evellyn: That's right 'little pterodactyl' don't make your mother upset *grins*

Oh it actually sounded a little sexy when she said little pterodactyl like that

Kai'Sa: yes 'little pterodactyl' don't make your mother cry

Ok now that just making fun of me. I suddenly got up and just sat in on the opposite side between Kai'Sa and Evellyn

(Y/N): *sigh* anyway Kai'Sa, Evellyn meet my mother Diana

Kai'Sa: It's a pleasure to meet you Ms.(L/N)

Evellyn: Yes its so wonderful to meat darlings mother

Diana was actually wording the mouth darling silently but she quickly got her composure back and made a big smile

Diana: Yes its so wonderful to meet you girls.... hmm i have a feeling i saw you somewhere before

(Y/N): They are actually famous singers and pop stars you probably saw them on TV or maybe one of the girls talked about them

Diana: AAAhhhhh YES! NO wonder you look so familiar i saw you on the posters that both Kata and Casi have in their rooms !

(Y/N): Yea there you go... by the way how did you even find me

And then she just made a 'ah' face and she got up and started wiggling her finger up and down in front of my nose in her " you are in trouble young man"

Diana: Ah do you have any idea in how much trouble you are young MAN!

..... oh god! Evellyn and Kai'Sa were just snickering on the sides

Diana: First you don't call at all for your birthday. Then when i try to call you i cant reach you. Of course we were worried! Me and your father were besides our self! We thought you joined a gang and gone bad !

OMFG STOOOP! At that statement Kai'sa just started to scream in laughter and Evellyn actually fell on the me while holding her sides and laughing.... she smells so nice... NO not now

Kai'Sa: AHahahah (Y/N) in a gang..... ahahhahahahahha

Evellyn: Wait... stop...hahahha i cant...hahahahha. i cant breath....ahahha gone bad ! HAAHHAAAH

Oh god lightning strike me now ! This woman will be the death of me ! I was going so red and i just closed my eyes and was doing everything i can no to run away !

Diana: Then i come here and i find your apartment is destroyed !

Oh crap... at those words even Kai'Sa and Evellyn stooped laughing since Diana started the waterworks

Diana:*sob* And then they tell me that you got fired from the library... after it got destroyed *sob*

Oh shit...

Diana: And when i got to the police *sob* to ask for help *sob* they just act like scum *sob* and tell me " We are busy now, we don't have time for him" *sob*

Oh god the waterfall is in full bloom now... and then i felt a shiver through my spine, And when i looked to the sides saw that both Kai'Sa and Evellyn were glaring at me in anger..... yea i kinda fucked up.

As Diana was crying Kai'Sa just got up and made her way to the kitchen after about 5 min she returned with a cup of tea for her and then both her and Evellyn spoke.

Kai'Sa: We know how you feel Ms. (L/N)... your son here *glares* tends to disappear for a longer time without calling anybody

Evellyn: *glares* or leaves stupid notes and thinks its going to be funny

Oh god i am sweating like crazy now. I am sure that the only reason they are not beating me is because my mother is here.

Diana: *sob* i was lucky there was actually one police officer *sob* who actually decided to help me *sob*

And then she started again..... oh god.... i cant believe i am going to do this... but screw it there is no choice

(Y/N): *ahem* mom... i am sorry... i think the girls would like to see pictures from when i was a kid... *grumble*

And then again like somebody flipped a switch the waterworks stooped. She had a big smile while pulling her phone.... oh god i need to seriously fix my calling problem to evade shit like this into the future

TIMESKIP

I loved Diana... even though she was my Step-Mother she was a perfect mother that any child can have. She never threw it into my face, she was always annoying me, if i had a sneeze she would want to go to the hospital and she knew how to push my buttons to activate guilt... but one thing... one thing i will always hate... is THOSE FUCKING PICTURES... i am seriously starting to think she faked all that crying and that she maybe just

got in contact with Ekko or Yas and found my address Diana: And this is when he lost his first tooth !

Kai'Sa & Evellyn: Awwwwww!

Ok for Kai'Sa i can actually believe she was liking this bullshit..... but Evellyn... she was doing this just to piss me off and tease me latter

Diana: And this is his first hallowen out with friends look

Kai'Sa: OMG that costume is so cuteeeee!!!!!! So this is why you call him little pterodactyl !

Evellyn: He is making such a cute angry face

Grrrrrrrrr i will make you girls pay for this. Evellyn heard me growling and just gave me a seductive smile that basically answered with *i dare you* .. OK, women cant read minds... right ?

Kai'Sa: Omg he is so big here !

Diana: Ah yes this is when he got on the pudgy style ! Its when he started high school. Even though you don't like to talk when you were a little ball of cuteness i never mind you being on the big side *smile*

OH GOD! CAN WE STOP PLEASE !!!! Thank god Ahri and Akali are not HERE !

Diana: Oh and this is from his highscholl prom this was his dat...

SLAM *CRASH*

Huh why are they looking at me like that... ah am bleeding... crap i broke the glass on the table

Kai'Sa: (Y/N) ARE YOU OK !?

(Y/N): Yea yea sorry about that, i guess i drooped it a little to hard there *nervous smile*

Both Evellyn and Kai'Sa were giving me looks with a raise eyebrow... i cant deal with this... especially that memory

(Y/N): I am going for a smoke

As i was about to get up Diana suddenly popped the red alert question

Diana: Soo which one of these two is your girlfriend ?

(Y/N): Huh ?

Diana: Please my little pterodactyl you can try to hide as much as you want but i am your mother. I can see how you look at these girls and how happy you actually are

Huh... got to give the old bat credit... she saw right through me. Before i could answer anything Kai'Sa just grabbed my hand and had a big smile

Kai'Sa: Yes we are together *smile*

Oh... she said we are together.. hehe

Then Diana looked towards Evellyn

Diana: I also see how he looks at you its clear your special to him so i am glad your friend with him

Ok i was definitely red there and when i looked towards Evellyn i almost spited because she actually had a pink flush in her face... oh wow she made Evellyn blush... did she just really blush because of me.

Before she could answer anything the elevator door opened and

Ahri: Hey we are baack !!!

Oh no... why do i have a feeling i should run

Before any of us could do anything Ahri and Akali showed up. Ahri then without words just drooped the bags rushed to me and planted he tongue

inside of my mouth while using one hand to grab my crotch while the other one was holding my head from behind. After about 20 seconds of exchanging out saliva she pulls back and start purring in my face

Ahri: I heard from Akali you were sad yesterday because you thought i don't care about you... so how about we go to my room now and i can show you just how much i care... i don't need to be in heat to make you scream in pleasure !

(Y/N): Ah.....

I was frozen in shock just standing there

Evellyn: .....

Evellyn was just quietly suddenly staring out of the window

Kai'Sa: uh.....

And Kai'Sa had her eyes wide and was looking towards Ahri with a open face

Diana: Umm excuse me

Then Ahri actually turned around and finally noticed the person siting on the couch

Diana: Ummm hello i am (Y/N)'s mother

Then she looked towards my shocked expression, and then towards the hand that was holding Kai'Sa.. and finally towards her hand was holding my little friend which was half awake by the way, that kiss was amazing... and then she just worded the words she said silently

You could see her brain was processing everything slowly and then realization hit her and made hr eyes go wide. Akali just made a huge grin

Akali: Oh this deserves some popcorn !

Then Ahri just screamed and jumped away from me her tails were waging everywhere and she started stuttering so hard... it actually turned me on

Ahri: A-a-a-a-ah its a ples-s-s-s-sure to meet y-y-you this this ummm this was... um *whisper* help But Diana just started laughing

Diana: Haha its ok my dear its all good i understand the passions of youth ! The thing me and his father did... oh my it makes me blush even today

(Y/N): OK CAN WE NOT TALK ABOUT THAT !!!!

To which just everybody started laughing except Ahri and me. Me who didn't want to have nightmares about Diana and my Father, and Ahri who was still in massive embarrassment.

Akali: Haha to bad we were not here from the beginning i am sure it would have been more fun

Diana: Don't you worry dear, i can send you the pictures that i was showing the girls and you can look them over latter all together.

Akali just made a huge smile and pulled out her phone... i just groaned in pain

Diana: Anyway i should be going soon my bus is going to be leaving in about 30min. I just came to see if you are ok... oh and... ummm.... will you mind if i bring Kata and Casi next time ?

(Y/N): *sigh*..... if you want to... but they will not come for me

She just made a sad smile and nodded her head... she knows the relations between me and my sisters

Diana: I will try honey. Your brother started working with your dad so they are very busy so be a dear and call at least once a week ? He really misses you, both of them do

(Y/N): Yea sure, sorry for not calling before

Diana: Its ok... ah can i grab a picture of all of you together ! I want brag how my son is living with famous stars !

(Y/N): Better not mom they need to keep up a image... guuuh

Before i could even finish the sentence Kai'Sa just yanked me back into a siting position and wrapped herself over my left arm. Then Evellyn came on the right wrapping my waist with her arm and pulling my right behind her, while Akali sat above me pushing my head between her legs and leaning with both arms on top of my head and for the cherry on top Ahri say in my lap.... oh god this position is so dangerous i am feeling boobs, crotches, waists and buts... BASEBALL, GRANDMA,SAD KITTENS

Diana: Say Chess !

AAEK: Chess !!!!

(Y/N): C-c-chess...

TIMESKIP

My mother left with a happy face and i was left alone with the four girls. By the way we were still in the picture position

(Y/N): Ummmmmm girls..... can.... can you move please

Kai'Sa just made a innocent face while pulling my arms into her breast

Kai'Sa: But why (Y/N) ?

While Akali actually applied pressure to my head with her legs and pulled it even deeper inside

Akali: Is there something wrong with our current position ?

Evellyn then just used her other arm to move it under my shirt on my bare chest and purred in my ear

Evellyn: Or are we making you uncomfortable

Ahri looked into my eyes and made a mischievous smile

Ahri: Oh my (Y/N) is that your phone ! Or are you happy to see us?

And then they started giggling and laughing while i was more red then a tomato. But then we heard the elevator door ring and a voice that came with it

????: Hello is there anyone here ? This is the police

Nani?

The girls lets me go and as we were getting in a normal position a woman with short pink hair and police uniform walked in.

????: Good day my name is officer Vi i am here.... huh

As she was introducing her self she noticed Akali

Vi: YOU !

And then in a blink of the eye Akali was gone.... oh god of course its her. Considering the way she is driving it was only a mater of time

Vi: *tch* i will catch you one day and no matter the fame i will put you behind bars!

Oh crap this woman is dangerous Akali better be careful in the future. Then the woman had her composure returned

Vi: I am looking for (Y/N) (L/N)

Huh ? At those words i just widened my eyes... what did i do. But before i could even answer Evellyn suddenly stood in front of me with a pissed of expression.

Evellyn: And for what reason are you looking for (Y/N)

Vi: It's about his apartment

Oh.. about fucking time seriously

(Y/N): I am (Y/N) (L/N)

She then looked towards me and gave me a once over then she just motioned with her hand

Vi: Is there somewhere where we can talk in private ?

Ahri: For what reason do you need to talk in private *glare*

Wow even Ahri is glaring... she never acts like this in front of normal people she tries to most to keep her public image.

Vi: Like i said its a private matter, also a investigation on his apartment...

(Y/N): *sigh* ok we can go to the balcony over there... il be back soon girls

Kai'Sa actually held my arm even harder now it was like she was afraid to let go, but once i gave her a smile she finally let it go. Ahri was just glaring at the officer and Evellyn face looked like she wanted to decide if it would be safe to make Vi disappear.... scary

As we got out on the balcony i sat in my usual chair and lighted a cigarette. Usually i would not be rude like this... but this so called police was wiling to leave me homeless just because i was a powerless.

Vi: First off i would like to confirm some stuff with you if its ok

(Y/N): Shoot

Vi: (Y/N) (L/N), age 27 since a few days ago, born in the small town of Zaun about 3h drive south of Piltover, ability non

(Y/N): Yes its all correct

Vi then just nodded and took a sit across me

Vi: The truth is i am not here because of you apartment....

For some reason i am not surprised.... i dealt with the police before because of my sister and a apartment vandalism was not worth a private talk

Vi: Are you aware of the radical group "4 perfection"

To that i just frowned and growled... yea that name is of the rare thing that will make even me growl. Vi just nodded her head

Vi: I see you are... so the thing is i believe you have become a target

... shit..... i knew...shit

Vi: I bet you heard rumors the police chief was part of the group... but she is not.. she is being undercover and she think that you are the next target... i am sorry

(Y/N): So..... what being done .... about it

Then Vi just looked to the side and there was shame written on her face... are you fucking kidding me.. and then i started yelling

(Y/N): WHAT IS BEING DONE ABOUT IT !!!!!!!!!!

Vi: Nothing i am afraid... our chief cant brake her cover... and we cant act
(Y/N): So your leaving me to die !

Vi: I am sorry

(Y/N): Stop saying you are sorry !

Vi:We believe that the interview got you on their sight... the only reason you haven't been hit by now... is because you are a high level target since it made you popular... so believe that he is coming for you

And then all my rage was replaced by fear and my legs started to shake.... I knew who she meant... every powerless and yordel in the world knew who she meant.

Vi: '4 perfection' a radical group that believes in the purity of powers... their sole motivation being the extermination of powerless people and the low race of yordels.... i am sorry their leader Jhin has you on his sight...

I was doing everything i can not have a complete panic break down all fibers of my being were yelling in my brain to just pick up and run... i knew about Jhin... i read about him on the internet..

He was the one who founded the group about 20 years ago.... and he was a monster. He was famous for always marking his kills with 4 bullet wounds, and the bodies would always be found in a pile of roses... but the most sick thing was how he did things.. Every time he finds a target he will stream it live on the dark net and every time it was fucked up. He will play a game with them of life and death. Some times its a simple card game, other times its something like baseball a few times it was even a racing competition... but he never lost... he always won in the end. and once he does. He shoots his victim 4 times on the stream.

Vi: Again i am sorry... there is nothing we can do you have been marked.

Ah... why now.... why now when i am finally happy

Vi: I suggest you get your affairs in order...

Well thing's are heating up, see you next time

CHAPTER 19(Would you like a rose ?)

Crap these mosquitos are impossible who ever thought it was a good idea to create them.

Camilla POV:

Vi: And that its chief...

I just sighted and looked one more time upon the report on my table. Apparently Mr. (L/N) Mother came and VI gave her a hand. After that she decided to visit Mr. (L/N) and inform him about his situation.... don't get me wrong i feel like shit.

When i became a officer so many years ago i wanted to protect people but i am afraid its never simple like that. This radical group has been making so much shit that i was with a little bit of luck able to become a member to stay undercover.

I was actually shocked when i found out how many people in my station were part of it... but there was nothing i can do... sometimes you need to do the lesser evil to stop a greater one. So that's why instead of doing everything in our power to save Mr. (L/N) we are actually leaving him to the wolves. It was just simple bad luck... if Jhin decided to target him one week later i could help him i have 98% of the names and location of all the members... and i needed just one more week to get a complete 100%

Camilla: *sight* its just simply bad luck...

Vi: Call it what you want mam... but it leaves a bad taste in my mouth....

... shit i really started to hate my job....

(Y/N) POV

I was laying in my bed... it was impossible to sleep after yesterday... luckily Vi actually went to talk with the girls to take their statement about what they know about my apartment and i just made an excuse and went to the bed while they were busy.... i guess i really am going to die. I even checked the dark net last night... and there it was.. my picture with 4 roses around it... i was next

The first part of the night i was shocked beyond words. then i spent a good amount of time screaming in my pillow and in the end i was crying... now i just didn't care anymore... i checked the time and noticed it was 4am...

(Y/N): Hmm its 4 am... considering the time zones

riing riing riing

Yasuo: *Hello ?*

(Y/N): Hey Yasuo what up?

Yasuo: *What wrong ?*

Wow... he figured it out right away

Yasuo: *Before you say anything you just called me Yasuo right away. When was the last time you did that ?*

Crap... he is right

Yasuo: *Should i get Ekko?*

(Y/N): No! Keep him out of this he has a loud mouth.

Yasuo: *OK what happened? Did you fuck up with the girls or did maybe kill somebody common man you can tell...*

(Y/N): Jhin is targeting me

And then there was dead silence... after about 3 min Yasuo was growling in rage

Yasuo: *Don't you dare do this to me YOU SON OF A BITCH!!!! DON'T YOU DARE TELL ME THIS*

(Y/N): I am sorry...

Yasuo: *SO WHAT ! I am supposed to be quiet knowing that my friend will DIE ! YOU SON OF A BITCH!*

(Y/N): Sorry Yas... i just needed to talk to somebody.... and i need to give instructions for my will... i know you did that for you and Ekko

After about of 5 min of being muted he finally answered

Yasuo: *When i meet you in the afterlife im going to beat the shit out of you*

(Y/N): Sure... thanks

And then we started just talking

TIMESKIP

Evellyn POV:

(Y/N): OKKKK girls, so remember be ready by 17:15pm ! We are going out for dinner and no i am not giving it away! We are going by taxi got it ! And make sure you dress nice ! I am going to take care of the rest

Then darling just picked up his wallet and left to go outside. When we come up and came to the living room (Y/N) was already there with a assortment of danishes waiting for us on the table. Apparently he went to an amazing bakery according to him and he brought them all just for us. Then he tells us not to have lunch bcs that apparently he is taking all of us out for dinner and he dosn't want to tell us where... the way he was talking and acting was kinda getting on my nerves

Akali: Ummm isn't he acting...

Kai'Sa: a little cocky ?

Ahri: Probably it has to do with the police officer yesterday

Evellyn: I know that... but why is he acting so fake then ?

It was obvious he was faking it...i usually despise stuff like this but i guess considering yesterday i can let it go but if he continues like this we will have a problem

Akali: So where do you think we are going ?

Kai'Sa: hihi considering him probably some rock pub or another 'tavern'

Why was i feeling so bad.... it was like i knew something very wrong was about to happen

TIMESKIP

Ok everything is ready! During the day i went to one of the Syndras stores and asked for the best suit they have. After that i have to say i was lucky because i was able to get Le'Blanc on the phone and she gave me advice where to find the presents i was thinking of.

I had just enough time to go to the Flea-Market and bu some fruits from Yorick, the old man figured something was wrong since i didn't try to haggle but i am glad i was able to get away before to many questions were asked. And i had just enough time to stop by the Dirty Mug and sing my favorite song "The Bard"

Now it was Almost 17:15 and i was waiting for the girls to come... And when they showed up.... holy SHIT ! mama mia, woof woof.

First was Akali who again came in a miniskirt but unlike last time it was a little frilly and a white jacket on top with a sports bra exposing her waist of course.... wow and the boots.... those knee high white boots were just wow

Then it was Kai'Sa... the beautiful princes who came in a white long dress that looked more like a weeding gown then a simple party dress but it was

moving in such a way that it was showing her naked legs every time she walked.... wow

Then came Ahri in black dress that barely that went to her knees not to mention the opened back and no cover on the shoulder and those spartan style high heals i like... not to mention her tails actually had something that looked like black scarfs and were going perfectly with the dress.... ufffffff

And the last was like always Evellyn... which if this was a anime i would have a nose bleed. She came out in a tight blue azure dress that if she bent i would probably see everything, not to mention that there was hole between her breast just enough to peak your imagination... and again with the sides expose.... MAMA MIA !!!!!

Kai'Sa: (Y/N) your drooling again

(Y/N): Yes i am... i have to say you girls now how to dress *wink*

Hmm... why did they make a frown ?

As we left the elevator in the garage, Braum and Malphite were waiting for us with the limo, they had he door open and hey were ready to assist us.

Ahri: Ohhh wow a limo for us ! But what about the taxi ?

(Y/N): Like i would make my ladies use a taxi, only the best for you !

She didn't actually saying anything o that but its ok i guess they are happy then i waited for all the girls to enter first and when i joined them Braum spoke

Braum: Where are we going sir

(Y/N): Only the best place in town driver for my girls

Braum: Haha of course sir right away

I was glad Braum was actually helping me like this... i am going to miss him

TIMESKIP

Braum delivers us in front of Law&Chaos and i told him to come pick us up at midnight which both him and Malph just smiled and left.

I then turned and started making my way towards the restaurant but the girls were just standing there looking at me in confusion

Ahri: Uuu (Y/N). Where are you going ?

(Y/N): Inside

Evellyn: Very funny

Kai'Sa: Are we supposed to meet someone here ?

(Y/N): Ummm no guys we are going for dinner

Akali: Oh i get it the restaurant you meant is behind this one

.... oh i am going to enjoy this so much. I then just made a smile and opened the door for the girls

(Y/N): My ladies after you

Which they still looked at me with confusion but in the end they decided to enter which we were of course greeted by a smiling Kayle... so i guess they switch personalities when they work. Ah she cant see me because of the girls... he he lets show off a little and make them laugh

Kayle: Oh welcome to Law&Order but i am very sorry even though you are the KD/A group i can not let you in without reservations

The girls were looking at her for a few seconds and then when Evellyn glared in my direction i just made a smug face and walked in front of Kayle

(Y/N): Then how about me ? Am i special enough.

I could actually hear them gasp... yea i was acting cocky i never act cocky like this but Kayle was looking at me for about 2 sec and her professional mind activated and of course she played along... why aren't you always like this

Kayle: AH Mr. (L/N) its such a pleasure to have you with us again.... hmmm i think we can cancel on the prime minister of Ionia and his group and put you at his table

(Y/N): Hmm yes i think that would be acceptable

Kai'Sa: Umm (Y/N) there is no ne..

(Y/N): Sh sh sh ! Let me take care of this

Tonight i am going to make you all feel special its the least thing i can do before i..... shit

Then she just clapped her hands a 10 waiters came to us

Kayle: Please take Mr. (L/N) to the VIP table

When i turned around it took all my strength not to grin at the girls. They were all wearing shocked expressions with open mouths. And then i just motioned them to enter

(Y/N): After you madams.

We were walking through the restaurant and i have to say it was amazing. I didn't pay that much attention the last time i was here but now that i get a good luck on it feels like a royal ball. We were drawing some attention because we were being escorted by 10 waiters. This only got worse when they took us to the very central table that looked like it was made of crystals on a block of ice...

I really need to thank Kayle one more time when i called her and i told her i want to have a special dinner she just said come at 6... but this man this is beyond amazing. The head waiter took our drink order and said that food

for the VIP was already apparently prepared by the head chefs... looks like Morgana is being amazing as always.

Ahri: Umm (Y/N).... how

(Y/N): Hmm ? how what

I looked towards Ahri who was looking my way with a confused expression. Then Evellyn spoke up... why dose she sound a little mad actually

Evellyn: This place is impossible to get... we tried eating multiple times here and every time we were refused, and its impossible for to make a such a long time reservation because of our job.

I then just grinned and spoke which i thought was a deep and sexy voice

(Y/N): Well your lucky your with me baby i got some connections

Which actually didn't even get a laugh out of the girls... wow... are they actually upset. Luckily the waiter then showed up

HeadWaiter: Right here we have 3 bottles of a 1921 Vintage Demacian vine. Please enjoy them as compliments of our owner.

Holy shit Kayle even i know that's expensive as fuck... i really need to thank them later. After we started drinking, me sticking to the soda since i wanted to stay sober tonight the girls relaxed a little... but they were still on edge... ok what the fuck is going on.

During the dinner while we were having our appetizers some snail shit i cant even pronounce one of the waiter came with a basket of flowers

Waiter: Sir will you maybe like to provide some flowers for you ladies.

I found him a little strange since he was wearing a mask but considering this is such a classy place i guess its just part of his uniform.

(Y/N): Of course just give us a whole bunch for the table only the best for my girls

Waiter: Certainly sir

After he arranged some flowers and left the girls were looking at me with complicated expressions.... ok this is starting to piss me off.. why are they not enjoying them self's... ok ok jusst smile and continue they are probably still nervous.

Then the main course came and they putted what looked like a giant roasted pelican on the table it was still flaming on some parts and then i heard the voice i recognized

Morgana: Thank yo very much for coming tonight are dear guests i am the had chef Morgana i hope you enjoy your selfs.... you enjoy yourself this evening.

She actually stooped when she look upon Evellyn but then resumed her speech... i swear i thought sparks flew between those two. We were enjoying the main course but i could still feel that the atmosphere was stiff. Ok lets try to fix this again

(Y/N): Yea you probably already figured it Evellyn, that was Morgana from a few nights ago i helped them that one day and they owed me a favor. So i figured who better to use then all of you

Evellyn: Mhm.... sure

OK now i am really starting to get mad what's her problem !

(Y/N): Kai'Sa are you OK with you wine should i ask for more

Kai'Sa: No thank you...

Even her

(Y/N): Akali how do you like the meat ?

Akali: Yea its fine very tasty

She didn't even look my way... and the way she is playing with her food its clear she is not having a good time

And then i looked towards Ahri and noticed she was just taping on her phone and wasn't even paying attention

(Y/N): Ummm Ahri, all fine with your salad ?

Ahri: Umm oh yea very nice wine

.... fuck this.... *sigh* i really don't understand what's going on

After the main course was finished they brought out the desert... and wow it looked amazing the way it was arranged on that ice sculpture of an Angel was just divine... ofc course the girls didn't look that impressed....

(Y/N): *ahem* Anyway i have a announcement

And i motioned to one of the waiters to bring the 4 bags i had Malph give when we entered.

(Y/N): Ahri

Ahri: Yes (Y/N) ?

I then took out of a bag a branded bag,

(Y/N): i did some research and i heard it was the newest and hottest model out there currently i hope you like it *smiles*

Ahri: E.. yea its very nice thank you (Y/N)

Then i turned to Kai'Sa and gave her box containing a excellent brand of high heals that according to Le'Blanc were in the hit

(Y/N): I hope you like them, if they don't fit i can always go and find a bigger number but they should be the best *smiles*

She was just looking at the box without saying a word

I then turned to Evellyn

Evellyn: I am sorry for giving you such a weird present last time i hope this one is more to your liking

When she opened the bag she made a small frown and pulled out a very fancy dress, when i was in Syndra's Store i got them to call Syndra for me and she gave me advice saying its very classy plus it was extremely expensive even with the 50% discount

Then i turned to Akali

(Y/N): This is for you Akali

Akali: Oh... what is it

(Y/N): Its a new g18 watch its still not available for sale here it i actually got Yasuo to call their headquarters here in Piltover since they were promoting it as sponsors and they were able to talk them into giving it to me one month before its released on sale...

RIPE

Huh...

Then i looked to the side and saw Evellyn ripping the dress in half. And i just stood there shocked, after that i saw Ahri drooping the bag on the floor behind her and Kai'Sa didn't even open the box she just pushed it to the side and wasn't paying any attention it. Then Akali just took out the watch and drooped it into her wine glass without a word... why

Evellyn: (Y/N)... are we idiots ?

Evellyn just asked me in emotionless voice she didn't even call me darling

Ahri: *sigh* i am very disappointed i was expecting more of you

Ahri was just making a sad smile

Kai'Sa: I thought you would be different... i guess i was wrong Kai'Sa didn't even want to look at me, and it looked like tears were forming in her eyes

And Akali was just growling at me while looking me in the eyes I was shocked... my brain was not working at all and i was starting to have a panic attack. And then Evellyn spoke in that emotionless voice that i hard it a few times when speaking to random people who were annoying her

Evellyn: You have been acting strange all day. But we let it go because of yesterday. Then we meet up and get ready for diner and you continue

Ahri: Then you give us these so called presents... that fox you gave me meant more then any stupid bag you could buy

Akali: All night girls this girls that, bring me this, y girls., my ladies i am special bla bla bla bla

I my whole world was crashing down everything was breaking infront of me

Kai'Sa: Its sad... you acting like all the rest

Evellyn: What you think because you fucked Ahri and Kai'Sa we all belong to you ?.. i hate fake people its pathetic

Akali: Did you think this was going to make me drop my pants and bend over for you ? Hahah disgusting

And then something just broke inside of me... i wanted to cry i wanted to cry so much i wanted to make this special i wanted my last few moments to be with them.... but this .... no its better this way.... il be ....

(Y/N): I see..... i am sorry... hahaha...

I then just turned around and started to leave

Akali: OY ! WHERE ARE YOU GOING

(Y/N): Goodbye... the time with you was the happiest in my life

Shit why do my eyes hurt so much

Ahri POV:

We were mad ever since we got into the living room and (Y/N) started acting so fake. Talking about stupid stuff and acting like a douche

Then we get to this restaurant which shocked us... i was happy we got a chance to eat her so were the girls but then he started with his act again on how he was some big shoot that we were his girls and must get a VIP table... at first i thought he was just trying to mess around with us... but the act keep going and going and going.

I was sure something was wrong and so were the girls we were all giving each other looks... but then the presents came... and that's where i guess we all got mad and lost control... i actually we were already done before that but the way he was making that stupid smile just pushed us over the edge. It was just stupid expensive stuff it had no meaning and it was not special at all and so unlike him... it was like all those men that would approach us thinking they were special just because they have money or power

At first it was Evellyn who just snapped and we soon followed. This is not the first time something like this happened a guy acts in one way and then suddenly changes completely after being shown some affection i still remembered when we lost Sera completely because of the situation with her boyfriend and then he returns after a few days like nothing happened and expects me to sleep with him

Kai'Sa: Umm girls that in the end..

Akali: Yea...

Once we were done and were ready to tell (Y/N) to get out of our sight and fuck off...he said those things and left... he actually had tears in his eyes and was unlike everything before he was sincere... i was now extremely confused... that look... that look he gave us... whats going on

Ahri: Why did he act like this

Evellyn: I don't know dear bu...

* I tried so hard and got so far
But in the end it doesn't even matter *

Then we saw his phone ringing on the table and Kai'Sa took and answered it

Yasuo: *(Y/N) WE NEED TO TAAAAALK*

He sounded so extremely drunk

Yasuo: *I AM SORRY I JUST CAAAAANT KEEEP QUIIIIIIET YOU CAAAAANT DOOOO THIS TO ME !*

Kai'Sa was about to speak but Akali just took the phone from her and started imitating a guys voice

Akali: About what ?

I guess him being drunk actually helped in him believing it

Yasuo: *I know... *sob sob* I know your going to get die but man i just cant keep this a secret its to much... just try to run away.... DON'T MAKE ME KEEP THIS SECRET *sob* hmm (Y/N) you there ?*

I feelt like something just cracked.. i was staring in utter shock at the (Y/N)'s phone we all were. Nobody was releasing a sound we were just standing there in outer silence.... (Y/N) will die, what?

And then we heard a scream

Woman: Aaaaa he is DEAD !!!!!

And i felt like my life just got cut into pieces

(Y/N) POV :

I was standing in front of the restaurant in tears.

(Y/N): Its better this way

I just tried to make it special... crap i feel like shit... i guess they didn't like the way i was acting... but still.. *sigh* at least there wont be any confusion when i disappear

????: Excuse me sir

I turned around ah its the...

????: Would you like a rose ?

Huh... a rose

And then everything went dark.....

THE END

Ok ok joking, il see you guys tomorrow... maybe :P

CHAPTER 20(And all hope was lost)

Ok good morning all. Wow when i woke up a half a hour ago i have to say i was not expecting this. My ymail got gang-banged by wattpad and when i came here there were so many notifications and comments and even a few private messages from a few different people. So again thank you all so much i never thought so many people would be reading my story, i tried to answer on some of the comments and i also i hope that people that sent to my inbox appreciate my answer even though if it was mostly a refusal... il be doing another Character Side introduction with a little update on the existing ones somewhere in a near future and il also get a few things straight with my plans for the MC. Now without any more delay time to write the next chapter

Camilla POV:

Camilla: WHAT DO YOU MEAN YOU CANT TRACE IT !!!!!

It-officer: I-i-i am sorry mam but they are using a triple encryption its going to take allot of time.... Hiiiiiiii

SLAM

The guy from our IT department screams in fear as i slammed his desk and made a dent... SHIT !!!

Camilla: WHAT ABOUT OUR FORCE ON THE STREET ?

Officer: I am sorry mam... but Piltover is huge.... we just don't have enough men

SLAM

ITOficer: HIiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiii!

This has got to be a joke... this is got to be a fucking joke, this is to much even for the crazy bastard like him

????: *And we are back ladies and gentleman at 4:44:am like we promised! Are you ready for the one of a kind shows on our channel. And now say hello again to our two guests tonight*

Camilla: I DON'T CARE IF YOU HAVE TO MAKE THE WHOLE CITY GO UNDER BLACK-OUT! THIS STREAM MUST NOT CONTINUE !

..... I really hate my job.... i should have listened to my mother and became a florist

????: *Say hello to Mr. Jhin aaaaaaaaand Mister. (Y/N) !!! Let the games begin !*

Akali POV:

Bruuuuuum (**I have no freaking idea how to do a bike sound.... sorry)**

RandomPedestrian: Aaaaaaaaaaaaaaa are you crazy ! ITS RED !

I was riding my bike it full speed on the main highway making my way out of the industrial zone

Akali: Fuck fuck fuck... this is not happening... i swear i will kill him if i find him... no no I WILL FIND HIM !

RIING RIING

Akali: YEA ?

Evellyn: *Did you check the warehouses*

Akali: Yea i went through a few of them but there is just to many of them... i found the security guard and when i checked with him he said nobody was here

Evellyn: *Are you sure he didn't lie* *growl*

Akali: Oh i was very persuasive... he wouldn't have dared

Evellyn: *Fuck... ok continue checking the warehouses in the city il try to make a few more calls*

Akali: Sure.....

Shit how did this ever happen !

FLASHBACK

????: Aaaaa he is DEAD !!!!!

That scream woke me from the complete brain freeze i was having.

This night was a disaster... i really thought that (Y/N) was different but then he started acting like the rest of them... i was ready to tell him to fuck of until i saw that face in the end and he said those things... crap what is going on.

Then his phone rings and Yasuo drops such a bomb on us that my brain just stooped working... and then this scream is heard and every fiber in my body was screaming that it cant be so.

Before i could even move towards the scream Evellyn was already half way there pushing people out of her way. As the rest of us made our way we finally saw Evellyn just standing there with a blank expression trying to mouth out her words

Evellyn: It's....

I looked at the dead body. He was naked in his underpants with 4 bullet wounds in his chest, there were also roses scattered all around him. And then i saw the face

Ahri: It's not (Y/N)

Ahri just fell to her knees after saying those words... oh thank god it was not (Y/N) ! Then both me and Eve helped Ahri get up and as we made our way to the table i saw and heard something i never thought i would get a chance to.

Kai'Sa: YOU ARE GOING TO EXPLAIN EVERYTHING NOW YASUO ! DO YOU UNDERSTAND ME !!!

Kai'Sa was screaming in hysterical rage. It was drawing the attention of everyone inside but... none of us cared! If this is some stupid fucking joke from just Yasuo being drunk then... i will kill him.... and this time its not just a expression

Yasuo: *Wa-wa-wa-wa K-Kai'Sa what are you*

Before Kai'Sa could start screaming again Evellyn just took the phone and spoke in a voice that made even me shyer

Evellyn: You have 4 seconds to explain

Yaso: *Umm i cant*

Evellyn: 3

Yasuo: *Evellyn i made a prom....*

Ahri: 2

And then Ahri interjected in that same voice

Yasuo: *Hiii thereisthisgroupcalled'4perfection'that targetspowerlesspeopleand(Y/N)ismarkedbytheirleaderJhin*whowantstokillh im *grabs breath* *He made me promise not to tell*

Akali: I will murder you....

crash

We heard a crash coming from behind the call and Ekko's and Senna's voice was heard

Ekko & Senna: *WHAT DO YOU MEAN HE IS GOING TO GET KILLED !!!!*

And then the whole call went to hell as my world crashed

END OF FLASHBACK

Evellyn POV:

Akali: *Sure.....*

I ended my call with Akali... but that was it... i didn't have anybody else to call. In the past 2 hours i have called every single person i could think of. And none them had any possible information.

Kai'Sa: *sob sob*

Kai'Sa was siting on the couch having a breakdown and Ahri was just looking out of the window with dead eyes... she also tried calling her connections but it was the same story... nobody knew anything.

After Ekko and Senna got into that call with Yasuo it all went to hell and i am sure i even heard Yasuo grunt in pain after Ekko apparently punched him, there was nothing else to get out of them.(Y/N) was being targeted by a radical group who discriminated against powerless called '4 perfection'

I hard about the group before, i even got invited to join a few times but i refused them not because i respected the powerless simply because i didn't care on what they did....

At first after all of this hell i had a small hope that (Y/N) just left because of the way things ended with us at dinner... but then we went out and found his favorite brand of Smokes with that stupid lighter with a dragon picture. It was all on the sidewalk in front of "Law&Chaos"... and there was a rose next to it....

Kai'Sa: *sob* *sob* he would have never left.... *sob* and got captured *sob* if we didn't say those things to him

I cant refuse that.... then Ahri just started speaking in a dead voice

Ahri: It all makes sense now... the way he acted and treated us... can you imagine how you would feel if you knew you were going to die... but he still chose to spend his time with us...and we said those things

Evellyn: Girls we need to calm down.... there is still hope. Akali is in the city and i can still make some calls

There was nobody i can call anymore.... no there is still...

Kai'Sa: WHAT HOPE! I SAW THAT ANNOUNCEMENT 2h AGO!!!!! AND YOU SAW HIM HE WAS IN SO MUCH PAIN ! WHO CAN DO THAT TO A PERSON! THOSE THINGS WERE COMING OUT OF HIS LIMBS !!!

Ahri: Ah what time is it....

????: *And we are back ladies and gentleman at 4:44:am like we promised! Are you ready for the one of a kind shows on our channel. And now say hello again to our two guests tonight*

Kai'Sa: No... nooo. NO NO NO NO !!!!

????: *Say hello to Mr. Jhin anddd Mister. (Y/N) !!! Let the games begin !*

And then the stream just turned on... and all hope was lost... i am sorry darling... i am so sorry

This chapter was a little shorter but i believe it was a nice build up for the climax

Mwahah join the dark side of cliffhangers (not really a cliffhanger since next chapter getting written up right away XD)

CHAPTER 21 (THE SHOW MUST GO ON!)

(Y/N) POV:

Ahhh shit my head hurts! And there is such a strong smell of chemicals in my mouth and nose... huh why is everything dark... and there is something over my eyes what the hell

clank (**yea i admit it i suck at sound effects)**

(Y/N): Aaaaaaaaaaaaaaa... what the hell !

As i tried to move my arms and legs they shoot in such a huge pain that it took every single fiber of my being not to cry... why does it hurt so much ... what is this

????: Ah i would not move if i were you

Huh? There was somebody here with me

(Y/N): Who... who are you

????: Haha i will give you 4 chances to guess !

Nooo, NO NO NO

(Y/N): J-j-jhin ?

And then felt somebody pull away the blindfold and when my eyes adjusted i saw that thing

(Even though i don't like using pictures during the regular chapters this was just perfection)

I tried to jump away in fear but the things holding my limbs had a mind of their own making me scream in pain. Then i looked to the sides and saw that there were chains attached to my legs and arms and that the metal that was used was shaped like thorns! They were cutting into my skin every time i moved. Not to mention the pain was getting harder and harder

Jhin: This should help a little

Then he took a syringe and poked me in my neck sending shivers down my spine

(Y/N): WHAT THE HELL DID YOU INJECT ME WITH !!!!

Jhin: Oh just a simple little anesthetic, i don't want you to lose conciseness because of the pain, i mean the SHOW MUST GO ON !

And then he made a dramatic pose as he said those last words..... this motherfucker is crazy

I then started looking around but it just looked like a simple warehouse there where boxes and pillars around me nothing really special that could be

brought to my attention.

(Y/N): Ss-so your going to kill me ...

Jhin: WRONG !

He is not... and before i can even relax he showed he turned on the lights and i saw that horror show

Jhin: I am going to make you into beautiful art! A thing of beauty for all eternity !

Behind him were 4 crosses made of thorns and roses... and there were 3 dead bodies with bullet holes! Three of them were occupied... the forth one that was the biggest and most flashy was empty

(Y/N): W-w-who...

Jhin: Just some random people i picked up on the street not WORTH of my attention... but i will make a sacrifice for the art of beauty such as you !

(Y/N): You... you are sick

Jhin: Ah... how it hurts to be called that... but all great artist's have been discriminated through the course of history.... and that i understand

This motherfucker was sick... he was completely sick in the head this is not normal... why, why is this happening to me

(Y/N): Please... please let me go, please !

Jhin just looked down upon me and sighted

Jhin: *sigh* Don't you understand what i am trying to do. Its OK you should be happy that i will make you beautiful for the whole word to see! Only i can the potential inside of you! That's why i am making your awakening special !

(Y/N): What... what do you mean by that...

And before i could even finish my words the doors to the side opened and three people walked in... and every hair on my body rose in shock

Jaina: Mister Jhin ! Its such a honor and pleasure to finally meet you !

... this cant be happening... save me please somebody...

TIMESKIP

Jaina: Good evening ladies and gentleman ! Welcome to "STARS TODAY, DISAPPOINTMENT TOMORROW! With your host Jaina !!!!!

I was still on my original position barely able to think straight because of the thorned chains that were cutting inside of my limbs every breath, then i looked towards the voice and saw Jaina siting in a chair across Jhin with the cameras and lights in their direction

Jaina: Now now i know what you are thinking "Jaina why are you starting the stream at 2 AM" but you see today is a special SHOW ! Something that has never been done on this stream, something that makes no sense with our usual broadcast... but this ! MY DEAR VIEWERS THIS I COULD NOT PASS !!!

Then she turned away from the camera and pointed her hand towards that monster

Jaina: Tonight we have two special guests. Let me introduce the first one all please clap your hands for the man who calls him self the ultimate artist! The man who doesn't care about the public rules that chain our society! A man who will do anything for beauty! 4 PERFECTIONS VERY OWN LEADER AND FOUNDER MISTER JHIN !!!!!!!!!!!!

This lady is fucked up... this lady is fucked up as this monster here.... this has to be a nightmare

Jhin: Thank you very much for inviting me Jaina, and i have to say you look dashing tonight !

Jaina: Oh sir please ! Your going to make me blush

And your going to make me barf.... shit shit somebody save me

Jaina: So mister Jhin tell us what are you showing us tonight

Jhin: With pleasure Jaina. People know that i am a man of principles and respect. I only do the best and i only make the best. So that's why tonight for my 444 art piece i am going to make a masterpiece !

Jain: Oh wooow ! So i have to ask, what made you change your usual routine! I know you only stream your shows to a select mass of people

You man fucked in the head bastards who watch this kind of shit on the dark net ?

Jhin: Well you see Jaina tonight is special. I told you he is going to be my 444 work of art... and i just couldn't keep that to myself. I had to show it to the whole world instead of my usual fan base

Jain: AMAZING ! Such generosity, it knows no bounds we are very lucky mister Jhin to witness this. But let me get this straight, by your words and your statements from before you believe that death is a the most purest of art forms

Jhin: I do, and I'am tired of pretending that it's not. Death is a eternal beauty that time can not corrupt

Jaina: Wow just wow... such passion. And just for the end i noticed you fascination with the number 4

And then Jhin just raised his voice and made a huge pose that made Jaina flinch, especially when he got in her face at the end

Jhin: ITS PERFECTION ! 4 IS A PERFECT NUMBER! THERE IS NO OTHER NUMBER THEN 4! THE ONLY WAY 4 IS BETTER IS IF THERE ARE MORE 4! AND THAT'S WHY 4 IS PERFECTION! 4 IS BEAUTY, 4 IS ART !

You could see Jaina was scared shitless... i cant blame her that guy was fucked up in the head and a monster

Jain: *gulp* T-t-t-thank y-you for you insight... it is a wonderful number

Jhin: ITS NOT WONDERFUL ITS PERFECTION!!!!

Jain: Hiiii yes perfection! perfection !

Jhin: Good ! You understand

Then Jaina got up and walked... in front of me first she gave me a evil smirk while looking down upon me all bloody and in chains, then she just made a professional smile and turned towards the camera

Jaina: And here we have mister (Y/N) !!! please show him some love

The light was completely on me and i could see the camera was focusing on me

Jaina: Mister (Y/N)(L/N) is our second guest tonight and he will be working with mister Jhin to give us a perfect piece of art. Do you have any words for us mister (Y/N) ?

I wanted to call for help me, i wanted to scream in the camera for somebody to save me, i wanted to cry and beg for a hero, i wanted to tell them all to go fuck themself for watching this... but i couldn't i was just siting there with my mouth closed frozen in fear and despair....

Jaina: Oh comm on mister (Y/N)! You had so much to say the last time when we talked, for sure you have some wise words again !

She was glaring at me with a evil smile, and it made me shudder in fear... i was a prisoner and they were my wardens

Ahri POV:

I was watching the stream with a blank face while Kai'Sa was screaming in despair.

Akali: IT LOOKS LIKE A WAREHOUSE !!! I'AM GOING TO GET MY BIKE

Akali just screamed when she jumped from the sofa and started ruining to the elevator.. then Evellyn spoke

Evellyn: CHECK THE INDUSTRIAL ZONE!!! Most of them are there

Akali: GOT IT !!!

I was shocked... this is a joke right... this has to be a joke i was looking at the TV and watching (Y/N) on floor with chains made to look like thorns all around his limbs... there was already so much blood..

When Ekko called us 5 min ago and told us to turn into Jaina's stream i never imagine this would happen... and we were so happy this morning

Evellyn:....ri

No no no this is a joke right ? This is him joking with us for last night right ? He is just getting back at us....

SLAP

Evellyn: AHRI!!!!!!!!

I then just looked at Evellyn who slapped me.... ah this is a nightmare... Evellyn is scared... Eve is never scare i must be dreaming

Evellyn: Listen to ME ! I am going to call some people ! There has to be a way that we can find them! You do the same call everybody you have

Ahri: Bu....but.....

Evellyn: JUST DO IT !!!!

Kai'Sa was just crying on the sofa saying (Y/N)'s name while i took out my phone

(Y/N) POV

Jaina: And we will be back at 4:44 am. Please tune in and watch us and leave a like and subscribe !

Jhin: Now my dear (Y/N) i suggest you get some rest we are going to have a wonderful time latter you will see i will make you into a masterpiece !

I just looked up to Jhin.... this monster that was enjoying this.... the monster that was going to take everything away from me

Jhin: Do not worry ! Your fate will not be like the rest. I have even prepared a special set of rules and games for us tonight ! It will be one of a kind

Somebody... save me

TIMESKIPE

Jaina: And we are back ladies and gentleman at 4:44:am like we promised! Are you ready for the one of a kind shows on our channel. And now say hello again to our two guests tonight

Jaina: Say hello to Mr. Jhin aaaaaaaaand Mister. (Y/N) !!! Let the games begin !

So the time has come..... and nobody is going to save me

OK i know this was kinda a dick move but the next one is going to be the climax i promise XD I Just decided its better to make it into 3 smaller chapter then one big one... and plus i never actualy wanted it to grown into something like this big when i got the idea but i guess my imagination like usual went wild.

(Dont worry il start writing the next one up as soon as i get some lunch)

CHAPTER 22 (ROCK, PAPER, S.....)

OK WOW... i actually wanted out finish this arc last chapter but man... it just kinda started and there was no stopping it i really hope my imagination will not go wild... Just a little head up this chapter is going to be a little extra on the mature side a few blood flowing around swearing here and there and a few body parts getting misplaced... so skip this chapter if you don't like stuff like that (and we know you do)

(Y/N) POV:

I was siting in a chair at the warehouse i presume. In front of me was a big round and table and across on the other side was Jhin who was currently shuffling a deck of cards. The light was shining upon us and all around people were screaming and cheering

Thug1: Wooooooo

Thug2: Yeaaa man finally !!!

ThugLady1: JHIN I LOVE YOU!!!

Thug 46: Make that powerless scream !

There was about 80 people by my count, both men and women of all sizes and ages were screaming in happiness and cheering for the show that was about to finally start. They were also all wearing a mask like Jhin so i couldn't recognize anybody

Jhin: So my lovely (Y/N) let me explain the special rules for tonight.

It was sending shivers down my spine every time he said those words

Jhin: We are going to play 4 games

And then the mass just went

MassOfThugs: 4!!!!!!!!!!!!!

Jhin: And if you even one of these games i will let you go

MassOfThugs: BOOOOOOO!

Jaina: Wow so generous of mister Jhin, he was ready to give up his life's work to give (Y/N) a chance !!

GENEROUS MY ASS!!!!!! You people are sick !!!

Jhin: The games will be chosen by me ! And every time you lose a game

thud

My eyes went wide as he put a giant revolver on the table... i was not a gun freak but i have to say it looked impressive, it was black with drawn roses all over it and it had only 4 magazines... omg why am i admiring that! He is going to kill me with it !

Jhin: Do you understand ?

(Y/N): *gulp* y-y-yes

Jaina: SPEAK UP MISTER (Y/N)!!! We can't hear you

This bitch... if i survive this i will make sure you suffer !

(Y/N): So i need to only win one game out of the 4 ?

MassOfThugs: 4!!!!!!!!!!!!!

Jhin: Yes you win one game out of the 4...

MasOfThugs: 4!!!!!!!!!

Jhin: And i will let you go

And then he just slammed the deck of cards on the table in front of me

Jhin: First game Black-Jack !

Shit for sure he is going to cheat somehow ! Ok ok ok, just calm down... this is blackjack you cant cheat in it... well you can count cards... but what are the chances... right

(Y/N): Fine... lets start....

I had a 4 and a 5 while Jhin had a 10 and a hidden card

Jhin: So (Y/N) let's talk a little while we play i want to get to know you better so i can bring out your full beauty in my art piece

Shit the last thing i want to do is talk with a sick bastard like you.... but maybe i can get him distracted

(Y/N): hit me... what do you want to know

Then Jhin pulled out a 7 for me

Jhin: Well i am just wondering how does it feel to live in Piltover ? You are from a small town of Zaun?

Hmm that 16... shit i cant stop there its still to low

(Y/N): hit me... its interesting... the Piltover is much bigger then Zaun, it was hard in the beginning but now i am already used to it

Then a 1 fell on my pile... SHIT !!!!! 17... is the worst possible outcome !

Jhin: I am so glad that you like it so much

Ok ok i will just tell him one more hit i am sure il be fine its all good

Jhin: So how did you feel when your favorite professor destroyed your dream

(Y/N): Hit m..... huh ?

I just looked upon him in shock and he was just using one of his arms that was leaned on the table to support his head that was looking towards me... i know he had a mask on... but i knew he was making a huge grin... its those eyes...

Yasuo POV:

Ekko: SHIT!!!!!!!!!!

Senna: Oh no...

Quiana: This is bad you can see he is starting to panic....

How.... how did that bastard know about that ? Nobody knew except me and Ekko and he only told us because he got batshit drunk that night

(Y/N): *Ummm... it.... how do....*

Jhin: *Its not important how i know (Y/N) now are you staying or should i give you another card*

Crap don't fall for it man !!! He is trying to play with your head

(Y/N):*I...i-i-... i am staying*

Quiana: Crap.... bad call

And then Jhin turned around his hidden card which was a 6

Jhin: *You never answered my question (Y/N)... and you should have taken a card*

Ekko; NO!!!!!

And then he pulled a card out of a pile and it was a

MassOfThugs: *4 !!!!!!!!!!!!!*

SHIT !!!!! He would have won if he took it... this guy asked him that question on purpose to shake him !

Jhin: *First game... my win*

BOOM!

(Y/N) POV:

(Y/N): Aaaaaaaaaaaa

I was screaming in pain... Jhin just shot me in the stomach with his gun and it hurt like hell, blood started to from and since i started to jerk so suddenly the chains were also having a picnic on my limbs.

(Y/N): *cough cough* you.... you said *cough cough* 4 games

MassOfThugs: 4 !!!!!!!!!!

Jhin: I did (Y/N)! That's why i didn't make it a kill shot! I missed all your vital organs

cough i was coughing a little bit of blood and the pain was unreal it was clear the anesthetics were not working anymore

Jhin: So i suggest we start a new game before you bleed out

And then with a flourish he threw away all the cards and put a big box on the table

Jhin: Time 4 some JENGA !

MassOfThugs: 4!!!!!!!!!

AKALI POV

SLAM

As i punched the wall everything around my fist broke you can see the parts of the stone wall falling with it still cracking away

Akali: THIS IS FUCKED UP !!!!!!!!!!

I was parked out of the latest warehouse that i just checked. I was looking at my phone in rage. (Y/N) just got shoot in his gut while these guy there were just cheering and then this bastards pull out a Jenga box like nothing just happened. I don't know what to do anymore... i checked 20 more warehouses but its impossible this city is just to big ! It will take even me more then three hours to check 1 city area and there were four of them....

(Y/N) POV

Jhin: So (Y/N) lets continue... you never answered my question

I was breathing heavily not only was i shot, i now had to move all around the table with these chains around me making them basically grind my skin like it was cheese. And this bastards wants me to talk with him !!! Shit shit shit i want to i want somebody to help me..... shit... ok lets not give him the satisfaction... just play it cool, somebody will find me

(Y/N): I...i... I feelt like shit...

I said as i pulled out a brick and delivered it on top... this was the last easy brick the rest will be complicated

Jhin: Ohhh i can imagine.

Then he turns to the camera pointing at me

Jhin: Imagine good citizens! Having a dream of being a teacher! And then everything getting destroyed by the only person you respect the most! HOW TRAGIC !!!!!!!!!!!!

And then with the flurry he pulled out a brick and delivered it on top.... it didn't even make the tower shake...

Jhin: Tell me (Y/N)! For what reason can you not teach ? I mean you know 5 languages next to the common one ? What is your problem.... *growl* tell them

I pulled out one of the bricks carefully doing everything to stop the shaking in my hands and to suppress the pain in my stomach... and mostly not to cry on the next words

(Y/N): I am a Gray

MassOfThugs: BOOOOOOOOOOOOOO!

ThugLady7: Kill the powerless!

Thug26: I don't want my children to be close to a Gray

And then i snapped

(Y/N): OH REALLY !!! How about having parents who enjoy cold blooded murder you sick motherfucker !

Jhin: HAHWWHAWAHHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHHAHAHAHAHAHHAHAHAHAHAHHA PERFECTION !!!!!!!!!!!

Then Jhin just pulled another brick and delivered it on top... its like the tower is set in stone when ever he touches it

Jhin:This is why you will be my masterpiece such fire !!!! Ahhh but i am getting ahead of myself then next question from me

(Y/N): No....no more

Jhin: Hmmmm ?

(Y/N): No more please... let me go... everything hurts

ThugLady 75: Oy oy is he crying ?

Thug13: Hahahah so pathetic

I didn't care anymore what they think about me if i cry... maybe somebody will feel bad and

Jaina: And there we go viewers he started to cry 36 min into the show lets see who won the bet!

Bet.... haha... they were betting on me to cry....

As i was finally able to pull a piece out and move my hand to the top Jhin spoke

Jhin: And tell me, what do you think about your high school girlfriend who left you in such a brutal way.

KAI'SA POV

CRASH

After that last question the Jenga tower crashed and (Y/N) was just standing there... and then

BANG!

(Y/N): *Aaaaaaaaaa*

Jaina: *OHHHhhhh Jhin wins again ladies and gentlemen ! Now we are off to number 3*

The mass of thugs was cheering in the back. But i was just watching silently... all of us were. I stooped crying when (Y/N) got shot for the first time... i was just to much in shock at that moment and guess i just forgot to continue

Ahri: (Y/N).... no.... stop

Ahri was mumbling next to me, you could see she was bad as me... she always becomes like this when something extremely bad happened. I remembered when we went to the funeral of Akali's parents and how she was comforting her with the same dead look in her eyes.

Evellyn: I will find them....

Eve was looking towards the TV with a face full of rage and anger she even crushed the phone in her hand during the first game and the parts were still all over the floor

Evellyn: I will find them all and kill them all... but first i will make them watch how i kill their children and parents... they will all suffer

(Y/N) POV

He shot me again!

How ! How does he know all of this !!!! This stuff i never told anybody before!!! Even Ekko and Yasuo don't know this! HOWWWWWWWW!... no wait impossible... can it be... no that would actually be ridiculous

(Y/N): *cough cough* ... stop..

Jhin: And that's shot number 2 (Y/N)... 2 more to go until we get to 4 !

MassOfThugs: 4 !!!!!!!!!!

Jhin: but now THE SHOW MUST GO ON !!!!

MassOfThugs: SHOW MUST GO ON !!!!

And then he sat on the table and one of the Thugs actually assisted me... more like forced me actually to be across Jhin

Jhin: No we are going with our fan favorite ! Let me hear you all say it ROCK !

MassOfThugs: PAPER !

Jhin:Scissors !

Fuck this... i don't care anymore... kill me... i wont play anymore i am done i just don't want to feel like this again, just kill me and end my suffering

Jhin: (Y/N)? Whats up with that look ? Don't tell me you are giving up

Jaina: OH NO! Ladies and Gentlemen looks like Mr. (Y/N) has finally had enough... looks like that the people who placed the bet until round 3 have won !!!

Fuck you are all sick... all of you... my whole life... my whole life i am suffering taking care of my siblings, working through discrimination, loosing my dream.... nothing ever good happened to it... there was one thing... i meet those girls

And then Jhin just bent over the table and whispered in my ear

Jhin: *whisper* I can see there is still al light of hope in your eyes... so let me tell you a secret. You are my last art of this type

(Y/N): Huh?

Jhin:*whisper* i am done with the powerless and i was depressed thinking on how you will be my last piece... but then i saw you at that dinner !

No.... NO NO NO NO

Jhin:*whisper* Once i am done with you, my new art will be focused on celebrities and idols... can you imagine... people who shine so bright during their life... what kind of beauty they will give during their death...

And then the whisper stooped

Jhin:
HahahahahaahahahahahaAHAHAHAHAHAHHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHHAHA.... huh ?

Jhin started laughing manically but then he just stooped and was staring at me, and then he was shacking in pleasure

Jhin: Yes.... YES.... THIS FACE THIS RAGE THAT YOU HAVE IN YOUR EYES THAT'S WHAT I WANTED TO SEE!!! ITS PERFECTION

MassOfThugs: PERFECTION!!!

LadyThug12: Look how mad he is hahahahah!

Thug: 39: Haha so pathetic haha he think he can actually do something

I understood what he meant completely... he was going to target the girls next maybe not them right away but for sure at one moment. I know it would be easier to give up and just die.... but hell if i am going down i am taking you with ME!

He kept me shocked the whole night from the very beginning not allowing me to have a moment of a clear mind... but we are done with that... you just fucked yourself up by telling me your gonna target celebrities and idols next... nobody will touch those 4

OK,OK... breathe think... imagine if this is a game... imagine if your playing a video game on your PC.... what would you do... how would you beat it.... think think.... for fuck sake i was able to beat that old Lion-King game nothing is harder compared to that... hmm the questions he keeps asking, could it be... there is only one way he can know about them.... fine lets test it

(Y/N): *gulp* *ahem* To answer your previous question... i hated her...

And then Jhin just turned to the camera again with a pose

Jhin: You see people !!! Again he suffers, do you know why because he is a powerless. His Highscholl Sweetheart left him after he took all of his

courage to confess to her his big dark secret! He was waiting for 4 hours

MassOfThugs: 4!!!!!!!!!!

Jhin: on a cold winter night surrounded by frost and snow for her... of course the young lady left him and even told everybody he ever know about his secret ! AND she even had the audacity to say that he raped her !!!

Hook, bait and catch

Jhin: Huh ?

Thug11: Huh why is he smiling ?

LadyThug80: I don't know maybe he snapped ?

(Y/N): Ok Jhin lets continue the game

Jhin then just sat across me at first he was looking at me silently but then he got back to normal

Jhin: Ok (Y/N) lets continue

(Y/N): May i ask a question now ?

Jhin: Why not ! Its only the right of art to know their artist, but lets continue the game as well And then he moved his hand back and i followed

Jhin: ROCK!

MassOfThugs: PAPER !

(Y/N): How do you feel about being a powerless yourself

And the whole room went quiet like time itself stooped

Yea sorry i overdid it again... but i don't want chapters to go over 3k words so see ya next time i promise next is the last for the Jhin Arc !!!

CHAPTER 23(Ohhhh, This Is Gonna Hurt)

OKKKK this is the climax ! I PROMISE! even if it takes 6000 words i will be done. I really planned this to be only 2 chapters... but when when you start you just cant stop. Also for some reason i couldn't enter the site for about 45min which was not so bad considering i was checking some stuff on rule 34... yea we all go there don't play dumb. Anyway time for the grand finale and again <u>THERE IS GOING TO BE ALLOT OF BLOOD AND GORE IN THIS CHAPTER</u>... be warned so skip if you are a snowflake....Oh and remember children don't push the goku button.

(Y/N) POV:

Jhin: What?

(Y/N): *grin* I am asking how does it feel to be a powerless ? Or do you maybe prefer Gray ? I actually like Gray more its kinda easier to say it.

Jhin: Wait... what are you talking about...

(Y/N): Ohhhh and when did you find out *cough*??? For me it was when i was 6 years old and my parents were crying at the doctors office... *sigh* i was unlucky to find out early usually they figure it out after 10 but for me it was 6 kinda ruins your childhood you know

Jhin: How.... how did...

I am taking you down with me YOU SICK SONOFABITCH !

(Y/N): Oh it was simple actually, when i finally calmed down... thank you*cough* for those words, actually pulled me out of the shock *cough*. I just needed to collect my thoughts a little and it all came to me.

Then i turned to the camera and it was my time to make a dramatic pose... FUUUUUUUUCK everything hurts and blood is flowing everywhere

(Y/N): Jaina !

She just flinched when i called her

(Y/N): Do you know of a site called Graybeard's hope ?

Jaina: Huh...

(Y/N): Try searching for it

She then started taping on her phone and i also presume it was showed on the stream

(Y/N): Do you notice anything strange on it ?

Jaina: Umm no.. its just a site for how to take care of your gray beard

(Y/N): Wow... no wonder you never made it in show businesses your an idiot

I actually heard a few people gasp at those words and some even went 'uuuuuuuuuu' which made my smile go from ear to ear... i am actually starting to like show biz

(Y/N): You see there is a hidden link on this page and it will take you to a secret site that is impossible to access any other way.

She was looking at me with wide eyes... you just need to click on the beard image but fuck it

(Y/N): No point in trying to click no anything the admins probably already removed the link how bout you hit the refresh button now

Then she started tapping something and by her reaction and gasps coming from the crowd i guess i was right... oh thank god i really didn't want to fuck somebody up

(Y/N): You see in this world is very strange, it has sorry pieces of shit like the '4 perfection'

MassOfThughs: 4 !!!!!!

(Y/N): OH can you all SHUT THE FUCK UP *cough cough*!!! Its fucking annoying you no life groupies ! I bet you all like to watch Dragonball: Evolution Live action movie you sick FUCKS *cough*!!!

Everyone was looking at me and i believe if they didn't have the masks i would see them with open mouths... hahaha.... oh god everything hurts (Y/N): Anyway that site is actually a place for powerless people. A place where they can ask for help, advice and talk about their problems

Jaina: What?

(Y/N): Can you keep up ? I am not going to explain everything two times because *cough* your slow in the head! Anyway one of the most popular threads is " This happened to me". You basically write a situation what happened to you because your a powerless.

And then i turned over to Jhin... i got you now you bastard

(Y/N): Ofc you know this Jhin... i watched your streams in the past... reminding myself of what kind of monster are in this world... and then thanks to that i remember every time there was no sound. You would win the game and kill the victim... so i assume you were fucking with my head like with theirs. *cough*

Jhin was just looking at me not making a move at all... good good keep up the bullshit i just need to convince everybody else that its true

(Y/N): So when you actually started asking me those questions i understood what was going on.... for my dream i was shocked... the people who knew about that were can be counted on one finger... but for my ex girlfriend... now that one was impossible unless you are someone who went to high school with me ! I was even more shocked when you described that night... i was the only one there with her... but then one little detail fucked you up !

Jhin was siting on the chair and not moving, and when i looked around i notice everybody was quiet and they didn't make a sound..... shit.... its getting a little dark on the side.. fuck stay awake

(Y/N): You see i wrote on the site my situation, lets be honest its always easier to tell a stranger your problems then somebody you know, especially on the internet... but we all also like spout bullshit and lies as well... She never said i raped her i wrote that only on the site because i was angry and wanted people to feel bad for me... so the only way that you could know that is if you can access the site... WHAT DO YOU SAY FOR YOURSELF! *cough*

Shit... that last part would have stayed cool if i didn't start coughing blood... OK now its all up to him... he can deny it and make some excuse saying he found it or he hacked it.... but i at least hope that some people are going to be dumb and ask questions...

Jhin: I d-d-dont know what you are talking about

Huh? Wait seriously it cant be this easy... its never this easy...

Jhin: I found out your past thanks to my powers !

(Y/N): Oh really ? And what is your power mind reading

Jhin: YES!

(Y/N): Ok what am i thinking

Jhin: What ever i say you will deny

(Y/N): Try me

Jhin: You are thinking on how to escape !

(Y/N): WRONG ! *cough* I am thinking on how much Kai'Sa ass is THICK and would use it as a pillow EVERY NIGHT *cough*

Oh GOD THE BULLSHIT!... actually i was thinking about that but still

Kai'Sa POV:

Evellyn and Ahri were looking at the TV and then to me and then back to TV ad then back to me...

(Y/N) POV:

Wow i felt something cold go through my spine now.

Thug 4: Ummm i can kinda believe that

LadyThug10: I am a girl and even i think that ass is fine

Thug61: mmmmmm that thick ass

Omfg it worked.... these people are dumb. I couldn't enjoy my victory since Jhin suddenly shoot me in the gut... shit of course its not going to be that easy

BAAM

(Y/N): AAAAAAAAAAGHHHHHHHHHHHHH

While i was screaming in pain he started laughing maniac

Jhin: YOU AREEE PERFECT!!!! YOU WILL BE MY MASTERPIECE FOR SURE SCREW THE 3RD ROUND WE ARE GOING FOR THE 4 ROUND !!!! AHAHHAHAHAHAHHAHAHAHAHHAHAHAHAHAH

MassOfThughs: 4!!!!!!!!!!!

cough cough my face was on the table.. it took everything i can not fall a sleep.... it will be very bad if i fall asleep i just know it... and these guys... they just ignored everything and got back to cheering for him.... was all of that work for nothing... did i not have a chance since the beginning

(Y/N): YOu.... son of a bitch... i had a chance....

Then he grabbed me by my hair and lifted me looking directly in my eyes Jhin: you se my dear dear (Y/N). This is why you are my last piece! All of the rest just broke down a few of them of course gave me a fight like you. They were smarter, stronger and more resourceful but you just have that spark !!!

Then he let me go and started walking around the table

Jhin: You make a good point really you do... but i told you my power

And its bullshit you son of a bitch you just lucky they are dumb enough to believe you and they are fanatics

Jhin: And now when we are at the climax of this nigh i believe its time for us to start... ah this is just perfect, i made everything perfect. I did so much research ever since you got you on my sight! I was waiting for you to get happy then i only needed to wait for you to hit rock bottom despair ! Which you did by yourself last night AHahahahhah.

Mothrfucker... he was following me for who know how long

Jhin: So where better to die, then a place where it all started ! Now as we start our final round...

(Y/N): *cough cough* i need to say something

Jhin: Huh ?

I just grinned and looked towards the camera while trying to raise my self up

(Y/N): Pou*cough cough*....Poughkeepsie

YASUO POV

CRASH

Both me and Ekko jumped and screamed at the same time

Yasuo & Ekko; WHAT DID HE SAY!!!!!!!!!

Senna and Quiana jumped back in shock at our reaction

Senna: Umm he said something about Poug... ee i cant really

Ekko; It's here... something this guy said !

Yasuo: YES!!!! OK think

Quiana: Whats wrong with you guys suddenly !

Ekko: Well when we were hanging out together we loved to go for lLarps ! And we would spend our time actually practicing sword fighting and weapon beating and stuff like that... don't look at me like that woman ! Larping is cool !

Yasuo: Anyway Poughkeepsie was our safe word when we wanted to stop fighting its kinda hard to know when somebody had enough if he is role playing pain half of the time

Senna was looking at us like we are morons

Senna; What kind of a moron chooses that as a safe word

And then Quiana just made a smile and jumped up with us

Quiana: JHIN SAID SOMETHING DIDN'T HE !!!! That's why he said it to draw your guys attention

Ekko; HAHAHAH this motherfucker !!!!! He got him !!! Yasuo i am calling AKALI !!!! Try to think what this bastard said

Shit..... what did he say! Think, think....

(Y/N) POV

Jhin: Russian-Roulette !

He said as he slammed the his gun on the table in front of us.... shit... i hope those two guys really get it ! I better try to buy some time...

(Y/N): Jhin i would like to ask a little more about you

Jhin: Oh ?

Ok ok just breathe feed his ego make him speak make him waste time ! ... crap everything is getting dark NO STAY AWAKE!!!

(Y/N): *cough cough* What made... you decide.. *cough cough* of hunting the powerless

His mass of followers just started screaming shit about scum and weak but i know it was not that... this guy is a powerless himself... so why

Jhin: Haha well cant you see ! Its because powerless are blank !

(Y/N): *cough* what ?

Jhin: Abilities are something that have been present from the creation of time ! No mater if your a human, vastaya, demon or angelic you will have powers !

(Y/N): *cough i am not following you*

Good he loves talking about his art just make him focus on that don't give me a chance to think about the game.... shit i am starting to lose feeling in my legs... i lost to much blood already

Jhin: And then you have powerless!!! They don't have anything of that ! The are you unique!

(Y/N): *cough* Then why ?

Jhin: Because when i see a person i see a canvas that is already marked and filthy ! But when i see a powerless i see a empty canvas completely white

and ready for me to do my art!

(Y/N): Then.... *cough* what about the thing you said to me.... that when you are done with me that you will change your type

And then he just looked towards me and i can see in his eyes.... those eyes are wrong

Jhin: Its simple i just got bored drawing on a empty canvas i want to try fixing a dirtied one! And what better then th...

(Y/N): Your fucked up....

Jhin: Hmm ?

(Y/N): Your one sick mother fucker *cough* and to tell you the truth i don't want you to die. I want you to live and suffer for the rest of your life *cough*

Jhin: Hahahaha is that so ! Very well you have your chance now my dear (Y/N)

Then he sat in front of me, took his gun and put one bullet inside

slam

Jhin: Maybe you will get lucky !

And spun it around.... SHIT my luck is bad.... fucking hell. And to confirm my thought the gun was pointing at me.....

Jhin: Come (Y/N) show me your spark ! Point that gun in your head and lets test our bravado!!! FOR PERFECTION !!!

And then they all started chanting

MassOfThugs: FOR PERFECTION !!!!

Jhin: FOR PERFECTION !!!

I was holding the gun in my hand looking at it with my hand shaking....

Jaina: FOR PERFECTION !!!

MassOfThugs: FOR PERFECTION !!!

Jhin: COMM ON (Y/N)!!!! SHOW ME!!! SHOW ME THAT BRAVADO YOU HAD A FEW MINUTES AGO SHOW ME YOUR SPARK!!! SHOW ME THAT PERFECTION!!!! I WANT TO CAPTURE A PERFECT MOMENT !!!!!

Every single fiber of my body was screaming in pain from the wounds! I was scared and i was angry. I was angry on this bastard, i was angry on the thugs, on Jaina... on my family on my friends... on the girls. Nobody was coming nobody was going to save me!... but i was also scared... that when i die... this bastard will target them next....

I knew he had no chance against them, they were amazingly strong and... i do say they were monsters hahaha. I bet any one of them can kick the ass of every single bastards in this room... but i guess i was just scared that i will die... and they will still hate me... fuck i only wanted to make that night special

I knew something was wrong from the very beginning but i kept going... i noticed even in the morning that i sounded wrong and fake... i guess... i was even doing it on purpose... its easier to leave them if they hate me... but still i kinda hoped... fuck it

Click.... huh... *Click* *Click* *Click*... why... why does it not fire

MassOfThugs:.....

Jaina:....

Jhin: That's no good (Y/N)

I was pointing the gun at Jhin... *click click click* but no mater how many times i pressed the trigger it just didn't fire... the round magazine was moving but... and then Jhin just took the gun from my arm

Jhin: You forgot to remove the safety

... really... one of the biggest movie clich..... and then i was flying back...

thud

As i fell to the floor my vision was going blurry and i could feel the blood coming from my nose non stop... the only reason i didn't hit the giant double doors behind me was because the chains actually yanked me about 1m before... and then Jhin was above me and the hand of his pistol was bloody... i guess he used it to smash me on the face....

Jhin: I really hoped you would show me your spark (Y/N)

Then he just grabbed my shirt and pulled me in a siting position while my eye was directly looking at the gun pipe... its like staring in a infinite darkness

brm

Jhin: I will at least make you into a work of art....

Brrrrmmm

Jhin: You will be my masterpiece bringing the curtains close on my powerless collection

BRRRRRMMMM

Jhin: Hmmm what is that soun....

BRRRRRRRRRRRRRMMMMMMMMMMMMMMMMMMMMMMMMMMMM *CRASH*

I was just thinking how people have said that some moments in their lives actually played out in slow motion.... i always thought those people were dramatic... but now... was having the same moment.

In my eyes Jhin was flying back slowly with a bike tire going full spinning speed over his mask! And then the mask broke and everything returned to real time sending him soaring through the sky and into the boxes in the corner

CRASH *BRRRMMM * *CRASH*

Then the bike did a full drift brake stop in the middle of the room almost knocking down the table.... it cant be

(Y/N): No....

The person just got of the bike and removed its helmet... and it was Akali... i could recognize that backside... i mean back from anywhere.. i couldn't see her face because she was turned away from me.

As soon as she got of her bike two two thugs approached her one from the front who grabbed the front of the bike and the other from behind who grabbed her on her shoulder... no (Y/N): Noo... *cough cough* Akali no *cough* run away

I was scared... i was hoping that they will come to save me... but when i see her alone in the middle of all of these monsters... it sends fear to my spine... no

Thug26: Hey lady... what do you think you are doing ?

Thug66: Hey turn around let me see your pretty face..... GUHAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA

The guy just flowed next to me directly to the wall *THUD... CRACK*

When i looked towards him i saw the place that he crashed onto the wall actually made it crack... and then he just slid down leaving a trail of blood and his neck bent in a wrong way.... oh

When i returned my gaze to Akali her she was standing still still in her position with the top of her arm raised upwards.... Did she just just Bruce Lee this guy.... holy shit

Thug26: Wha....wha wha wha

The guy who was on the front of her bike suddenly started backing off and i think he actually touched something and turned on her radio in full power...

(OK THIS was just perfect... i actually remember this song and the name was epic for it i hope you enjoy while you read the next part... and heads up body parts start flying now
and i dont own this song i just think its epic)

https://youtu.be/DYEXPn9e9ac

(Y/N): *cough cough*Ohhhhh, This is Gonna Hurt

And then Akali finally turned around and i can see her face.... and i thought Ahri was scary

Cracking Knuckles

Akali: You are all going to die here

ThugLady5: GET HER !!!!

And then all hell broke loose

*CRASH, SLASH, BAM, SMACK, PEW PEW PEW (**Had to)**, WHOSH)

In a eye blink Akali was gone she was moving extremely fast slashing on people, throwing kunais at them and breaking body parts. First i saw some two idiots who thought that jumping on her would be smart..... it was not. She did a spinning kick getting both of the to fly to the top of the wall.... one of the guy actually exploded from the impact and the other one didn't get up after falling to the floor.

Then some bitch tried to slash her with a crowbar which Akali just grabbed, removed it from her hand and slammed it up her..... oh wow, OK i am erasing this from my memory i already watched silent hill

Then this guy lifted a giant crate to slam atop of her which made him completely exposed and she just slashed him with her scythes from the face to the crotch which made his entrails fall out... and i am not hungry anymore

Then 2 bastards and 1 bitch jumped ran at her at the same time probably hoping to grab her from three sides, which she just evaded by steeping around them and then in one spinning motion with a slash of her Scythe cut of all three heads... ok that was little scary

Apparently some idiot finally remembered that he has powers and he started throwing energy balls at her like from those old games with bad sound effects. She just speed walked between all the shots evading everything by a margin and did a open hand uppercut... the guys jaw look like it was from a cartoon.... ok i have to say that one was impressive.

Then some bitch who by my calculation had about 250kg started charging into her like a sumo wrestler i was sure Akali was going to dodge but she just bend her knees an.... what the fuck

ThugLady: H-h-h-h-ey let me down !!!!

She was holding her above her... she WAS FREAKING HOLDING HER ABOVE HER WHAT THE FUCK! What is this strengths !!! I am never carrying the fucking groceries ever again !

Akali: OK, but lets go for a spin first

Then she grabbed her for her upper jaw... her four fingers were in the moth and the thumb was in the nose. She started spinning while holding her, like that knocking about 20 idiots away from her and then just slammed her on top of some random two bitches.... never again.... will i piss her off

LadyThug77: WHY ARE YOU ATTACKING IN GROUP AND ONE BY ONE !!! ALL OF YOU TOGETHER !

Oh somebody has a brain... but that didn't help since she just threw smoke bombs and even i couldn't see anymore what was going.... but i could hear

????: NOOO STOP!!!

?????: GAAAAAAH PLEASE DONT

????: I AM SORRY!!!! PLEASE AAAA

????: NO NO GET AWAY I WANT MY MOM!

Jaina: M-m-monster!

I looked to the side and saw Jaina standing there in complete shock.. hm whats that smell

(Y/N): Umm Jaina *cough*... i think the bathroom is over there*cough*

She snapped her head towards me with a glare but just suddenly made a sweet smile

Jaina: O-o-o-oh i am so glad you are ok (Y/N) i was so worried

Nani?

(Y/N): You *cough* don't say

Jaina: Of course i was so worried! Good thing i was streaming it ! Its thanks to me that they found you

I couldn't believe the words of this bitch... did she really think i would fall for something like that

Then suddenly something rolled between us and it was the head of one of her cameramen actually.... is that his dick inside of his mouth.... i am DEFINITELY scared now. But nothing compared to Jaina who was just screamed in fear... it took her about 30 sec to get her composure back until she looked towards me

Jaina: You know (Y/N)

And then she unbuttoned the top of her shirt and started getting close to me

Jaina: I was doing all of this for you... i think you can forgive me cant you... and you can tell to your friend to let me go

She started moving her hand towards my face... i wanted to brake it and spit in her face but i couldn't move my arms anymore even siting was taking all of my strength

WHOSH

Jaina: Ah... aaaahhh... AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAaa

A Kunai flew in front of me and cut off the two crossest of her finger's that were next my face, then i turned to the side... and i just gulped *GULP*

The smokescreen just disappeared and the only one standing was a completely blood soaked Akali . You couldn't see the floor because all around her were dead bodies and body parts... she didn't even have a scratch on her.... and i made her mad last night...

Then she just started speaking in a quiet voice that would make even a tiger run for the hills

Akali: Don't you dare touch our (Y/N) with your filthy hands!

... THEIRS !

Jaina: Hiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiii !

Jaina just shrieked in fear and ran through the exit.... huh ! Why she letting her go !?

Akali: (Y/N)....

Then i turned and saw Akali looking at me, that face of rage was gone and she was bordering of crying... hah Akali crying is something i thought i would never see... i will not corrupt that face with tears... lets try to be fine

(Y/N): *cough cough* Why hi there my hero ! If i knew my hero would be *cough cough* so good looking *cough cough* i would have *cough cough

cough* gotten captu*cough cough cough COUGH COUGH*

Akali: (Y/N) STAY WITH ME (Y/N) !!!!!!

She was holding me while tears were going down her eyes... ah crap... i fucked up.... then i took every ounce of my strength every fiber of my body... every last spark of will to lift this damn hand of mine

(Y/N): He....ey don't cry..... and... i am... sorry. You girls.... are my world *smile*

And again.... everything went dark

Jaina POV

HUFF HUFF

Jaina: That girl is not human... she is a monster.... no no no run away.....

I was running away from the warehouse in speed while holding my bleeding arm i just had to make it to the buss station and i will be ok... just a few more blocks and i will be good.

Jaina: He he he i hit a jack pot !

The policy actually had some talented people on their force. They were not able to stop the broadcast completely but just enough to weaken the signal so its not broadcasted out of the south area... but its ok... i had a spare !!!

I was carrying a tape of the tonight's show that i secretly took!

Jaina: This tape is going to be a ticket to fame and fortune hahahahah ????: No its not

SLASH

Jaina: AGhhhhhhhhhhhhh

I was on the floor. I was twitching and screaming in pain! As i turned and saw that my legs from knee down were missing.... and then i saw that....

Evellyn: Did you really think... we would let you go

It was Evellyn the diva of the KD/A... it was like the void it self spat her out because it was afraid of her.

I tried to crawl away sobbing and screaming in pain until something fell down on my hand... it was a giant blade attached to the tail.

Evellyn: How dare you to our (Y/N)... how dare you touch MY darling... i will make you suffer and then i will make everyone you cared about ever suffer and die...

And then her claws suddenly extended the lamps around us were losing their light.... ah i was wrong....Akali is not the monster.... Evellyn is

SLASH

Camilla POV :

Barfing sound

Officer: GUahhh

I am currently standing in front of the warehouse that is located behind the concert hall... apparently at one moment we got a call from somebody named Ekko that told us Jhin was located here... According to him this is where Mister (L/N) had his life changed here during the night that KD/A had their concert...

I have no idea how they got to that conclusion but apparently he explained that Mister (L/N) told him on the stream... what ever that means

Officer: OMG !!! GUAAGUGH

Every officer that went inside was coming out barfing in full power... i could understand if it was rookies since they don't have a stomach for this but some of these people were veterans...

Officer: Mam *gulp* i really suggest you don't go in there.... its not pretty

I just raised an eyebrow... the stream stooped after that person with the bike crashed in through the door... we are playing it dumb but i have a feeling i know who it is

Camilla: Nonsense

.... I should have listened to him this is a massacre... there were bodies everywhere... and when i do say everywhere i mean everywhere! There wasn't a single empty spot on the floor and 90% of the walls is cracked and red with blood.... and then saw that thing in the middle. Even though i had 35 years on the force i wanted to spit my last nights dinner...

Jhin was there... He was dangling from those chains that mister (L/N) has been trapped in... both of his arms and legs were missing... his face was.... that's just wrong. Half of his lower jaw gone, both of his ears were ripped off... not cut of ripped off... and his left eye looked like somebody used a hammer and bashed it in... when i got close...

Camilla: Oh god the smell

I saw writing on his chest

**For all bastards of the 4 perfection!*
Don't you dare touch our family again !
Or we will find you!
*And make you suffer ! **

Officer: Mam..... what is this

Camille: Its a warning.... take a picture of this and give to the press !

Officer: Wha-whawha what !

There is no choice... its going to take me at least 2 weeks to get the stragglers from the group

ForensicOfficer: OMG *barf*... there are bodies of children here....

Camille: *TCH* just do it !

I am not doing this for (Y/N)'s sake... this is for the city... i don't even want to imagine what would happen if something like this happens again..... i still remember the body i saw before i came here... it was a corpse without the skin dangling from the lamp post with her entrails. I know it was her because there was a wallet with documents... it was another message

Officer: MAM!!!!!!!!!!

Camille: What ?

Officer: Mam... Jhin... Jhin is alive ! !!

... I hate my job

WOW... this arc took such a freaking long time !!! I wanted this to be only 1 or 2 chapters but man..... Plus this chapter was supposed to be out like 4 hours ago but wattpad was not working for me and i had a Legion TD Mega game at 8. Anyway sorry for the delay and see you on the next one... maybe il drop one small one before i go to sleep

CHAPTER 24 (We will not leave you... i promise...)

OK do you people ever sleep ! When i published the chapter late last night i went to get a coke and after about 30 sec that i took me to go to the kitchen and back to my laptop there were already people viewing it apparently XD

(Y/N) POV:

NO no no no!!! I was running through a dark hallway in panic

THUD THUD

(Y/N): HELP!!! OPEN UP !!!!

It was no use what ever door i banged on, or what ever door i tried to open nothing was happening... and then i heard footsteps behind me which made every fiber of my body freeze in fear. As i turned i saw 'that' directly in front of me just inches away from my face...then it spoke in a voice voice like it was from the void itself

Jhin: ***Would you like a rose?***

BAM

END OF DREAM

I opened my eyes in shock and it took everything i got not to scream... at first i wanted to move but it was extremely hard... it was like when you fall asleep on your arm and you cant move it the way you want no matter how much you try...I was staring at the white ceiling for some time until i finally decided to pay attention to my surroundings. I was in a white green room... and i knew this smell it smelled like medical drugs... i guess i was in the hospital.

????: OMG ! Your finally wake !

When i turned my head i saw a lady that was dressed in a nurse outfit, I didn't even get a chance to ask her where exactly am i before she started yelling

Nurse: Doctor !!!! The patient in room 2 is AWAKE !!!!!

.... why does she sounds so loud.... what happened

TIMESKIP

The doctor did a full check up on me, from poking, to touching, to shining that annoying light in my eyes and even pulling my tongue out and wiggling it.... if he was going to touch my little friend next we are going to have a problem

(Y/N): Grmlawmlgagls

Shen: What ?

He then finally released my tongue

(Y/N): *cough* I said is everything fine Dr. Shen ?

Dr. Shen: Ah yes yes and just Shen is fine. All is good, you are going to be sore a few more days from laying in a bed for 6 weeks but you should be

fine...

Apparently i was in a coma for 6 weeks after that nightmare with Jhin. I was brought in by the Akali right that morning and was put directly into surgery... apparently that monster really did miss all my vital organs like he said and the only true dmg is going to be scars from the bullet wounds and the chains who were cutting into my limbs.....

Shen: Listen (Y/N).... what you went through.... its not easy. Even though you were given the best care possible and even though people with healing powers were used to speed up recovery... we cant heal mental dmg

He also told me during the check up that all my bills were payed and that he was ordered to get me the best possible care that money can buy... he even mentioned how a certain fox actually busted into the surgery room and it took 10 people to force her out.

Shen: I know how this sounds... but i suggest we get you a psica....

(Y/N): No need Shen... i am fine really. I feel amazing i just want to go !..

I lied.....

He just gave me a frown but sighted and nodded his head

Shen: OK i will then call the number that they gave me....

????: There is no need for that

Huh ? I looked towards the door and i saw a older lady.... with blades instead of her legs.. wow kinky

Shen: Chief Officer Camilla i hope you...

Camilla: After i have a talk with mister (L/N) i will take him with me...

He just sighted and put a hand on my shoulder

Shen: If something happens, some pain or even just a sneeze call me... il get the papers ready

(Y/N): Thanks Dr.Shen.... but no need for so much

Shen: Haaa... tell that to the scary lady with pretty eyes

..... yep Evellyn scared the shit out of him.... hehehe.... i guess they feel somewhat responsible. Then Camille came and sat in front of me

Camille: Mister (L/N) i would like to apologize...

(Y/N): Fuck you !

She looked shocked at me... and to tell you the truth even i was shocked.... i was pissed ! I was so fucking mad.... they left me... the so called police left me... Akali had to save me... Akali was in danger because of them... Akali was in danger because of me.... fuck... and the still hate me

(Y/N):No... i am sorry...

Camille: *sigh* Its ok... smoke ?

(Y/N): OH YES PLEASE !!!!!!!!!!!!!

I lighted a cigarette that she offered... i didn't even care it was the hospital i just needed this to make me feel good and this smoke was divine !!!

Camille: '4 perfection' has been destroyed, out of the members that it had 235 are dead most of them from the warehouse and some resisting arrest, while the other are all behind bars serving from 35 to life. The numbers are in thousands the jail is full up to the brink.... i even heard they are talking of banishing a few of them to the void....

I don't remember so many of them being there.... is she sure

(Y/N):I see... i am just glad that monster is dead

Camille: Jhin is not dead...

NOT DEAD... HOW IS HE NOT DEAD.... WHY IS HE ALIVE HE CANT BE ALIVE HE WILL FIND ME

Camille: MISTER (L/N) CALM DOWN!!! Do you hear me (Y/N) its fine !!! He can never hurt you again !!!!

I was having a full on panic attack and it took about 15 min of Officer Camille telling me that he will never hurt me again for it to finally stop... why.... why was he still alive !!!!

(Y/N): Sorry.... i-i-I just cant yet

Camille: Its fine... i understand... the reason i want to talk to you again is because in need your cooperation !

(Y/N): Sorry ?

Camille: Even though the stream was on public net. We were able to limit the damage somehow! It was not streamed out of the south area of Piltover, and the number of viewers was luckily small barely 2k...

(Y/N): So you want me to keep quiet.....

Camille: .... Yes... we will appreciate it... the world thinks that the massacre in the warehouse was done by some crazed ex champion who had a vendetta with them. Even the photo we leaked only sent a specific warning without any details...

I was actually upset... they were going to keep this quiet....

Camille: I can imagine you are upset... and i am not asking for a favor i am asking for a deal... i will not arrest miss Akali and miss Evellyn if you agree to keep quiet

(Y/N): WHAT ! But she saved me !!! And why Evellyn !!!

Camille: And what do you think this will do to their image !?

Shit... she was right... if it ever came out Akali did something like this.... they will be ruined..... FUCK!... but what did Evellyn do

(Y/N): Ummm.... what did Evellyn...

Camilla: Its better if you don't know

GULP!..... fine

(Y/N): Fine.... but this never goes back to them.... in any way possible they are not be held responsible in any way and i want all records of their name erased

Camille: Deal ! Now get dressed il take you away. We are going to the penthouse where the KDA is right ?

(Y/N): No... we are going to the bus-station

TIMESKIP

I just got out of the car by being assisted by Officer Vi, apparently she came with Camille and i was thankful since i couldn't move by myself yet. Even though i got clutches from the hospital i still needed help getting up or sitting down. I wanted to leave the city right away but first i needed to do something

(Y/N):Il be back in a few min... i just need to talk to someone

When i made it inside the building and told the receptionist who i was I didn't even need to wait 1 min until i was escorted to the Elevator. When the i finally reached the floor where i was told to go i was greeted by Mundo:

Mundo: Hello (Y/N), Mundo is happy you finally woke up

(Y/N): Hello Mr.Mundo and yes thank you

Mundo: Ok (Y/N), sit down and Mundo going to make you some coffee

(Y/N): I would love some coffee but if i sit i wont be able to get up

Mundo: Hmm very well, then coffee it is and let me call the girls...

(Y/N): NO! Don't call them

Mundo just raised an eyebrow

(Y/N):They don't know i am awake. I am planing to leave before they find out

Mundo: Mundo said this before (Y/N), but you have a tendency to make Mundo confused

I know what he meant... but i just cant... i cant see them.... i don't want them to look at me with those eyes... the eyes they were giving me during dinner

(Y/N): Listen... i am leaving for my home town

Mundo:OK, let Mundo bring you some coffee and sit down please, Mundo going to call his receptionist and they going to tell your drivers that you will take a longer time. This at least you can do for Mundo.

Sigh i guess there is not way out of this... i let him help me sit and i waited for about 10 min until he was back... omg this coffee taste soo good!!! I missed coffee so much

Mundo: Now explain to Mundo why you leaving

(Y/N): I don't know how much you heard....

Mundo: Mundo watched the stream.... Mundo is sorry (Y/N) it must have hurt

(Y/N): Thank you... anyway i cant stay here not because of .... *gulp* because of the girls.... that night before i tried to make it special but i fucked up... and now they hate me... even though Akali saved me... i am sure she just did it out of her kindness....

So i just want to leave... i don't want to go there and find out that they still hate me... and the only reason they helped me was because they felt

responsible. Then i just closed my eyes and let my head rest on the sofa

(Y/N): See ya i am going... will probably never come back and i want you to tell the girls i am sorry and that my time with them was the happiest in my life..... Mundo..... you listening to me?

As i opened my eyes i saw that his chair was just spinning and there was nobody there.....

(Y/N): How the fuck did... how the fuck did he disapar like that

????: Apparently he has a mastery !?!

..... oh shit that voice made me want to pee myself. As i turned my head all the girls were behind me... Ahri was the one who spoke and man..... did she look mad... all her tails were out and her hands were on her hips.

Evellyn was standing on her right and she just had her arms crossed over her breast.... the look she was giving me was a thing of nightmares.

On Ahri's left was Kai'Sa with her hands just hanging on the side with her fists closed .... wow.....she could give Evellyn a run for the money with the way she was shooting daggers with hey eyes

Then i just looked forward and saw Akali siting in Mundo's chair... she was cleaning her nails with her kunai while looking at my face without blinking

MUNDO POV:

Mundo is sorry (Y/N)... but Mundo not crazy to stay quiet about this, even Mundo knows not to fuck with the girls... that's why Mundo call them when he went to make coffee... good thing to because Ahri was screaming on the phone! The hospital already informed them (Y/N) was awake and gone and they were searching for him... (Y/N) is very stupid some times so Mundo hopes this helps... i hope Mundo doesn't need to call somebody

(Y/N) POV:

That look... i wanted to run i didn't want to hear how they hate me... no please don't make me hear it. As i tried to get up i fell down right away... SHIT i cant move alone !!!

I tried to move my hand to the walking clutches but they were removed from my reach by Ahri, then i tried to use sofa as the support but Kai'Sa just grabbed my shoulders from behind and forced me down. And before i could think of anything else Akali sat next to me and stabbed her kunai between my legs, and the just slowly pulled it out while looking directly at me

And then i saw Evellyn she was just standing in front of me with the angriest look i have ever seen

(Y/N): Ummmmm... girls.... il just get up and

SLAP

.... Evellyn just slapped me

(Y/N): You...y-y-y-you will never see me.....

SLAP

Again... no i just wanted to leave.... please don't make me suffer.... don't tell me those things again.... please don't look at me with....

And before i could finish and as i was feeling tear's form in my eyes from... Evellyn hugged me...

(Y/N):Huh

She was holding me so forcefully it was starting to hurt.... but she felt and smelled so nice. After about 2 min she finally let me go... and then Kai'Sa was in front of me

SLAP SLAP SLAP SLAP

She did 4 slaps in full power that actually made my neck crack a little.... holy shi.....And then her lips were on mine and she just pushed her tongue

in without giving me a chance to retaliate. I was for about 1 min at her complete mercy.

And then it was Ahri's turn

SLAP SLAP SLAP SLAP SLAP SLAP SLAP SLAP SLAP SLAP SLAP SLAP SLAP SLAP SLAP SLAP SLAP SLAP SLAP SLAP

Holy SHIT ! She went crazy she even screamed in my face half way... when she finally stooped my cheeks for so red and screaming in pain. I seriously wanted to cry. Before i could even word anything or actually tell her to back of she started kissing me cheeks and even through in a few kisses to my mouth...

And there was Akali... oh god not again

(Y/N): Ok no... this is....

Akali: *sob*

She was crying.... she was standing in front of me and crying in full without holding back at all... and then she just fell and put her head in my lap

Akali: *sob*You stupid motherfucker... why didn't you tell us *sob*

(Y/N):Akali....

Akali: Do you have any idea *sob* how we felt.... do you have any idea how it was when we saw that stream*sob*

(Y/N): Akali... i didn't want to

Akali: You were on floor all bloody in chains *sob* with that monster *sob*

I looked and i saw that even Kai'Sa was in tears now

AkalI: And then that son of a bitch SHOT YOU !!! WE THOUGHT YOU WERE DEAD... *sob* and then he just continued torturing you... and we

couldn't do SHIT!!!!!

(Y/N): Akali... there was no other way that guy...

Akali: And... and... and when it was all done and i thought i saved you finally.... you just fell and closed your eyes!!!!!!

Evellyn: You were bleeding... you were hurt... and we couldn't help in any way

Ahri: And the last things... the last things we told you....

(Y/N):..... i am sorry...

*SLAP SLAP * Kai'Sa then again slapped me in full power... omg i don't feel my cheeks anymore

Kai'Sa: DID YOU ACT LIKE THAT ON PURPOSE !!!!! DID YOU WANT US TO HATE YOU !!!! TELL ME !!!!!!!

(Y/N): Actually no... at first i wanted just to make that night special... but as i saw how you guys were getting upset... i decided to continue pushing.... to make you hate me... to make it easier

Ahri: Easier for who (Y/N)!

... i just looked away from Ahri but she just grabbed my face and made me look at her... she was very angry

Ahri: ANSWER ME !!!!

(Y/N): Easier for me....

Evellyn: YOU SON OF A BITCH!!!

Evellyn just raised her hand and was about to hit me but i just lashed out in rage...

(Y/N): YES FOR ME !!! EASIER FOR ME TO DIE !!!!!!!!

Evellyn actually stooped with a shocked face

(Y/N): DO YOU HAVE ANY IDEA HOW IT FEELS!!!!!!! TO FINALLY FIND HAPPINESS AND HAVE IT TAKEN AWAY FROM YOU !!!!!

I was screaming i couldn't hold it in... everything was coming out

Ahri: (Y/N)....

(Y/N): My whole FUCKING LIFE was a disaster! Do you have any idea how it feels !!!! To have your mother leave you because you are powerless !!! I keep telling myself because..... its because of my brother BUT ITS NOT !

Kai'Sa: (Y/N) you dont...

(Y/N): THEN I GET A NEW FAMILY AND MY SISTERS DON'T EVEN WANT TO LOOK AT ME IN THE FACE BECAUSE THEY KNOW WHAT I AM! MY STEP-MOTHER MEANS WELL BUT SHE TREATS ME LIKE I AM SOME ENGENDERED SPECIES

all my life... just all my life

(Y/N): THEN MY DREAM GETS DESTROYED BY THE ONE PERSON I EVER RESPECTED AND MY TWO ONLY FRIENDS CAN ONLY VISIT ME 2 A YEAR IF WE ARE LUCKY

Shit... just stop... shit

(Y/N):And then i meet you four...

Evellyn:Darling.... you?

(Y/N): And you turn my nightmare into a dream come true. And then some FUCKING PSYCHOPATHIC BASTARDS COMES IN AND TRIES TO TAKE IT AWAY!!!!!!!

thud

Ahri was just in my lap hugging me...

Ahri: Its OK... We will not leave you... i promise...

... those words.... those words were the only ones i wanted to hear..... they... they don't hate me... i don't have to leave.... i can stay happy

Akali: But if you ever do shit like this! Thinking it will be easier for us

Evellyn: *growling* I will tie you down to my bed personally and not even let you go to the bathroom!

.... OK that sounded kinky ! And the Kai'Sa grabbed my face with both of her hands and turned towards her

Kai'Sa: So how about we go home now.... *blush* and il let you use my t-t-thic ass as a pillow

.....oh..... OOOHHHHH.... YAY !

Ahri: Ummmm (Y/N)... something is poking me down there ...

Oh crap ! BASEBALL GRANDMA SAD KITTENS

I believe i can say this is the end to the Jhin Arc... up next intro and pics on some of our side characters and a few words from me

A word from me, and side charter's part2

Well..... thank you all for staying with me up until now, i appreciate all your support and your feedback. I know my writing tends to be bad some times and i know i like to keep to my principals and ideas without even thinking in some situations.

I actually tried to write a fantasy book about 2 years ago, but because of my job i just stooped at 1/4 of it... plus the editing omg! its so annoying i understand now why they hire professional editors makes your life so much easy. But i also understand it is necessary to check every thing yourself! Cant tell you how many times already i write the whole chapter up, Then do one final check from the beginning to the end and i find out i changed about 2/4 of it. And then one more check and then again i change something up

First off i would like to apologize for this Jhin arc.... it kinda went much longer then i expected something that was supposed to be only 2 chapters grew into something much bigger, i am actually satisfied with how it went in the end i really hopped you guys enjoyed it.

And now i come to a part that is probably going to make some of you hate me and maybe stop reading completely... i **will not give the (Y/N) powers ! And more on that in a minute**

These past 2 days i got allot of good feedback since more and more people are reading. I love when i see comments be it funny, spelling corrections or just your general opinion on something it makes me smile and it helps me grow so keep them coming.

I also got a few pm messages and allot of questions from different people, so i will try to answer them now in this publish

A good very good number of them are "will (Y/N) get powers" and the answer is up there... but let me say again its **NO**. He will not get powers he will not learn martial arts from Chuck Norris he will not suddenly become smart like L or Kira and he will definitely not be a ....demi-god.... how the

hell did you even come to that conclusion... I am sorry for those who like to read stories with OP characters but this is not it.

One guy send me such a angry message why did he get saved he should have killed them all by himself or should have did some crazy smart thing and tricked them all! Yea... NO! He did technically tricked Jhin into revealing his location but it was partly do luck and it was not some crazy plan i thought of 10 moves advance he wanted to do one thing but in the end he was able to get something else... it was a smart thing to do but nothing on a IQ level 200. I mean the story IS called Just My Luck

I want my MC to be a powerless normal person... well normal as you can be with so much emotional trauma that he went through his childhood. One guy even gave a good question
" He is 27 right ? Isn't he kinda week minded when dealing with the girls" yes yes he is and i believe it works amazingly with his backstory and the direction this story is going. There is reason why they say that emotional scars take a lifetime to heal. Some people are just mature when it comes to different part of lives, but innocent and childish when it comes to other.

I mean one example would be my previous boss. He was my Rest. Manager on a cruise ship from South Africa. The guy was called the 'nut buster' because when it was work or buisnies related he would destroy everything around him, he would fire a pregnant lady without a second thought (he actually did once....). But he joined a few of us on game night (Ups, Sorry! Jenga! Monopoli) he would turn into a little child because he never had friends in his younger days to play these games with.

I read allot of different story's up until now and the one thing i never liked and will always hate how a character suddenly changes completely in 2-3 chapters... it doesn't work like that. I actually remember one RWBY fan fiction i red a couple of days before. First few chapters i found it AMAZING! Really the (Y/N) of that story was a perfect fit for me!!! And then after half a chapter he became a goody goody two shoes and his personality changed..... yea i don't want that. Or someone starts weak and timid and suddenly he is a fighting expert beating up guys like it was nothing....

The (Y/N) in this story will of course grow as a character. I guess some of you already noticed that he is not stuttering anymore so much when ever he meats new people, and it takes allot less for him to talk back but that all comes with time.

I believe those who have been reading that in this world if you have power and fame you can do what ever you want. I mean come on Evellyn just murdered about 100 children and the police is still willing to let it go simply because her fame is over the top and she can destroy 1/4 of the city in one night.

Now some off you are probably wondering why are the girls so strong... well i like hot strong sexy badass women.... ok ok joke.... actually not... But on all that i can give you a hint and i will say it was mentioned in the Jhin arc... some of you probably noticed what but i am not going to say anything because i don't want to spoil the future.

... OK i talked to much.... And we are done with that... oh wait one more thing i actually fucked up with the height measurements for the (Y/N) and girls it was not the correct number to what i was imagining it in my head and i just noticed when one of the readers asked me a question. So i will update the introduction with just those height numbers... sorry about that i should have checked first . Anyway now off to some of the side characters and thank you for reading this i know some of you are probably going to stop reading but i hope most of you stay and continue this story with me !

(And again none of these pictures belong to me they are all property of their original artists)

First we have the two sisters of Law&Chaos

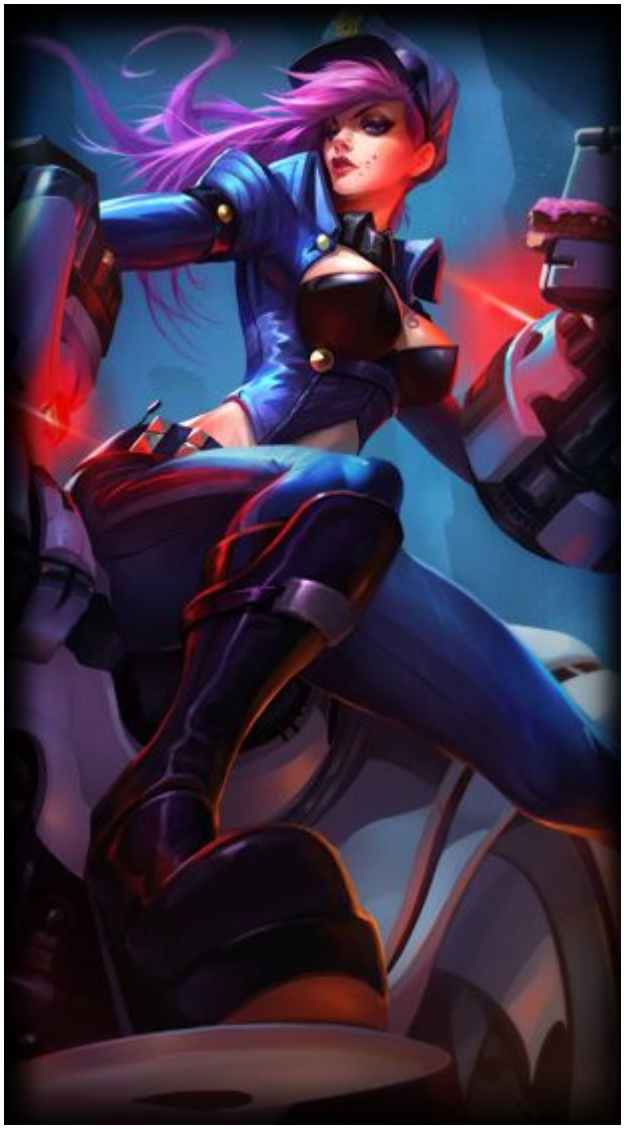
Kayle

And my person favorite Morgana

Then we gots the Mommy dearest.... yea i know some of you are alredy thinking of asking her to teach you as STEP-Mother

Lets not forget about our lovely officers who are afraid of doing ther job because of a certain diva

Officer Vi



And her boss Camille

Since they will be making a apperance soon i decided to put them right away
The second favorite for the abs shot's in the celebrity world, the lovely Senna

And the lady that will even give Kai'Sa the run for her thickens! The lovely vixen Qiyana

And finaly the man who makes the letter 4 look amazing

MassOfThugs: 4!!!!!!!!!!!!

Didn't i kill you all.....

And would do everything for PERFECTION

MassOfThugs: FOR PERFECTION!

..... OK let me just go get Evellyn fast

(One AGAIN bloody massacre TIMESKIP latter)

GIVE IT UP FOR

JHIN

And his sexy mask..... even i get nightmares from that

And that's it for this publish ! Thank you all so much for reading this and i hope you stay with me on this journey. See you latter today.... why do i have a fealing i forgot somebody

CHAPTER 25 (I pity you)

OH MY GOD!!! I JUST SAW THAT PERSONA 5 STRIKERS IS OUT FOR PC .... HOLY FUCK!!! You guys are lucky that my little brother broke our Joystick or no chapter for a few days...

(Y/N) POV :

Ding

The elevator door opened and i have to say i smiled ! It was good to be home.... now if we could fix this problem..

(Y/N): Ummmmm... Evellyn

Evellyn: Yes darling

(Y/N):I think we are good now.

Evellyn: *purr* Oh no no my darling, this is also your punishment

Thanks to this lady and her purring i was going from tomato red to blood red. Not only was she carrying me like a princes she was teasing me every moment she could . Apparently the girls decided that i don't need those walking clutches and threw them to the garbage when we left Mundo's office.

Since i couldn't really walk by myself yet Evellyn decided that it would be cute if she carries me princess style. Not only was that enough to give me a panic attack. She decided to get out of the car 5 blocks away from the penthouse....

Can you imagine being carried like a princess bride for about 20 min... and everyone that saw us just stooped what they are doing and stared our way... Some guy even pulled over his car and yelled "Hey babe drop the loser and

hang with me" which of course made me pissed of a little... but then Evellyn just twitched and i thought i heard the guy scream... i don't know since i couldn't see behind her..... hmmm i wonder....

Ahri: AWwwwww you two look so cute !!!!

Ahri was doing her mischievous smile while teasing me... oh god i cant get anymore red !!!

Kai'Sa: Hahaha well anyway lets have lunch !

Good i can eat a Ox.

TIMESKIP

As we all finally finished lunch... which was mostly me trying to eat in peace because Ahri was constantly trying to feed me.... and every time i would look like i want to complain she would just make a silly smirk and say its my punishment for trying to leave.... oh god they are going to use this forever now... even Kai'Sa and Akali joined in by trying to make me eat from their plate... especially Kai'Sa who tended to lick her fork before giving me food with it.... it's always the quiet ones hehehe.... NO (Y/N)... oh nature calls

Evellyn: Where are you going darling

(Y/N): Bathroom

Evellyn: *stare*....

(Y/N): *stare*

Evellyn:* stare* *smirk*

(Y/N): Don't you dare....

Evellyn: Let me hold it for you *purr*

FFS!!!! *sight*... he he he... NO (Y/N)

I started to get up fast by myself trying to run away from Evellyn. This was to much i believe for today... and i fucked up. I actually forgot about my body situation and as i try to move fast i lost feeling in my legs and my arm shoot in pain because of the pressure

thud

Luckily i was able to use my hand to stop it from slamming my face to the table

Ahri: (Y/N) !!! NO !!!

I then looked around Ahri was half standing on my side and looked like she was ready to jump to me at a moments notice.

Kai'Sa was just siting looking at me with her hands covering her mouth and her eyes were starting to tear up.

Akali was already half way over the table and she looked like she was going to jump into me to stop me from falling down.

While Evellyn was just there siting in shock with her hand half raised.... there was no expression... she was just looking at me and trying to say something but she couldn't

Shit... they have been acting happy and mischievous... but i guess they are scared.... i really am i dick for feeling so happy now... ok lets try to fix this

I grabbed Evellyn's hand which just made her twitch... she was giving me a look that was screaming fear! She was afraid to touch me... that i would brake with just a little bit of her force

(Y/N): Wow... how could you Kai'Sa ! You know i am bad with alcohol!

Kai'Sa: Huh?

(Y/N): Or did i take Evellyns drink by mistake... i guess it hit me in the head hahaha. Anyway thanks for helping me Evellyn but i need to go to the bathroom and take a shower ill see you guys in a few.

I was somehow able to walk by myself... even though i was using everything i can not to scream in pain for walking without support...

TIMESKIP

I was using the towel to dry myself up.... it took me one hour just to take a simple shower...

Out of that one hour i spent 40 min just trying to take of my clothes... the hardest part was my pants when i had to bend over.... and then i looked upon my self in the mirror.... i looked disgusting...

First there the bullet scars on my stomach... which just made me wince on how they looked. It reminded me of those few times we want to play Paintball and it looked exactly like the marks the ball will leave after the hit the armor accept it was a color of a fresh new skin.

But then i looked at my limbs... i didn't know what i wanted to do more... to cry... or to punch the wall in rage... it was horrific. All the places that the chains went through left a permanent mark, it looked like my arms and legs went through a meat-grinder and survived... and so many little hole marks... i am so glad i was wearing long sleeves today.... actually.... i will never be able to fear short sleeves ever again.... and i loved T-shirts

I slammed my arms to the sink as hard as i can but considering i had no strengths now it was only a weak slap and i was looking down tears were coming down

(Y/N): *Sob*... th-t-th-that motherfucker.... how could he do this to me

And then i looked up and a voice in the back of my head screamed "for my masterpiece"

I jumped away in fear falling down to the floor and doing everything i can not to scream from the pain i felt! I was looking at the mirror above the sink waiting for that monster to come out of it.... but there was nothing...

(Y/N): *whisper* just my imagination

Knock knock

I winced in shock... where where is that sound coming from !

Kai'Sa: *Ummm (Y/N) are you OK ? I heard something fall !*

.... its just the bathroom door.... OK, OK just calm down.... its just Kai'Sa that bastard is gone

(Y/N): I am fine, i just knocked down the shampoo don't worry about it

Kai'Sa: *Ah ok.... um if you like... i can....i would like to come inside and take a shower with you*

(Y/N): Huh ?

Kai'Sa: *Well you have been inside for a long time.... so i guess your having a hard time... i can help wash you..... and then you can wash me*

Oh..... OHhhhhhhhhhh... hehehe i see where this is going no wonder she sounded so shy... i would mind washing her th....

And then i looked towards our big mirror..... disgusting...

(Y/N): Umm no thank you Kai'Sa... i am already done, i am just getting dressed

Kai'Sa: *Ah OK! Maybe next time*

.... she wouldn't be able to look at me like this... even i cant look at myself like this

TIMESKIP

Kai'Sa POV:

We were all sitting in the living room watching a TV series after dinner . It was one of the new series that was very popular about a guy with white hair killing monsters, apparently (Y/N) was extremely happy when he found out that it started airing while he was in the coma and wanted to watch it right away

(Y/N) was siting between me and Ahri on the sofa while Evellyn and Akali were on the one next to us.... i was kinda disappointed when (Y/N) didn't want to take a shower with me i know he also said that we will do it next time but for some reason he just didn't sound natural.

Akali: Hey (Y/N) aren't you hot in that ?

(Y/N): Nah its all fine no worries here.

Akali pointed out on his clothes. Tonight was very hot which is strange since its winter but apparently just one of those heat wawes that hits out of nowhere. We were all dressed in short sleeves except him who was still in a sweater which was extremely strange since he always says how he never feels cold and i know that we are all shocked at the beginning when he started to live with us since he goes to the balcony in the morning with only his T-shirt

Evellyn: Darling i know you are hot, i can see it from her that you are sweating

(Y/N): Umm... yea its ok really... the doctor said its good for my circulation !

Well that makes sense... but he looks so uncomfortable

Ahri: Nonsense! Just take off that sweater... and i can maybe help your circulation latter *purr*

Ahri just made one of her mischievous smile and started teasing him, she loved doing that so much that i was sure if she could chose a whole day of shopping or teasing (Y/N) she would chose the latter

SLAP

(Y/N): NO!!!!!

.... i was wide eyed... we all were. Ahri grabed his sweater and as she started to pull it up he just suddenly slapped her arm away and screamed....

(Y/N): ah.... i mean... no um.... its not like that Ahri.... i am just tired... yea... sorry Akali can you help me up... i think i am going to go to bed early...

After Akali got back from helping (Y/N) to his door none of us were looking towards the TV... Ahri was next to me and she was just looking at the hand that (Y/N) slapped away a few moments ago with her ears down

Evellyn:..... Something is wrong

Akali: Did you maybe hurt him or something when you pulled on the sweater ?

Ahri: No....no i was careful to pull it up slowly....

Kai'Sa: Maybe... maybe he was just tired you know

I knew it was not that... we all knew

Evellyn: Something is very wrong

TIMESKIP

"YOU WILL BE MY MASTERPIECE"

(Y/N): NOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO!!! *huf huf huf*

I was laying in my bed heavily breathing after as i woke up....

(Y/N): Another one.....

This is the 3rd time i woke up tonight and every time its the same story... i am running down the dark hall trying to open doors and when i hear footsteps behind me i turn and see Jhin

(Y/N): Why.... just why cant you leave me alone...

I know why... i almost died.... i almost died to this bastard and i knew there was nothing that i cold do to stop him...

(Y/N): And he is still alive.... why is he still alive.....

It didn't help that my arm was over my eyes i was still crying.... why did this happen to me

knock knock

Kai'Sa: *(Y/N)! Are you ok ?*

Evellyn: *I heard a scream*

Ah i guess i woke Evellyn and Kai'Sa... shit

(Y/N): YEaaa its all good ! Just a movie on my PC !

Kai'Sa: (Y/N).... your PC is still broken

Oh shit !

(Y/N): Ha ha ha i meant phone !

Evellyn: We are coming in

(Y/N): WAIT NO!

I was in my boxers it was really hot tonight so i didn't put any clothes now

As i heard the doorknob starting to me i tried to jump out of my bed to grab some clothes... bad idea since i forgot that my body was still fucked up

thud

Evellyn: DARLING !

They turned off the lights and were looking down upon me who was laying on the floor... all of he scars were on display. Both of them had shocked expressions and were just looking at me with wide eyes

Kai'Sa: (Y/N).... are those

(Y/N): DON'T LOOK AT ME !!!!!!

I was screaming and tears started flowing out of my eyes i was trying everything i can just to move away...

Evellyn:.... darling...

(Y/N): Please *sob* don't look at me... i am disg....

And before i could finish my sentence Kai'Sa ran to me and hugged me while planting a kiss on my lips

Kai'Sa: It must have hurt so much.... i am so sorry....

Evellyn just put a hand on my face and kissed me on my forehead

Evellyn: I don't care what you think but you will never be that in our eyes

Kai'Sa: Come on lets go to sleep, il stay with you tonight

After a few moments Evellyn and Kai'Sa helped me to bed and Kai'Sa got in with me, hugging me and pulling me into her... I didn't have nightmares anymore that night

Evellyn POV

Click I classed the door to (Y/N) room and then i heard Ahri and Akali

Akali: What happened ! I heard (Y/N) yell

Ahri: Is everything ok! Il go in and check...

Before Ahri could go in i just stooped her by grabbing her hand

Evellyn: Don't worry dear.... its all fine now, Kai'Sa is inside with him

Akali: Whats going on ?

Evellyn: It was about his scars on his body.

Ahri: I knew there were going to be some.... but... is that really that bad ?

Evellyn: Its not pretty but nothing serious... its more emotional. *sigh* I have an idea and your probably not going to like it

Then i told Ahri and Akali my idea and like i said they were furious..... but there was no other choice if we don't do something this is only going to get worse

TIMESKIP

Vi: One more TIME ! Are you sure about this ?!

I just nodded my head...

Vi: Fine.... oy bring him in !

I was sitting in front of a giant sea through glass frame in the maximum security prison in Piltover. Behind me were both Evellyn and Ahri. Vi after checking for about the 5 times today just picked up her radio and said those words....

I was not sure.... no i was sure I DIDN'T WANT TO DO THIS.... but Ahri and the girls begged me.... and after the look she was giving me i couldn't refuse

And then as the door on the other side of the glass opened Evellyn just bent over and whispered to my ear

Evellyn: Don't worry darling we are here... he can never hurt you again

They brought Jhin inside... more like wheeled him in a wheelchair... this was monstrous....

His limbs were gone replaced with stumps in bandages, half of his lover jaw now had a prosthetic built in and both of his ears were missing just leaving a couple of holes there... not to mention he was wearing an eye-patch. There were also tubs going from his lower body... it was clear he couldn't use a bathroom normally ever again

Then he was brought to directly in front of the glass and the officer just picked up the phone and put it where his ear used to be... i followed his motion

Jhin: H-e-l-l-o (Y/N)

It was very hard to understand him with half of his lover jaw being fake

(Y/N): ......J.....Jhin

Jhin: T-o w-h-a-t d-o I o-w-e t-h-i-s p-l-e-a-s-u-r-e- o-f a v-i-s-i-t

(Y/N): I..... i..... I cam to s-see if it was t-t-true

Jhin: A-h y-o-u m-e-a-n m-y c-u-r-r-e-n-t s-i-t-u-a-t-i-o-n..... y-e-s i-t-s... i-t-s P-E-R-F-E-C-T-I-O-N

He was able to yell at his last word and actually was able to move somehow, and it made me wince... but more... i was just shocked

(Y/N): You... what ?

Jhin: L-o-o-k a-t t-h-i-s f-o-r-m i-t-s b-e-a-u-t-i-f-ul !!! T-h-i-s i-s t-r-u-e a-r-t!!! Y-o-u-r l-a-d-i-e-s o-v-e-r t-h-e-r-e a-r-e a-r-t--s-t-s..ha ha ha ha ha HA HA HA HA HA HA HA HA

(Y/N):.... wow.... I am amazed that you can move your mouth like that... you must have allot of experience sucking dicks while your jaw was normal

Jhin: H-u-h ?

I finally understood.... this monster..... no he was not a monster anymore... he was not even a human anymore.... he was just a sad piece of existence

(Y/N): You are pathetic.... you are just a powerless bastard like me who couldn't deal with the world and decided to become a monster..... but you know what.... your not a monster anymore

Jhin: N-o.... d-o-n-'t l-o-o-k a-t m-e l-i-k-e t-h-a-t s-h-o-w m-e t-h-a-t s-p-a-r-k..

(Y/N): You know... i don't even fear you anymore.... i actually don't even hate you anymore....

Jhin started convulsing on the chair but the guard was just holding him down

(Y/N): I pity you!

Jhin: D-O-N-'T Y-O-U D-A-R-E P-I-T-Y M-E! Y-O-U H-E-A-R M-E (Y/N) D-O-N-'T Y-O-U.....

click

I just drooped the phone back in it's place and before i could even notice what i was doing i got up by myself... the pain was still there and it hurt like hell... but i didn't feel so broken anymore

I walked out of the glass room with Evellyn and Ahri and from the first time since yesterday i was relaxed, we made it about 5 meters until Ahri just suddenly made a "Ah" sound

Ahri: Sorry you two i forgot something in the room over there. Wait for me at the car !

Hmm strange i didn't see anything but as i was about to turn again and leave she suddenly grabbed me and slammed her tongue into my mouth.

Ahri: When we get back. Your going to let me help with you circulation *grin* and i am not taking a no for a answer

oh.....ohhhhhhhh..... YAY!!!!!!!

VI POV

When Evellyn called the station and said that she want's to bring (Y/N) to see Jhin i thought it was a bad idea. But Chief Camilla just said " I understand" and approved it....

It was going as much as i was expecting it. They brought in Jhin and (Y/N) froze in fear... i am sure if those two girls were not behind him he would have ran away in fear. The conversation just showed how Jhin really is fucked up.

But then at one moment it just all turned around, and (Y/N) lost all of that weakness in his eyes and left leaving Jhin wailing in rage.... huh... i guess i still need experience in this kind of work...

Vi:OK... take him away and look him....

I turned around as i hard the door open and Ahri walked in. She was walking with blank expression and stood in front of Jhin with only the glass separating them

Vi: Ummm Miss Ahri.. did you want... WHAT!

CRASH

Suddenly her eyes flashed blue all of her 9 tails were out and she punched through the glass causing a big hole to form around her arm while grabbed Jhin for the head

Vi: WAIT YOU... GUAAAAH

SLAM

Before i or the officer on the other side could react i felt some force picking me up and crashing me to the wall taking my breath away on the force of impact

Jhin: W-h-a-t d-o y-o-u

Then she just pulled him to the hole and whispered something to him that i couldn't hear... and the Jhin started to scream in fear.... that was impossible... since Jhin was never showed any fear till now

Jhin: N-O.... H-O-W I-T-S N-O-T P-O-S-S-I-B-L-E.... N-O H-O-W D-O Y-O-U... Y-O-U Y-O-U..... Y-O-U A-R-E.....

Before he could finish his words she just threw him to the ground and walked out. As soon as the door closed the force that was holding me let go and i fell to the floor

.... The Chief was right.... those girls are dangerous

CHAPTER 26 (The princess has left the castle)

OK so the game is downloading lets se how much i can do before its ready.

(Y/N) POV:

(Y/N): *Yaaaaaawn*... i barely got a wink of sleep last night

It was a nice winter morning and i was siting on the balcony enjoying my coffee and smoke... It's been 4 days since the visit to Jhin and i was feeling good... the pain was almost completely gone with a little soreness here and there and even the nightmares are gone.... but there is another problem now...

As i turned around i saw through our glass door the girls practicing their singing. There is a concert tonight and their doing some practicing. I was also going since its forbidden for me to stay alone. According to them every time i am left without at least on of them some bull shit happens.

(Y/N): Technically.... they are not wrong

I was not feeling bad that i was going to their concert, their songs are very good and the dancing and effects are amazing.... the problems is that i didn't get a wink of normal sleep these past 4 days. And last night was the worst

Apparently the next night Kai'Sa took me to her room and sleep with me again, she was afraid i was going to get nightmares and forced me to go with her.... i was not upset really but the problem is it was very hard for me to sleep to such a beautiful girl....

The next day right away Ahri got jealous that i slept with Kai'Sa even do i told her we didn't have fun she was still pouting, and this time i was forced into my room with Ahri.... that kinda made it worse since like Kai'Sa, Ahri likes to hold me... but she also likes to nimble on my ear and tease me.... the worst part is she left me with a hard on that whole night....

The 3rd night then Kai'Sa took me to my bed and did the same thing, she teased me a little and even did a small play of me using her ass as a pillow... but she left me hanging..... that hell was going on and they were just both smirking when ever they got up.... i understand they were teasing me but it was to much

Then the whole day yesterday they were doing every using every possible moment for me to get embarrassed and get me red.... you know i am starting to understand how livestock feel... you fatten them up and butcher them when they are ready. That's how i felt like when they were teasing me for 3 days just to make me explode. And then last night i was having high hopes... when that happend

FLASHBACK

Kai'Sa: *yawn* mmm i am going to bed (Y/N) lets go

Ahri: Ummmm i don't think so! Last night was you today is my turn

Kai'Sa: What no tonight he will sleep with me, you can take him tomorrow and day after tomorrow (Y/N): Ummm do i have a say in

Ahri: Why don't you sleep with him tomorrow and i sleep with him tonight

END OF FLASHBACK

That kinda confirmed my theory that they were getting me hot and bothered..... but the next part was the worst

ANNNND WE ARE BACK WITH ANOTHER FLASHBACK

Evellyn: He will sleep with me tonight

Kai'Sa&Ahri&(Y/N): Huh ?

Evellyn: You girls clearly cant decide, plus i want to use (Y/N) as a pillow *licks lip*

Akali:..... good luck (Y/N)

END OF FLASHBACK

..... my balls want to explode right about now. I had no chance on refusing Evellyn... and it was a disaster.... i got into bed and when she walked in i was already crimson red she was moving her hips and getting into bed so slowly... like a predator stalking her pray. She was watching me while i was doing my best to pretend to fall asleep and at one moment i actually did... i woke up a few times during the night but she just had her back turned towards me.... the worst thing was when i woke up in the morning she looked extremely upset....

(Y/N): Did she want me to make a move....

I didn't know what to do... i was a afraid a little that she is only teasing me... and that if i actually make a move she will be upset... plus out of all the girls Evellyn feels like she is above me.... who am i kidding all of them were so much above me... but i felt like a bug compared to a queen next to her..

Then the door opened and Kai'Sa peaked outside

Kai'Sa: Hey (Y/N) can you go to the Flea-Market !

(Y/N): Hmmm ?

Kai'Sa:We are completely out of groceries and your the best when it comes to which ones are good enough

(Y/N): Yea sure, some fresh air will do me good, somebody coming with me or i should get a taxi ?

Kai'Sa: WHAT! Of course somebody is going with you, your still hurt and we already told you ! You are not allowed to move alone

.... i actually wanted some privacy.... eh screw it i like spending time with the girls

TIMESKIP

Ummmmmmm.... this is not going as i expected

????1: Ummmm... hehehe would you like some cucumbers best one on the market.... hehehe

????2: *gulp* *wipes droll* i got some very nice melons i mean fruits ! here come try them

????3: Hey mister i can see your a man of culture, how about some adult movies... HIiiiiiiiii..... actually never mind ha ha ha i am closed for today I was standing on the entrance to the market..... with Evellyn

And it was not going well... she was dressed like she was going to a party... it was still on the casual side considering how she usually dresses but she was still making me do a *gulp* when i see her..... and definitely not for a Flea-Market... Half of the guy were just staring and drooling, all of the women were looking at scorn and whispering.... And the mister porn guy picked up his stuff after a look from Evellyn and was running away at full speed now !

I first went to Yoricks stall like usual

(I KNEW I FORGOT SOMEONE!!! Sorry Yorick this is the second time)

But he had a extremely upset face

Yorick: Oh look who decided to show up !

(Y/N): Ummmm can i explain

Yorick: Do tell please... plus the Apples are 20$ per kg today

Ah shit he was mad

(Y/N): Would you believe me if i said i was asleep ?

He was looking at me with a serious face and then just sighted

Yorick: I knew something was wrong when that pretty lady of your came alone.... are you OK ?

(Y/N): Yea all good old-man thanks for the worry, just a small situation

He then just looked behind me

Yorick: One moment madam let me deal with this guy here and i will help you

Evellyn: I am with him

.....

.....

He was looking at me, then at Evellyn, then at me

Evellyn: Is there a problem

Yorick: Ah no no, i just find it strange... Hiiiiiiii

She then gave him one of the meanest glares that made the old man back off almost falling down.... OK not Yorick

(Y/N): EVELLYN! Don't he didn't mean anything bad by it

She then snapped her head at me and looked like she wanted to fight.... but then just gave up

(Y/N): Anyway Yorick sorry about that, so the usual please

He only charged me 10$ bucks for everything..... wow... i know its bad..... but what a deal

After about 30 more min of shopping and people drooling over Evellyn we were making our way out of the market when i saw the old lady with the

stuffed plushies, and she had a few new ones

(Y/N): Ohhh you have a new selection !

OldLady: YES! I tried some different costumes... oh and here is my number so you can call me when ever you want to buy more and i am not here !

(Y/N): Oh awesome... OK give m that, and that anddd um that and....

I then looked towards Evellyn....

(Y/N): Umm how about we go the the other side we can maybe find some jewelry that you would find interesting

She opened her mouth and was just looking at me quietly and then her face made a angry scowl

Evellyn: It's fine i don't want anything

(Y/N): No come on i have to get you something

Evellyn: I SAID I AM FINE !!!! *growls*

Shit.... i forgot she hates stuff from the flea-market... il talk to the girls later and decide on what to get her better not risk it after that dinner

TIMESKIP

Ahri: OMG ITS SO CUTEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEE!!!!!

Ahri was screaming in glee once she took out her plushie. It was a little fox again who had a ballerina costume on her

Kai'Sa: Hihihi this reminds me of that day in the Dirty Mug

Kai'Sa was holding a dog who was dressed like a knight while giggling

Akali: Ha ha its so cool! Thank you (Y/N)

Akali's eyes were sparkling while holding a racoon who was dressed like a bad boy

SLAM The door to Evellyns room just slammed

Ahri: Umm did something happen.

(Y/N): I don't know she was upset from the morning... and then she just stooped talking to me at the flea market

Kai'Sa: Do you remember when ?

(Y/N): Ummm i bought the plushies for you and then i said we can go to the other side to get some jewelry but she just lost it.... oh by the way what do you guys think i should get her..... um why are you all frowning..

Ahri: How can you be such a sweetheart some times and a dick at others

Akali: Nah i think he is just stupid

Kai'Sa: Idiot

Huh? What did i do ????

TIMESKIP

It was 3pm about 4h until the concert start's. The ladies have since they need to do some final preparation for the stage. Luckily i was able to talk them into letting me come latter but i had to promise i would stay indoors and let Braum take me, i didn't really mind since i liked the big guy.
But man... they were serious about not letting me go outside alone

Evellyn was still mad at me. I tried to talk to her before they left for the concert but i just go at "I am busy" from her..... crap its clear a fucked something up... Not even 15min passed when my phone rang.

Ahri: **Hey (Y/N) we forgot some papers, can you go to Evellyns room and pick them up, they should be on the table according to her, just drop it to the elevator and send it down*

(Y/N): Sure gimme a sec il bring it down i don't mind

Ahri: *Ah no your not getting on the elevator alone ! Just send it by itself*

... DAFUQ? What the fuck i am not even allowed to use the elevator by myself... sight.

As i entered Evellyn room for the first time i have to say it was a disaster... her clothes were all over the floor with other junk like papers and bottles of alcohol.... OK tomorrow we are doing a full check of all the girls room i don't even want to image what i will find in Ahri's !!!

And then i saw it.... out of all the clothes... alll the boxes of jewelry and all the fancy scarf and shoes and makeup... there it was, tucked on her bade a pink shark plushie..... god i am an idiot

After sending the papers down to the floor it was time for m to go to work ! So i took out the phone and made a call

(Y/N): Hello ! Its me i actually have a favor to ask !

TIMESKIP

Braum: MY FRIEND I AM SO HAPPY TO SEE YOU ALL GOOD AND ALIVE!!!!!!!!!!

Braum just yelled in his full bear voice and hugged me hard... omg my bones are breaking my bones are breaking

(Y/N): Braum..... i..... cant..... breathe !!!!!

Braum: Haha sorry my little friend ! When Akali call me that night and told me what was happening i got the whole Dirty Mug to call me if they know

something.... i am sorry my friend

(Y/N): It's ok big guy.... it all worked out in the end

Braum: Yes it did now lets go

As we came down and exited the elevator my eye just twitched

(Y/N): Ummmmm Braum

Braum: Yes ?

(Y/N): The hell is this

10 big guys in fancy bodyguard suites like Braum were waiting for me and they were all standing next to the limo. A few of them also had bikes and they were in a square formation around it. Then Braum started speaking and he had the audacity to look away

Braum: Umm.... your ride

(Y/N): ..... your joking right.... tell me you are joking

Braum:.... if you have any questions ask Evellyn

(Y/N): Braum !

Braum: If you have any questions ask Evellyn

(Y/N): Braum i am not going to go like this !

He was actually sweating now

Braum: I....If you have any questions ask Evellyn !

MOTHERFUCKER!.... sight fine... i can understand his pain

(Y/N):.... fine lets just go

As we we got into the car i was of course surrounded by all my.... bodyguards and then we started making our way out of the garage. I grabbed a soda to drink and as we were about to leave the garage finally i spited it all over one of the big guys.

In front of me was a big Black jeep and behind where two more. I just snapped my head towards Braum who just looked outside towards the window

(Y/N): AM I A FUCKING DAUGHTER OF A FOREIGN AMBASSADOR OR SOMETHING !

Braum: If you have questions..... ask Evellyn

(Y/N): FML... listen before we go to the concert we need to make a stop first... its on the way actually

I just gave up *sigh*

Braum just nodded. And then as we finally left the garage one of the Bodyguards spoke in his radio

Bodygauard1: The princess has left the castle and its on its way

..... Braum was looking away

MOTHERFUCKER!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

WHERE IS MY PHONE!!! FINE SHE WANTS TO PLAY WE WILL PLAY HAHAHAHAHAHHAHAH

TIMESKIP

Akali POV

Akali: SUP ALL!!! ARE WE READY !!!!!

Girl Fan: AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA AKALI!!!!!!!!!!!!!!! WE LOVE YOU

GuyFan: OMG BE MY GIRLFRIEND !!!!!!!!!!

????Fan: LET ME EAT SUSHI OF YOUR ABS !!!!!!!!

.... shit these fans are getting crazier and crazier every day..... then i looked towards Ahri and Kai'Sa and even though they were smiling i can see a small sign of worries.... (Y/N) was no in his seat... ok i am sure its all fine we got Braum and 20 other bodyguards to go with him.... nothing happens..... but this is (Y/N)

Crap this day is just going bad from the morning, first Evellyn is upset all day and then Mundo suddenly comes and tell us he wants Evellyn to go out last.... ofc we were pissed we had a routine and this guy fucked everything up. Ahri and Eve started fighting with him but he just said to do as a favor to him.

Didn't really help since Ahri and Eve were still mad but they kinda decided they are going to fuck him up after the show... poor Mundo. And then Eve came next to me and as she spoke there was no sound... her mic was dead.... oh no

You can see by her face she is done... she is going to walk of the stage and be done with tonight... then the lights went out.... crap somebody is going to get murdered tonight and then the big screen turned on behind us and the whole crowd gasped...

Ahri: Wha-wha-wha-wha-wha..... ahhahahahah

Kai'Sa: Noooo.... even he..... hihihiih

Evellyn: Ah.....

Akali: AHAHAHHAHAHAHHAAHA

There on the big screen in front of thousands of people was a picture of Evellyn holding a pink shark plushie. I was sure it was photoshoped since she would never allow anyone to take it but it was done incredibly well. And over it written in big letters was

"TO MY ONE AND ONLY DIVA! I AM SORRY I MADE YOU UPSET AND I HOPE YOU FORGIVE ME ! WITH LOVE YOUR PRINCESS "

And then the lights turned back on and the background music started again..... and the fans went wild

Fan1: WHAT WHO STOLE OUR MISTRESS!!!!

Fan2; WHO IS THIS PRINCES!!! MISTRESS!!!!

????Fan: PLEASE STEP ON ME AS YOU STEP ON YOUR PRINCESS MISTRESS!!!!

I all these years i know Evellyn... this was the first time ever i saw her blush and red in the face...

(Y/N)POV:

The door to the KD/A dressing room just opened and Evellyn walked in.

(Y/N): Hello Evellyn.

Evellyn was looking at me with a blank expression you could see she was trying to say something...

(Y/N): Now before you say anything this is for you !

I gave her a huge bag that even i was barely able to hold properly with both hands, it was not heavy it was just big. At first she was looking at me and then she just put the bag and took out a giant plushi about half my height and size. It was a Elephant who was dressed like a super model and with sunglasses that i remember she was using before her image change, it was also in a pose with one hand behind behind her head like it was looking down on somebody.

(Y/N): Before you say anything i have to say something

Evellyn just looked towards me

(Y/N): I am sorry and i am a idiot... its just when i see you i feel like nothing. You are so beautiful and you are always shining. When i am next to you i am afraid because you a godess is staying next to me who is just a simple guy....

Evellyn she tried to open her mouth but i stoped her

(Y/N): I know those rumors and i know they are all true... but i don't care... some people call you a monster but you are MY monster, you protect us and you take care of us and i love you for that..... yea i know you might find this funny and i know you might just start laughing in my face and i know you might just think i am a maid and you are being nice but i....

Slash, wosh, slash slash slash wosh

(Y/N): Huh....

Her tail blades suddenly passed all around me spinning and cutting a few time.... and everything except my boxers fell down to the floor as it has been removed

(Y/N): Eve... guaaah

She then just pushed me to the wall with full force, as i lost my breath during the impact her tongue was inside my mouth destroying it. I was not able to move because her hands were keeping my arms pined to the wall while one of her legs was between mine holding me up to her height. For 20min She was doing this to me, ravaging my mouth with her tongue. She would pull her tongue out to let me catch my breath and even during that time she was either biting my neck or licking my ear and her tounge would be back in my mouth again. During all that time her leg would be grinding and pushing on my little friend down there until i just finally exploded inside my boxers

(Y/N): *huf huf huf* Eve...

Evellyn: AH no no my princess, we are just getting started, i will make you pay for tonight !

(Y/N): Evellyn i..

And then she just made a evil seductive grin while whispering and licking my mouth at the same time

Evellny: *lick* nobody made me ever blush like you. I need to reward you for that and we have all night

Oh god..... have mercy !

Ahri POV :

Ahri: AHahahha i cant believe this !!!

Kai'Sa: Shhhhhhh hide that before she figures out you took a picture ! hihihihi

We were laughing and giggling like crazy ! Nobody ever made Eve blush and i of course was not going to lose the opportunity to take a picture. I am glad Mundo made us do this. He came after the concert to apologize and told me (Y/N) called him.

Evellyn actually rushed to the changing room before she heard that but i have a feeling she knew where he was

Kai'Sa: Hihihih the concert was a disaster

Ahri: I know right. It was so hard to dance after that since Evellyn was trying to hide behind us....

A&K: HAHAHAHAHHAHAHAHHAHA

Kai'Sa: Huh is that Akali in front of the changing room ?

I then saw Akali bent over looking through a small crack on the door one hand was on the wall as a support and another one between her legs

Ahri: Hey Akali !

She then slowly turned her head towards us it was. Her face was completely red. She had this foggy look in her eyes and there was drool coming on the side of her face not o mention she was breathing very hard.

Her eyes just went wide and in the blink of the eye she was gone....

Ahri: I really wonder how Mundo and her do that...

Kai'Sa: What was she looking at

SLAM

(Y/N): *W-w-aiiit aaaaaaaaaaa Evellyn... not thre *MOANS**

Evellyn*: He he he leave all to me*

(Y/N)*: *moans* Ahhh wait i i am Aaaahhhhh.*

Evellyn*: Oh my another big load.... i told you to hold it in... now be a good boy and listen this time*

Kai'Sa: *blush*.... poor (Y/N)....

SLAM SLAM

Ahri: Wow.... the wall is actually shaking

Kai'Sa: And after we went through all that trouble those three days to make him...

SLAM

Evellyn: *Oh again something warm is flowing out. I guess we are going again*

(Y/N): *Waiit... stop jumping ... on me so *MOANS* aaaah...*

Ahri: Well she is going to use all of it.....

Kai'Sa: Um should we wait for them or

(Y/N): *Wait *gulp*... what was *moan* in that vial !!! AHhhh don't move like that OMG!!!!!!*

Evellyn: *Oh just a little present from Ahri that i got some during her heat period some time ago.... i still have about 22 left!*

Ahhhh yea that one night we got drunk and i told her about my saliva how it works on men.....

Kai'Sa: I am a little scared now ....

Ahri: She wont kill him.... right ?... i mean he survived me during my hea...

SLAM SLAM SLAM SLAM

Kai'Sa: Lets check on them tomorrow

Ahri: Good luck (Y/N)

Kai'Sa: Huh why is there such a big puddle in front of the door where Akali was

And we left....

Tomorrow when we came back in the afternoon they will still going at it

See ya guys later... if (Y/N) survives Evellyn

CHAPTER 27 (Do we understand each other ?)

I feel so sleep even though its only 9pm....

(Y/N) POV:

RING RING RING

(Y/N): Oh god who is it this early in the morning !!!

I was complaining as i opened my eyes to the sound of my phone ringing... fuck

(Y/N): Hello !

????: Ah am i speaking to mister (Y/N) ?

slurp slurp

(Y/N): Yes you are

????: This is Syndra actually. I would like to meet up in the afternoon if possible and we can also have that coffee that you promised me

Oh! Cool i actually found Syndra to be pretty cool ! Not to mention she was a smart-ass

slurp slurp

(Y/N): That would be good actually, i would love to !

Syndra: Very good ! Then about 5pm at the Caffe Leee'Blanc ! Il see you there and yes its one of Le'Blanc's passion projects so you know their coffee is good ! See ya there

And she hanged up... good i would love to get out and get some coffee. And it was clear Syndra wanted to talk to me.... mmmmm i feel so good today

slurp slurp slurp

Evellyn held me trapped in that changing room for 22hours straight! In the end she stooped when we used the last drop of Ahris saliva... and holy shit man... i mean that was just... holy shit

Ahri likes to tease and when she finally get you in bed she acts all gentle and nice but after a few moments she becomes very violent and aggressive... hehehe

slurp slurp

Kai'Sa.... Kai'Sa is just kinky and freaky.... i mean the stuff we did wow... she makes you think you are in lead but truthfully shes the one who actually controls how it goes... and man the way we moved and the lemons... i can never eat lemons again... oh my god i feel so good for some reason now

slurp slurp slurp slurp

But Evellyn.... that was... holy shit... i had no control i was completely at her mercy... just wow... that day with her was just .... oh god... i feel so..... wait why do i feel so god and whats that sound

Then i lifted my covers

Evellyn: GLuag MOroaufgn, brogkaf rdoassy (*Good morning, Breakfast is ready)*

(Y/N):.....

Evellyn: *slurp slurp lick slurp lick*

(Y/N): HAVEN'T YOU HAD ENOUGH WOMAN! !!!!!!!!! OOOOOOHHHH *moans*

TIMESKIP

Evellyn: I am sorry darling, but when i came to wake you up i noticed your little toy was already wide awake and up... so i just had to say hello

I was having breakfast with the girl while pouting... i am not technically mad... that was amazing... actually why am i pouting

(Y/N): Fine just wake up next time

Evellyn: *grin* Ohhh so that's why you upset, because you missed the beginning

And then they all started laughing.... fuck this girls are going to suck my dry.... he he he... no (Y/N) concentrate.... because now the hard part comes

(Y/N): *ahem* i actually need to talk to you girl about something

AAEK: Hmm ?

(Y/N): I have plans in the afternoon so il be gone by 4:30 o clock

I checked the map on my phone and by my calculation i should be at the cafe in 30min if i take a taxi

Ahri: Oh, that's ok !

Oh good

Ahri: I finish my meeting with the perfume company at 2pm so we can go at 4:30

Oh not good.... this is going to be a problem

(Y/N): I want to go alone

AAEK: NO!

..... seriously just no...

(Y/N): Um girls its not...

AAEK: NO!!!

Oh fuck..... wait a second i am a grown ass man! I am 27 years old i don't need to ask permission to go outside ! I just need to put my foot down !

(Y/N): OK listen here! I am a....

Evellyn: *growling* We said NO!

(Y/N): Yes MAM!!!!

FFS... i bet even my father didn't need to deal with this shit..... actually

TIMESKIP

RIIING RIIING RIING

Diana: Helllo my little pterodactyl !!!!!!!!!!!!

... every time... every fucking time

Dad: Hey son !

Mike: BIG BROTHER!! How are you !

(Y/N): *sight* Hey there how are you all ? And sup there little bro ! All good you listening to Dad and Diana

After about 15 min of us talking in between, my brother left to do his thing, even now i was impressed i was able to get 15min from him, usual its hard to keep the attention of a autistic person so long... i really haven't talked to him in a long time so i felt happy

Diana: Soooo how is everything ! And are you sure your ok !!! Your not driving that monstrous machine again are you !!!!

Yea apparently while i was in the come Kai'Sa called my parents. They didn't really feel good about telling them about Jhin so she gave a story that i tried riding a bike and i crashed.... shes a smart girl.... Luckily the doctor was wiling to cooperate with the lie and they were giving a full bullshit

story while they visited. Diana told me even my sister came but i know she is lying

(Y/N): Yea don't worry never again ! Anyway the reason i called is because i need to talk to dad !

Diana: Ok ok just promise no more riding on that machine !

(Y/N): Yes yes, bye!!

Then she just made a few kissing sounds and handed the phone to my Dad

(Y/N): Hey, i wanted to talk to you abo....

Dad: First tell me what really happened ?

(Y/N): Huh ?

Dad: Please, your my son. I still remember when i tried to make you take a driver test but you refused because you were afraid of driving yourself. And now you expect me to believe that you got on a bike ?

(Y/N): Ummmm.... what can i say i wanted to show off to a couple of ladies and..

Dad: Don't try to bullshit the person who teaches you how to bullshit

..... yea i was a smart ass thanks to him

(Y/N): *sigh* Something happened.... i will not tell you what... maybe one day but not today... but just so you know i am fine now...

Dad: OK, that's good enough for me just don't try to lie anymore to me directly

(Y/N): Yea yea.... so anyway the reason i called you is... pff i kinda need advice to deal with someone

Dad: Those four ladies of your ?

(Y/N): Ummmm they are not m-m-mine.... but yea

Dad: Hahaha sure sure, i saw the pictures that Diana showed ! And i saw your face so don't play with me! And you should have seen your sisters when they saw it they were screaming some name and were shocked in disbelief...

(Y/N): Yea they are a very popular group so i am not surprised they know them. By the way is it true ? Did they come visit me

Dad:..... Ofc they did

(Y/N): Don't bullshit the person you teach how to bullshit

Dad: Hah ! Well played.... you know how it..... some day. Anyway what did you want to ask me ?

(Y/N): Ummm how did you deal with Diana ?

Dad: Sorry ?

(Y/N): Well don't get me wrong i love Diana.... but man i know how hard headed and annoying she can be

Dad: AHAHAHHAHAHAHAHAHHAHAHAHA! My son after 27 years finally has lady problems !!! Welcome to the club

(Y/N): yea right easy to say its x4 for me

Ups SHIT !!! I didn't want to say that

Dad:..... Son..... WP, daddy is proud of you

THAT'S NOT WHAT YOU ARE SUPPOSED TO SAY!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

(Y/N): So how did you deal with it ? And bear in mind that these girls can brake my spine in 2 seconds

Dad: All women can brake your spine in two seconds but that's not the point..... hmmm just withhold something that you have and they want

(Y/N): ... Even i thought of that ! Don't you have something else ?

Dad: Hahaha nope there is no magical cure my son and there is no instruction manual

(Y/N):.... We are fucked aren't we ...

Dad: Always son always... history has not been kind to our gender

(Y/N): *sigh* i guess il try with that, maybe il get what i want

Dad: Hahahah thats the spirit! I still remember my younger days with Diana ! And when ever i wanted something and she didn't budge i would withhold sex and then she wou....

(Y/N): OKKKK BYE I DON'T WANT TO HEAR THAT !!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

And i ended a call... what is with my parents and them talking to me about their sex life !!!!

TIMESKIP

It was 3 PM and i was in the living room with the girls. Now all 4 of them are siting on one sofa and i was in front of them with my arms crossed trying to be serious and upset..

Ahri: *puur* he looks cute when he pouts

Which of course was not working since i was red because of stupid comment like that

(Y/N): *sight* Ok i called you here to talk

Akali: If its about the same thing as this morning our answer is still NO

(Y/N): Girls ! This is going to far ! I am not some 13 year old kid who need supervision

Evellyn: No your not, your a guy who when ever he is left alone gets into some kind of trouble

Kai'Sa: And last time you almost died..... because we left you alone

Crap i understand how they feel... i really do.... but this cant continue like this its not healthy even i know that... fuck it reason is not going to work so plan B now

(Y/N): Fine you left me no choice

Akali: Ohhhh ?

(Y/N): If i don't get my basic human rights back... i.... i.....I-i-i-i Ahri: I ?

(Y/N): I will WITHHOLD SEX FROM NOW ON !

.....3.....2.....1

AAEK:
HAHWHWAHAHAHAHAHAHAHHAHAAAAAHAHHAHAHAHAHA
HAHAHAHAAHHAAHHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHHH
AAHAHHAAHAHAHHAAHHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAH
HAHAHAHAAHHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHHAHAHAHAHAH
AHA .... FML i am going to kill you, you old son of a bitch for even giving me this idea

Evellyn: WAIT WAIT WAIT !!!! ARE YOU SERIOUS HAHAHAHAHHAHA Akali: OMG DID YOU LOOK AT HIS FACE WHEN HE SAID IT HAHHAHAHAHAH

Ahri: OMG!!! OMG I CANT BREATH AHAHAHAHHAHAHA

Kai'Sa; HAHAHAHAHA NICE TRY HAAHAHAH

And for about another 10 min they were laughing nonstop... and why the fuck is Akali laughing we didn't even have sex !!!!!!!

Evellyn: Ah darling... even if you are serious.... its not like you can stop us

Hey hey hey ! Isn't that technically rape !

Ahri: And plus that would never work...

I just raised my eyebrow

(Y/N): Oh really ? Try me

They were looking at me with amused expressions. Then Ahri turned to the girls

Ahri: Should i ? Or...

Kai'Sa: Oh may i ? I wanted to try something i saw

Evellyn: Go ahead dear

And then Kai'Sa got up and started approaching me while swaying her hips

GULP

* *TIMESKIP**

Wow..... just WOW

Evellyn: You have to show me where you saw that

Kai'Sa: Sure !

I was siting on the chair across the girls while holding both my hands over my family treasure trying to hide the rock hard bonner i had on now.... the last 10 min she spent doing a lap dance that was just.... wow.... and the thing she did with her thigh.... and the way that those hips moved..... and even the

kissing she threw in.... he he he h.... NO (Y/N) SNAP OUT OF IT BASEBALL, GRANDMA. SAD KITTENS !!!!

It took about 2 more min for me to finally calm down and the girl were giggling non stop

Ahri: So you can see that wont work

Akali: Hahahahah nice try

Again why are you laughing..... fine plan C... i really didn't want to do this but you give me no choice... the things i do for FREEDOM !

(Y/N): Fine i understand...

Kai'Sa: Oh finally giving up

(Y/N): Evellyn.....

Evellyn: Yes darling ?

She was just siting with one of her elbows on the leg while supporting her head

(Y/N): I will let you do that thing

She then just twitched and was siting straight up now

Evellyn ; Really ! *purrr* what thing

(Y/N): *gulp*The one with me being upside down and my legs pointing up... and...and you jumping on me

Evellyn: .... Fine two hours ! You can be alone for 2 hours ! .... and we are doing that thing tomorrow !!!!

I mean the position is.... wow... actually this also a win for me so YAY !!! But two hours only... wtf

The rest of the girls were just looking at her in shock !

(Y/N): Ahri

Ahri: Hmmm yes (Y/N) ? tell me *smirk*

For this one you can thank Kai'Sa

(Y/N):I wont tell a certain someone about a certain picture you took

Ahri: I don't know what you are talking about ?

If we just met i would have believed her with the perfect poker face she was giving but her tails gave her away

(Y/N): Your tails are are moving and your ears perked up so yea think about it

Ahri:..... fine ! But you have to send us a message every 15 min !

..... are you fucking kidding me..... what am i ? A virgin schoolgirl going for her first party

(Y/N): Akali

AkalI: If you think you can blackmail me then you got a another thing comi....

(Y/N): I will take rides on your bike with you

Akali: Haaa that's all ?

(Y/N): That and i wont stop making pancakes

Akali: OK DEAL ! But you have to make pancakes tomorrow ! Plus don't forget you promised to take a ride with me when ever i want ! And you have to be back before NIGHTTIME !

OK THIS IS GETTING FUCKING RIDICULOUS !!!!!!!!!! I am starting to get mad HERE !.... shit fine fine only Kai'Sa is left.... now at first i was thinking she will be the hardest....

(Y/N): Kai'Sa

Kai'Sa: I am sorry (Y/N) but i will not change my mind no mater what you say to me !

She is so sweet and good and only wants the best for me... not to mention crazy kinky in bed.... but that nature is her weakness

(Y/N):... please

Kai'Sa: (Y/N).... don't beg please

(Y/N): Please... do you know how i feel... i just need some alone time.... please

Kai'Sa: I-i-i n-n-no

And for the grand finale crouch in front of her and grab her arms while doing puppy dog eyes

(Y/N): Please Kai'Sa..... all will be fine.... i promise

Kai'Sa:..... f...f.....FINE!

Easy !

Kai'Sa: But !

(Y/N): NO bodyguards

Kai'Sa:Uh.....you will wear a chip

(Y/N): OY !!!

Kai'Sa: OK OK OK just call us when you arrive at your destination and then when you finish and start coming home

Holy shit she is crazy.... i understand they mean well but this is to much the only reason i am not lashing out at them is because i understand that i scared them... but if this continues like this... i will need to get rough

TIMESKIP

Syndra: Thanks for meeting with me (Y/N).

(Y/N): No worries Syndra.... but the stuff i had to do to come here...

Syndra: Sorry ?

(Y/N):*sight* Yea never mind

I was siting in the cafe 'Leee Blan'c' and i have to say it was nice it was classy and it had that musky wood smell that goes perfect with coffee. And the best part is it was not one of those moka late chocolate bullshit places. They just had the basics ! Which earned my respect.

Syndra was siting across me and i have to say.... if she didn't say hello i would have not recognized her she was in a winter coat with a fuzzy hat on top and big red mittens

Syndra; Something wrong ?

(Y/N): Ummm you were nah *smile* you were not kidding when you told me you dress casual

Syndra: Hahahaha ! Yea i get that allot! My boyfriend Zed is always shocked when i go from public work clothes to private flee-market one

(Y/N): Hahaha i can imagine ! So tell me what can i do for you ? I presume this is not just a social call

Syndra: I actually need a favor. You remember Ashe right ?

Ah yes the sexy Russian lady who was dancing so nice.... oh my god the way she was grinding on me... he he he

Syndra; By the way you are drooling i presume that's a yes

Huh.... OH SHIT !

Syndra; Haha don't worry i saw you on the party... and that's the problem actually....

(Y/N): Huh? How come

Syndra; Well she is here again to do a presentation for my new collection... but she is supposed to be working with Ahri on that show...

(Y/N): Oh brother.....

Syndra: Yea.... she came in yesterday and when she saw who is supposed to be her partner she refused... and then Ahri found out and she also refused.... and to tell you the truth i don't want to replace Ahri i mean come on. Not only is she beautiful beyond words she is part of KD/A

(Y/N): Yea i know Ahri tends to do allot of fashion shows and even is a face on a few perfumes and cosmetics !

Syndra: Exactly... don't get me wrong Ashe is currently the best possible model you can get, but Ahri has the name and popularity..... so since you get along with both of them

(Y/N):*sigh* And technically i am to blame.... right ?

Syndra: *smile* See you get me !

(Y/N): *sigh* Fine.... il do it but don't expect a miracle... i am not what you think

Syndra: A smart-ass ?

(Y/N): ..... Good point

Syndra: Amazing i will inform Ahri when the two of you should come.... oh it started snowing ! I better get a move on before i get stuck in traffic. You should do the same. Bye !

(Y/N): *sigh*... guess il stay here and finish my coffee....

After about 15min of relaxing and enjoying i finally decided to lave. I have just enough time to grab a taxi and il be back home before dark.... fuck we really need to talk about this privacy and not allowed outside anymore.

(Y/N): Ok i better go and ughhh

????: AH sorry my bad !!!

As i was standing outside some guy bumped into me by accident... wow he is in a hurry well considering how the blizzard is going and that snow is actually already up to my ankles i understand him.... ok now just to send a message that i am going and..... seriously

tap tap tap tap

I was checking my pockets..... are you fucking KIDDING ME !!!!!! Both my phone and wallet were gone..... did that guy.... wait... my cigarettes as well what the fuck

This is a joke right ? This is some kind of a cruel joke that is being made for someones amusement

(A/N: *Nervously Whistles*)

Oh god..... this is going to be a long day... FML

TIMESKIP

I was in the elevator taping my foot in anger.... FUCK THIS DAY IS SHIT!!! None only did that bastard took my wallet and phone he also took my smokes... who takes your cigarettes

I tried 3 different buses to get on but i was refused. I didn't have the money to buy the ticket and because of the blizzard the buses were full. So the drivers just told me to get out. Then i tried taxis the first taxi that stooped it was a similar situation i told him that i don't have any money at me but he will just wait a couple of minutes when we get back for me to get the money... ofc he left
Then second time i got in and when he started moving i just mentioned it casual that he will have to wait a few moments when we get there.... he stooped right away and kicked me out yelling "How dare you fuck with me on this busy day get out"

Everyone was trying to get a taxi becalms of the blizzard... which was by half way up my knees then... after that i gave up...

It was also the first time that i was at that part of town and i actually got lost two times while coming back not to mention it took me so much longer because of the bad weather... and here i am in the elevator at 9;56pm..... sigh... how can so much shit happen in one day

The elevator then opened and i walked into the penthouse living room... all of the girl were there and it was clear they were upset...

Ahri then stood up and started approaching me... lets just explain everything and i should call the police for that robbery....

SLAP

Huh? I just got slapped and a very disappointed Ahri was looking at me

Ahri: Do you think its funny ?

(Y/N); Ahri ?

Akali: Very dick move (Y/N)..... i have no words

(Y/N): Guys i can explain

Evellyn: Darling if you are going to act like this we are going to have a problem... this is unacceptable

Evellyn didn't even want to look at me while she was taping on her phone and Kai'Sa didn't say anything she was just glaring at

.... You know what.... fuck this i had enough

Ahri: H-h-hey (Y/N) where are you going

I forcefully passed my Ahri and i entered my room, i found of the longer belts i had that i used for my pants and took it with me

Ahri: (Y/N) we are not done talking

Ahri was standing mad when i returned but i just stayed quiet took the belt and put it around my neck... the girls were looking in complete shock at me. Then i went to Ahri and i was holding the other side of the belt in front of her

(Y/N): Why don't you take it ?

Ahri: (Y/N) what are you...

I then turned around and went stood in front of Akali

(Y/N): Wait are yo waiting for Akali common take it!

Akali was just looked at me with wide eyes not moving at all

Then i moved a little to the back and started talking to all of them

(Y/N): Whats wrong guys ? Why don't you grab my leash ? Or should i get on all fours and maybe bark for you ? Will it feel better !

Evellyn: Darling this joke is going to fa...

(Y/N): NO ITS NOT!!!!!!!!!

They all winced once as i yelled.... i had fucking enough THIS BULLSHIT STOPS NOW !

(Y/N): DAFUQ AM I TO YOU ?!

Kai'Sa: We just want to...

(Y/N): What ? What do you want! Whats next will i be put in a cage ? Are you going to to maybe going to take me to a vet and put a chip in my neck ! Common Kai'Sa you already suggested that didn't you !

This all fucking day... this all fucking day is just fucking bullshit... i am hungry i am cold i want a smoke and then they decide to do this to me

(Y/N): You didn't even give me a chance to explain ! You just assumed that i did this on purpose ! I have been walking for the past 4 hours through this FUCKING BLIZZARD because some ass face decided to take my wallet and phone not to mention my smokes! WHO TAKES A MANS CIGARETTES WHEN HE ROBES THEM, THAT FUCKING INHUMANE!!!

Holy shit i was mad....

Kai'Sa: We didn't know that... are you ok DID HE HURT YOU !!

(Y/N): NO he was a pickpocket. But ofc you didn't know because you didn't want to wait for me to explain. Do you know how it fells to be fucked off by every single buss driver and taxi driver... And then i finally come home and i can finally relax and this bullshit waits for me !

Akali: Wait a minute you can really be mad at us we only...

(Y/N): Should i maybe get a hat with a flag ? You know those little hats that children wear with flags on top so that hey can find them.

This ends today, this is getting out of hand with them and will only get worse if i don't stop it

(Y/N): So hear me now. I will be allowed to go outside by myself, i will ofc inform you when i go outside and i will get a new phone. But in no reason should this bullshit ever happen again i am not some small child. Do we understand each other

Ahri: (Y/N)... we just

(Y/N): DO WE UNDERSTAND EACH OTHER!

AAEK: Yes

(Y/N): Good now if you will excuse me i am going to go and buy some cigarettes does anybody have a problem with that

Kai'Sa raised her hand like she wanted to speak

(Y/N): Yes Kai'Sa!

Kai'Sa: Ummm do you have money

(Y/N): No Kai'Sa

Kai'Sa: Do you want to borrow my credit card ?

(Y/N): YES thank you very much Kai'Sa

Akali POV

ding The elevator door closed as (Y/N) left to buy his cigarettes

Ahri: Wow....

Evellyn: Yea... he was mad

Kai'Sa: Ummm we kinda overdid it didn't we...

Ahri: Can you blame us.... something always happens when he is alone

Akali: I know right... example just now today

Evellyn: *sight* Well lets let him cool down a little now... and lets try to keep him with at least someone as much as possible... but we cant smother him from now on Ahri: But wow.... he was mad i didn't see him that pissed off since

Akali: Don't push the goku button....

Kai'Sa: Ummmm do you think he figured out the belt is still around his neck....

After 15min (Y/N) came back extremely red in the face one hand was holding the smokes and the other one his belt..... yea he didn't

Remeber always carry some extra money out of your wallet... i learned that the hard way

CHAPTER 28(Its a good thing you have us)

Wow this last chapter took such a long time, it took more then 6 hours i don't know i was just doing it very slow... also i would like to apologize my internet is fucked up for some reason its having these small Disconnects that last about 3 sec and it fucks up some of the editing. Some people already pointed it out and i thank you i fix those mistakes then right away so bear with me please and i am getting better as compared to the beginning i hope.

(Y/N) POV:

It was noon time, Kai'Sa was in the kitchen making lunch while i was in the living room vacuuming all around. Evellyn and Ahri were looking through some documents and Akali was just being lazy on the couch.

Ahri: Umm (Y/N)

(Y/N): What ?

I was still pissed of... yesterday was a fucking disaster... and not to mention the store... fuck the look that lady gave me when i came inside with the belt around my neck

Ahri: Would you like to go out for diner today ? Me and the girls were talking and....

(Y/N): No thanks, i am not in the mood to eat out today or go anywhere

Ahri: Ah ok....

And then she just returned to her papers with her ears pointing down... i felt a little bad acting like i did... but i had to send a message... and i was still a little mad how they treated me when i came back after the coffee with Syndra

Then Akali spoke in a carefree voice

Akali: Hey i was thinking to take a ride into the city latter and we can stop and buy you a new phone

(Y/N): I will think about it

Akali: Ohhh.....

She looked dejected after my refusal....

I know i was being a dick.... but man it feels good to actually have the last word for once !

RING RING

The house phone suddenly rang and Kai'Sa came out of the kitchen to answer it.

Kai'Sa: Yes hello... who? Ah sure send them up

Then i got with my vacuum to the last part which was under Evellyns legs... se just lifted her eyes and made a seductive smirk daring me to move them..... yea i don't think so

I just turned off the vacuum.....i actually heard a small growl coming from her as i turned and was about to put the machine away.... OK maybe i should stop this. There is so much i can push *DING*

And then the elevator door range and i heard something like running

????: Ifyougaysayhuh!

(Y/N): Huh?

BAM

As i turned around to those words and as my brain was processing what was going on. I saw a shoe bottom... and then it connected to my face sending me flying 2m back on my ass ... and all went dark

Kai'Sa POV:

I just saw (Y/N) flying back and falling to the floor

Ekko: Hahaha you said it !.... um (Y/N) ? You OK, bro... oi... bro ?

Ahri: WHAT THE HELL ARE YOU DOING !

Ekko: AH WAIT WAIT WAIT I AM SORRY!!!!

Ahri was already up and her hands were glowing and energy was forming in her hands

Akali: Its OK... he is just knocked out

Akali was crouching next to (Y/N) checking on him...

Ekko: Wait wait ! Seriously this is how we always say HELLO! Its true really so Kai'Sa please put down that knife Oh.... was i holding a knife..... good

Yasuo: Sorry about that girls... he is a idiot

Evellyn&Ahri *HIssss* YOU!

Yasuo: Oh shit!!! Wait come on

Evellyn: We sad that you should get all your affairs in order

Ahri: I hope you are ready to die now !

Yasuo: Wait wait !!!! Come on Akali HELP ME !!!

Akali:..... Don't kill him yet i want a turn *growling*

Yasuo: Please calm down.... and Kai'Sa don't hold that knife in front of me

Ekko: Yes girls lets just all a calm down and talk

And then it was like the voice from the void its self was heard

(Y/N): *Yesssss lets talk!*

(Y/N) Just grabbed Ekko's head and slammed it into the floor with massive force..... wow.... he is even more mad now....

(Y/N) POV :

Ekko: Like i said i am sorry now can i get a ice pack PLEASE !

I was holding a ice pack on my face while Ekko was across me on the couch begin from Kai'Sa to give her one while his nose was switching color from blue to red.... why is she holding a knife... anyway next to him was Yasuo and it was clear he wanted to just run away because of Evellyn, Ahry and Akali were giving him death stares.... ah its because of me ..... ah fuck it he is a friend... and it is my fault

(Y/N): Can you girls stop looking at Yasuo like that

Evellyn: This bastard kept quiet....

(Y/N): He kept quiet because of me ! So can you please stop blaming him, if your going to be mad at someone be at me

Evellyn gave an angry look.. but she finally decided to stop when she noticed i was not letting it go, Akali just shrugged but Ahri was still looking at him... those eyes are dangerous... she is seriously thinking of hurting him

(Y/N): Ahri..... AHRI!

Ahri: .... fine ....

Ekko: Bro how about me... can you tell Kai'Sa to give me a ice pack?

(Y/N):.... Ifyougaysaywhat

Ekko: What ?

And then i just sighted and started laughing... which Ekko and Yasuo actually joined me in then while the girls were looking at us like we are crazy

Yasuo: So how are you (Y/N) got captured by any torturers or mass murderers again

The girls actually gasped on that statement

Ekko: Nah man he already done that. For sure next person is going to be some fucked up robot or void-ling.... and if its a alien ask for some lube first !

(Y/N): Hahaha... nah still to early give it a month and the next one

Kai'Sa: STOP IT!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

Kai'Sa just screamed and when i looked towards her i saw that she was in tears... ah crap don't give me that look... i am supposed to be the one who is mad

Ekko: Umm we are just joking around

The Akali growled next to me

Akali: That is not a joking mater !

(Y/N): Kai'Sa.... its just our way of dealing with it

All the girls were now making upset faces... i guess i better stay away from this subject for now... sigh....

Yasuo: Shit.... sorry girls its just the way we are

(Y/N): Yea..... all the bad stuff that happened to us... we always dealt with it in that way

Ekko: Yea...

Ahri: *sigh* Just give us time... but i don't care if its a joke if i ever hear you speaking like that again (Y/N) i will not talk to you anymore !

She was now mad at me.... crap... luckily Akali decided to change the subject

Akali: So when did you guys get back ?

Yasuo: Just this morning ! We are actual only 20min away from you guys

Ekko: We will not stay long only three weeks !

(Y/N): Ah... only

I was disappointed... they were my best friends... my only friends... as you grow older you start to understand that the people you can count on is less and less every day

Yasuo: Yea so we came to see you and Akali actually

Akali: Hmm ?

Ekko; Well we had an idea for a new song.. and we think you would be a good fit for it...

Yasuo: And no need to change your image to much maybe just die your hair and maybe change your clothes a little

What... i like Akali's hair like this, and i also liked how she dresses!!! Then AKali just narrowed her eyes

Akali: Is Qiyana with you here... does she approve *growls*

Wow..... chick fight i guess

Yasuo: Yes... *cough* she does...

Akali: Fine i will think about it....

Nah he is lying.... she probably knows Akali is invited but for sure she doesn't approve.... and i like her image there is no need to change it...

Ekko: OK so that business is out of the way, my dear friend (Y/N) ! You, Me , Yasuo we are going for some Chain-Lightnings, Dragon Pisses and Goblin Snots TONIGHT!!!

.... ohhhhh YAY!!!!!!!

(Y/N): That my friend i approve completely !!!!

YES!!! Tonight is going to be LEGEN... wait for i....

Ahri: I thought you said you don't want to go anywhere today.....

And its gone.... i looked towards Ahri and i noticed she was making a sad face now.... even Evellyn looked dejected but then Kai'Sa started speaking and they perked up

Kai'Sa: Ah i like Dirty Mug so we can maybe join you

Akali: Oh i wanted to see it ! So its fine with me !

Ekko: Ah that would be awesome sur...

(Y/N): I am sorry, but no

They were now looking at me with shocked expressions, and even Yasuo and Ekko had their mouths open in wonder

(Y/N): No offense girls, its not that i don't want you there, but this is a guys night out. We are going to talk about stuff you wont get

Akali: Ummmm.... we can probably get you...

(Y/N): Its OK i don't want you to be bored... Anyway let me take you two to a amazing coffee shop that i found ! Its a little far but it has incredible coffee ! And we can catch up

Ekko: SURE! We can grab something to eat and go to the dirty mug then, and no worries its on Yasuo

Yasuo: Oi !

(Y/N): Hahah ofc it is, i don't have money anyway i got mugged yesterday

Yasuo: You know.... i am not surprised at all

And then as i got up with them and was about to go to my room to get my jacket Kai'Sa just grabbed my hand and spoke in sad voice

Kai'Sa: Umm.... (Y/N) lunch is ready now... i made your favorite breaded chicken with baked potatoes

..... Crap it brakes my heart to see a happy Kai'Sa sad like this... but i have to put my foot down.... that shit yesterday went to far. And they need to understand that

(Y/N): Yea no thanks ! Il grab something to eat outside. Oh and don't wait up for me i don't know when i will be back.

TIMESKIP

BustyWaitress: OK! Il be back in a few moments with your drinks

The lovely BustyWaitress took our order and left us at a corner table in Dirty Mug

Ekko: I think i am in LOVE!!!!!

Me and Yasuo both looked at each other and sighted

(Y/N): Yea, yea we know what part you are in love at

Yasuo: You are drooling

Ekko: HEY! (Y/N) is droller not me

(Y/N), Yas,Ekoo: HAhahahaha

Yasuo: So (Y/N)... you want to tell me what going on with you and the girls ?

(Y/N): Hmm what do you mean

Then Yasuo just sighted and gave me his phone..... holy shit. There were over 123 messages in the past 4 hours

(Y/N): Wow

Akali: Hey all fine ? You get to the coffee shop ?

Akali: Hey is the coffee good there ?

Ahri: I noticed (Y/N) didn't bring his scarf does he look like he is cold ?

Ahri: Hey Kai'Sa said she wont mind to come bring some home cooking if you guys still haven't eaten

Akali: Hey i am planing to go for a ride, does (Y/N) need something ?

Evellyn: I will murder you and your family if something happens

Ahri: Did you arrive to the Dirty Mug ? Is everything fine

.....

..... wow.... holy shit and some of those sounded dangerous even

I just returned the phone to Yasuo who was looking at me with a raised eyebrow

(Y/N): We had a little fight yesterday... and i am kinda pissed at them

Ekko: So what happened ?

(Y/N): I was not allowed to go outside by myself... it was like i was a 10 year old kid

Yasuo: Well you are acting like a brat now

(Y/N): Yasuo... don't crap where you don't clean

Yasuo: And don't crap where you eat

Ekko: Oi oi oi... guys calm down

Both me and Yasuo were glaring at each other now not backing down. He was going to give me one of those wise speeches now and i really wasn't in the mood for it

Ekko: Lets just wait for a drink and...

Yasuo: Tell me something (Y/N), are you happy ?

(Y/N): Huh ?

Yasuo: Why are you acting like a brat ? Your pushing buttons that you are not supposed to... and then you wont come back from it

(Y/N): ..... i know that

Yasuo: Huh ?

Yea.... i knew i was pushing it

(Y/N): *sigh* Do you know how it is... when you are never in control.... when you never feel like you belong with someone

I was not mad at the girls... not since last night i was just enjoying the attention

(Y/N): Look at me and look at the girls.... and the first thing it comes to your mind is

Ekko: Who did you sell your soul to

Yasuo: Lucky son of a bitch

Ekko: Did you brainwash them

Yasuo: Or is your dick magical

Ekko & Yasuo: Which is not

FUCK YOU!..... sight i just started laughing

(Y/N): Yea i guess i was just enjoying this you know... the girls are way out of my league....

Ekko:Wrong its like your playing a different game

Yasuo:Even on different planets

(Y/N): OK OK OK ! I get it.... all of them are just so amazing and i am a nothing... i still think that one day i will just wake up and they will be bored of me.... or open their eyes finally and leave me

Yasuo: *sight* We are the same age but you are like Ekko when it comes to some stuff

Ekko: Yea!..... wait what !

And again me and Yasuo were laughing while Ekko was pouting.

(Y/N): I would have fucked up wouldn't i... if i continued like this

Yasuo: Probably... Its a good thing you have us

Luckily i have these guys with me and we can finally relax tonight

????: OH there they are !!!

I turned around and i saw Senna with two other people. She was waving while walking towards us with a big smile on her face

(Y/N): Huh ?

Ekko: Ah sorry we forgot to mention we invited them

As thy got to our table Senna just grabbed me and gave me a big bear hug

Senna; (Y/N) I am so happy to see you again !!!

(Y/N): Ahaha same Senna how are you

Senna: Amazing! Oh and this is my boyfriend Lucian

Lucian: Sup man! Good to meat you

(Y/N): Same its a pleasure

Senna: And this is Qiyana

And then i finally looked at the girl she showed me, she was about my height maybe just a inch taller on the darker side.... and that ass..... omg it can give Kai'Sa a run for the money... he he he.... NO (Y/N) BAD (Y/N) !!!!!!!!!

Senna: *Hi there (Y/N) i am so happy to finally meet you in person*

(Y/N): Ahhhh h-h-hey there. I am also h-h-happy

Ekko: Oh yea i forgot you spoke Spanish

Yea i remember one time when i called them and they introduced Qiyana. She wasn't really paying attention to me then but once she heard i can speak Spanish her interest was peaked and we talked a little in the call

Then she just hugged me and gave me a kiss on the cheek... ohhh

Yasuo: Oi your getting red

Ekko: Hahahahha look at him he is like a tomato

Qiyana: Hihihi *gigling *

Lucian: I hope you don't mind us joining you

(Y/N):*cough* Nah i am fine ! The more the merrier right

Yea its going to be fun tonight.. lets just hope i don't get to drunk

Kai'Sa POV:

Akali: Oh Ekko just posted a picture

Ahri: Oh really let me se

We just finished dinner and were in the living room doing some preparations for our next concert. I was still sad and upset that (Y/N) was mad at us but i understand that we went to far yesterday. I was thinking of making him his favorite breakfast tomorrow until Ahri screamed

Ahri: Wait !!!! ARE THOSE SENNA AND QIYANA!!

Akali: What no he said its a guys night..... WHY IS HE SO RED !!!....

And there it was they were siting in the Dirty Mug having a good time! While (Y/N) was sitting next one of the members of True Damage Qiyana being all red and blushing

Evellyn: *growls* Girls.... i want to have a drink tonight

Kai'Sa: Oh... i know the perfect place *growls*

Chapter 29 (Il be back in a moment)

OMFG they extended my vacation again screw this corona.... this is now dangerous lol anybody from Serbia/Novi Sad looking for a waiter i need to start working again.

(Y/N) POV:

Qiyana: *And then hahaha and then he wakes up hahaha and his face is all over it*

(Y/N): *HAhahahahahahhaah OMG! I can only imagine !!! Hahahah*

Ekko: OI!!!!! Can you two stop talking in your own little language !!! Its annoying !

We have been already for about 2 hours in the Dirty Mug and i have to say i was having a blast. It was so good to spend time with Yasuo & Ekko after such a long time. I knew Senna from before and i liked her plus boyfriend Lucian was a pretty cool guy, and Qiyana... i have to say she was making me laugh so hard

Senna: Oh come on leave the love birds alone

Which just made me blush in shock and clear my throat....

(Y/N): Come on Senna we are just talking *cough*

Lucian: You were right he really gets red

And they all started laughing again... meh who cares i am having a good time

Lucian: So (Y/N) i kinda wanted to ask you something.... but i was waiting for you to have few drinks

Oh god is it about the girls... seriously Ekko probably couldn't keep his mouth shut and

Lucian: How did it feel when you were with Jhin

Ekko; OI!!!

Senna: ... i am sorry (Y/N) i kinda told him

I was just looking at in shock at him

(Y/N): Why do you want to know ?

Lucian: Truthfully... i am a soccer player and a pretty good one if i do say so myself.... and.....

Ah i see... i know the sports world is extremely popular and i also know that their own stars are in centers of attention, i can only imagine how much crazy mails he get from good to plain old death threats

(Y/N): *sigh* I was scared shit less.... that bastard was crazy... and to tell you the truth i still cant believe i am alive after all of that... if you guys didn't get my message i would be

Ekko: Man... i cant remember the bullshit that started as a stupid joke actually saved your life

Yea it was just a joke.... a lucky joke that saved me... hmmm wait

(Y/N): Oh yea i wanted to ask how did you guys watch the stream ??? I thought the signal was blocked

Yasuo: Oh that you can thank Qiyana over here

I then just looked towards Qiyana who made a huge smile my way.... wow its making me blush

Yasuo: She hacked into the police network and we were able to pass their blockade

Qiyana: I tried to access the broadcast and get the streaming location at first, but the encryption was just impossible, i am glad i was at least able to

do this *smile*

(Y/N): You have no idea how glad i am you did... you actually saved my life

She then just made a huge smile again.... oh god stop smiling like that on me i am going to start grinning like crazzy

And then every fiber of my being screamed in fear as my spine was frozen in fear

????: Ohhhh fancy meeting you guys here !

Senna: Hiiiii AKALI!!!!! I missed you so much !!!!!!!

I just slowly like a broken doll who didn't have its neck oiled in 100 years turned my head to the sound...

Ahri: Hey guys how are you

Kai'Sa: We were in a mood for a drink so we decided to go out

Evellyn: So this is where you were darling, having fun ?

gulp

The girls were all here, standing next to our table.... and holy shit man

????: Wow....

????: Is this some kind of event

????: I i need to go to the bathroom for 10 min

Everyone was just staring and drooling like crazy.... and i cant blame them. The way they were dressed was unreal... its like they were going to the club not some bar....oh me like, me like so much he he he..... NO!

Yasuo: Ummmm *gulp* why are you girls..

Ahri: Well since you guys decided to have a guys night out *smirks*

She just narrowed her eyes and gave me a smirk during that phrase.... ah crap Evellyn: We decided to have a girls night out

Oh god the way they are looking at me..... shit how can i explain this

Senna: Come join us ! We were just talking about...

Evellyn: No thank you dear we are going to sit somewhere there we don't want to disturb you

Oh god can this get any worse... then i looked to the side and saw it can. Akali and Qiyana were just glaring at each other

Qiyana: Akali

Akali: Qiyana

..... wow they really don't like each other. Then the girls just turned and sat on the table next to us....

Ekko: *ahem* Well anyway how about some karaoke !

(Y/N): Oh hell no!

Ekko: Come on man ! You cant get worse when you are on rock bottom, you must have improved somehow

Yasuo: Why do you want to make the whole bar suffer....

Senna: Oh that would be awesome !

(Y/N): ..... i need a drink

TIMESKIP

I already had a few drinks.... and i was not getting drunk which made me stay upset... and the reason for me being upset were those four.

Ahri: Oh thank you so much for the drink your a true gentleman *smile* and thank you for these wonderful snacks

????1: N-n-no problem hehehe

????:2 O-o-of course

Kai'Sa: Ah i see so that's why this drink is called like that hihihi *gigling* i didn't know that

????3: *gulp* Aha, *blush* yea that's the reason he named it like

????4: Yea and this drink now is called because....

Evellyn: Oh my, so the rules are so much different then the other version

????3: Yea its like a different world compared to the previous one

????4: Aha... if you want we can show you some day how we play with that version

????5: But still nothing compared to version 2 point....

?????6: And then this guy just falls down while his moped is still standing up

Akali: HAhaahahh you are so funny

.....are you fucking kidding me.Really gentleman for buying you a drink, and come on Kai'Sa you already know why its called like that and please don't bullshit me Evellyn you have no fucking idea what he is talking about and Akali if your going to do a fake laugh make it believable i can see your faking it.

Yasuo: Umm dud calm down

(Y/N): What !

Yasuo: I can see your face just relax you know they are doing this on purpose right

Yea i did... they were siting on the table next to us surrounded by a group of guys who were doing everything they can to talk to them without drooling all over them... grrrrr... i know this is all on purpose and they are getting back at me... but stile it pisses me off..... yea ironic

(Y/N): I know... *sight* bathroom

As i finished with the toilet and was washing my hands Lucian suddenly showed up next to me.

Lucian: Hey man i got to know, you hit any of them ?

(Y/N): HUH ! What why would you ask that

He actually caught me off guard with that question and i was a little shocked

Lucian: Well i think you are pretty cool and i don't want to make you upset to steal one of yours

Huh?

(Y/N): What do you mean by that ?

Lucian: Oh nothing il just make a move now, i like that foxy girls you know exotic and all that

...i want to punch him... i really want to punch him in the face and brake his nose now

(Y/N): What about Senna ?

Lucian: Oh shes cool and all but come on man! Do you see those girls and whats just a little bit of fun for one night *grin*

.... motherfucker.... i was wrong this guy is a fucking douche

Lucian: Yea so sorry in advance if i hit a girl you like, you know but what can i do don't blame the player blame the game

And then he left me.... shit..... why didn't i punch him while i had a chance..... i think i saw a Axe there used as display

TIMESKIP

If i was upset before i was definitely pissed off now ! Lucian has spend the last 20min siting next to Ahri and talking to her non stop. Both of them were laughing and Ahri was even giving him those little smiles of hers.... wait why is he touching your hand!!!!!!!!! And not to mention the crowd of guys was still around

I then looked towards Senna but she was to busy talking to Akali now about their ideas for the next song

Senna: So its going to be similar to Giant's but we are going to speed it up a little

Akali: Hmmm i see that could work

Senna: Yea and your only be with us for about one month down in the south nothing to long and for your image just a hairstyle upgrade and color change

One month! She will be gone for one month !!!!.... and i like her image and WHY ARE YOU NOT NOTICING WHAT YOUR BOYFRIEND IS DOING!!!!!!!!!!!

Ekko: Holy shit man you are growling

(Y/N): What !

Yasuo: Man just relax you kinda deserve it

(Y/N): I know that.... but man.... do they have to go this far and that Lucian ! What the fuck

Ekko: Yea.... we told Senna already that he looks like those types but she doesn't want to listen to us

Yasuo: Lets just finish this drink and go, they will probably leave once you are gone

(Y/N): *sigh* Yea.... lets just.. guaghhhh

Qiyana just sat next to me while hitting my side with her body

Qiyana: Ok i can see you stooped having a good time so lets change that

(Y/N): Huh ?

Qiyana: Lets go sing a song

To those words both Yasuo and Ekko just let out a sound of pain

(Y/N): Ummm i don't know if you know... but me and singing is

Qiyana: Hahah don't worry i actually watched a video of you, it was very funny but in a cute way

CUTE!!!!!!!!! No no come on i cant...

Then i looked to the side and saw Evellyn laughing with one of the random people and whispering something in his ear.....

(Y/N): OK two can play this game

Qiyana: Is that a yes ? *smile*

(Y/N): You know what yea, yes, lets go sing

And then Ekko and Yasuo let another voice of pain

YASUO POV

Yasuo: Oh god why did you give him the idea !

Ekko: M-m-man i was joking !! i Never thought he would do it !!!!

Why i was groaning in pain and Ekko entering depression for knowing what kind of evil he released upon us tonight Senna drew our attention

Senna:Huh where is (Y/N) ?

Which actually made all other girls look our way.... this lucky bastard

Ekko: He is going to the stage to sing...

And then all of them except Lucian groaned in pain

Senna: .. i was joking when i said he should ....

Akali: Oh god why did you give him the idea

Lucian: Come on guys he cant be that bad ?

And then we all groaned in pain again

Senna; Huh but Qiyana is gone as well ?

Ekko: She left with him

.... stupid Ekko, and i am glad he understood it was stupid since all the four girls gave him a quick death stare that was screaming "What did you say?"

Ekko: Hiiii.... w-w-well apparently she noticed he wasn't having a good time so she took him to sing t-t-together

And then just like on order the voice announcing a night of pain and despair began

(Y/N): Ladies and Gentleman, Boys and Girls, Orcs and Elves

Senna: I thought he gets extremely red when he is in the center of attention

Ekko: Not after all those Goblin Snot's

Ahri: I suddenly don't like that i have enhanced hearing....

Lucian: Oh don't be like that i think these ears are cute

Ahri just gave him a fake smile and returned her attention to (Y/N)... i am just wondering how Senna didn't hear that... or she just chose not to

(Y/N): I would like to introduce Qiyana the lovely damsel from True Damage who will grace you with her voice tonight

Kai'Sa: *whisper* i thought i was your damsel.... *growls*

Oh god man just stop you are seriously going to die tonight !

(Y/N): So tonight we will be singing a very popular song that became a hit over night from the new tv series that we all watch now

Ekko; OHHHH GOD MAN PLEASE DON'T BUTCHER IT !!!!!!!!!

The people in the bar just gave a 'HAR HAR' knowing the song... what they didn't know is that they will be listening to the voice of pure evil

(Y/N): *ahem*

When a humble bard
Graced a ride along
With.....

Can i get killed by Evellyn now....

Ekko: NO NO NO PLEASE STOP !!!!

TIMESKIP

(Y/N) POV

Wow..... i suck...

The only reason people were not throwing stuff at me was because of Qiyana, no matter how bad and tone def i was she was amazing and was able to balance us out somehow...

Qiyana: Hahahaha that was so FUN!

(Y/N): Come on it was awful...

Qiyana: Yes, yes it was hahahah but it was fun

I actually just smiled at that, she really is very cool. When we returned to the table i actual notice the atmosphere was dark... and it was not because of my singing

(Y/N): Ummm i know i was bad but

Yasuo: Its not you

Ekko: Lucian tried to kiss Ahri

And everything in my mind froze.

(Y/N): *whisper* What

Ekko: During the singing he tried to get Ahri to kiss him, she pulled back a few times and then he got a little more forceful until she just slapped him.... Senna saw it all

(Y/N): I see....

I then looked towards the girls table and they were all just siting there... alone and upset... This is because of me.... i thought i saw some guy's ruining away the ones who were annoying Evellyn and even Kai'Sa was looking dejected and disappointed. Akali actually had her kunai stabbed on the top of the table

Yasuo: The rest of those guys were not better....

This is all because of me... and then i looked towards the bar and my rage came out

Qiyana: Oh poor Senna i can only... huh (Y/N) where you going

(Y/N): Il be back in a moment

Ekko: OI!... he wouldn't

As i was approaching the bar Lucian noticed me

Lucian: Man you should have told me she was such a bitch

(Y/N): Bitch you say....

Lucian: Yea man all night she is leading me here and then just acts all high and mighty and at the end she is like NO

(Y/N): You don't say

I guess he was not paying really any attention to me since the guy who was standing next to him actually moved a little to the side

Lucian: *sigh* Yea man, guess il try that girl Evellyn next she looks very easy.... hm or maybe Kai'Sa you know how nice girls are a few compliments and she will take of her pants

My hand just grabbed the chair on the side trying everything i can to calm down and not lash out.... its not worth it... just calm down Lucian: I would go for Akali but man you can see shes a slut, you see how she dresses i bet she is just screaming for somebody to fuck her..... *SLAM* GUAAAAAAAAAH

EKKO POV

SLAM* *CRASH* *STEP STEP STEP* *THUD THUD THUD THUD

Ekko: HOLY SHIT !!!!!!!

(Y/N) just walked towards Lucian... i knew he head a couple of drinks and he was upset but man i never imagined this ! He just suddenly picked up the chair and hit Lucian over his face with it.... the guy flew back a good 3 m back and fell to the floor. Then before we could even say anything he just walks casually to him gets on top of him and starts screaming while punching him

(Y/N): FIRST OFF AHRI IS NOT A BITCH YOU SHOULD BE HAPPY THAT SHE EVEN LOOKED YOUR WAY ! YOU SHOULD FEEL HAPPY! I KNOW I ALWAYS AM

OH god the button is pushed and he just continued punching him

(Y/N): SECOND OFF! IF EVELLYN IS NOT EASY! YOU SHOULD BE HONORED THAT YOU ARE EVEN ALLOWED TO BE IN A 200m PRESENCE OF HER

Nah this is not the button... this guy pulled the whole leaver

(Y/N): THIRD OFF ! KAI'SA DESERVES EVERY SINGLE COMPLIMENT SHE GETS AND IF YOU THINK YOU CAN EVEN TOUCH HER WITH YOUR FILTHY HANDS I WILL FUCK YOU UP!

You are already fucking him up... wow i never saw him this mad wait man don't kick him in the balls that's just dirty !

(Y/N): AND THE FOURTH AND FINAL ONE IFFFFF YOUUUUUUU EVEEEEEEER THIIIIIINK OF CALLING MY AKALI A SLUT!!!!! I WILL MURDER YOU YOUSONOFABITCH. SHE DOESN'T NEED NO IMAGE CHANGE SHE IS PERFECT !!!

What does her image change have to do with anything...

Lucian: MOTHERFUCKER!

CRASH

OH SHIT! Lucian just got a leg between them and pushed (Y/N) off causing him to crash on the table and then he jumped on him. The girls then

just jumped from the table but Yasuo slammed his hand on the table in front of him and yelled

Yasuo: STAY OUT OF THIS! THIS IS A GUYS FIGHT DON'T HELP HIM !

What do you mean stay out of this ! THIS IS (Y/N) !!!! He is going to get his ass kicked now !

(Y/N) POV:

I am just thinking now.... how movies are bullshit...

Lucian: YOU SONOFBITCH !

THUD THUD

How come the weak guy always gets strength when he is pissed.... its just bullshit

Lucian: Getting cocky !

THUD THUD

I was completely drunk... but even if i was not drunk i would still punch him after those things he just said.

Lucian: I am going to beat the shit out of you so hard

It was my turn on the floor to get punched by Lucian.... and it hurt like hell i tried to block but there was no helping it... he was bigger then me and stronger then me in any way... my punches probably only worked in the beginning because i took him by surprise.

Then he stood up from me and raised a chair above his head while standing above me.

Lucian: Let me return the favor you gave m... GUAAAAAH

SMACK, CRASH

Suddenly Yasuo just showed up with a pole from the billiard table and bashed him on the head sending him flying to the tables on the side... he was not getting up anymore... i forgot this guy likes to practice sword fighting. Then he just looked down to me and extended his hand

Yasuo: This is a guys fight.... so guys get to interfere

I have no idea what he was talking about.... but for some reason i wanted to thank him....

(Y/N): Can we go now... i just want to leave

TIMESKIP

I was siting on the balcony in the penthouse having a smoke. Me and Yasuo just left after that fight and he gave me a ride home and left me her after checking that i was ok....

(Y/N): *sight*.... he kicked my ass so hard...

I checked my face on the way here and it was a mess, i had black and blue bruises all over it and my nose was even bleeding a little.... shit... i really got destroyed... and i wanted to act cool

The door to the balcony opened and the girls showed up i was looking away trying to hide my face but it was of no use they saw it

Ahri: OMG (Y/N) ARE YOU OK !!

Ahri and Kai'Sa jumped on me touching me and slowly going over my bruises.... it made me feel even worse

(Y/N): Yea.... no worries

Akali: What do you mean no worries !

Evellyn: Darling why did you do that! Good thing he didn't hurt you even more

.... yea i feel worse now... instead of looking cool

Kai'Sa: Seriously! You were so coll and everything but don't do it again

Huh?

Ahri: *mischievous smile* soooo how happy are you when ever i look at you

That smile... that damned smile

Evellyn: mmm *licks lips* i think i need to reward this behavior, its not always that a man stands up for me

gulp ok ok calm down just calm down.... and what reward are we talking about

Kai'Sa: *gigling* And i love it when you compliment me, *whisper* and maybe you can touch me latter

Oh.....oooohhhhhhhhh.... YAY!

Then after about a few more min of them teasing me, the three girls left and i was alone on the balcony with a quiet Akali

(Y/N): Ummm Akali ?

AkalI: Yours?

... OH SHIT!

Akali: Perfect ?

I was kinda pissed of the most there... after that talk about her leaving for 30 days and also about getting a image change it kinda just combined in all of it

(Y/N): Ummmm you see.... i kinda....

Then she just got up went to the balcony door and

click locked it.

She then turned towards me and lifted her skirt showing me how her panties were soaking wet.

Akali: *heavy breathing* Watching you fight like that for me... turned me on

..... YOU RAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAANG!!!!!!!!

OK time for some persona 5 strike see you in the evening

CHAPTER 30(why do i feel blueberries suddenly)

No wise words now

(Y/N) POV:

KNOCK KNOCK

Kai'Sa: *Breakfast is ready*

I woke up after Kai'Sa knocked on the door informing us that breakfast is done.... ah crap i hate waking up in the morning... and my head was still pounding me from all the Goblin Snots i had yesterday..... and god is this room filthy

I was laying in Akali's bed with her head on my chest sleeping. All around me was garbage and leftover boxes of ramen

(Y/N): Why is there a ramen box stuck to the ceiling.... i mean how

That ramen box above me was pissing me off.... yea we are cleaning the girls room's today no more wait....but man..... Last night was just crazy. *acho*

Ah crap am i getting a cold... well considering the stuff what we did on the balcony last night i am not surprised. We didn't even get inside and already she was on top of me kissing me and grinding. Then after a few moments i know i was behind her pounding her while she was pushed to the balcony door screaming ... wow she likes to scream

At one moment she actually got even more wild and its when i noticed Kai'Sa on the other side of the door... she was just looking at us through the glass not moving.... which actually turned on Akali even harder being watched like that by her..... the craziest thing is that Kai'Sa didn't leave she was just red watching us... and then i got turned on

After some time Kai'Sa finally run away and somehow i don't know how we were able to move to the bedroom..... All the poster on the walls were bent and all the stuff that was on the table was knocked down ...yea some of those positions were crazy, Akali really likes to get submissive and even started pushing me to talk dirty to her... at one moment we were even back on the balcony again and i still don't know how we got there

I thought we were going to be finished at about somewhere around 3, but she just laid down her head while raising her ass and told be "I have been a bad girls professor, you need to punish me".... it lasted 2 more hours after that

shake shake

(Y/N): Akali wake up. Its time for breakfast

Akali: Mmmm what are we having ?

(Y/N): I have no idea but i think i smell waffle

She then opened her eye and looked towards me and made a small smile

Akali: I don't want waffle

(Y/N): Ummm.... what do you want

Before i could even figure out what was going on she just slid down and said

Akali: Meat!

And then her mouth was sucking on my little friend

Oh..... OHhhhhhhhhhh.... YAY!

TIMESKIP

Ahri: *Yaaawn*

We were siting at the breakfast table finishing up, Akali let me go after that little appetizer and decided its best just to go and eat normally

(Y/N): You OK Ahri? Didn't sleep to much ?

Ahri: Mhm yea.... the security woke me up when they called

Kai'Sa: Huh ? What happened

Ahri: *sight* Apparently some two idiots were fucking on the balcony and screaming making the neighbors upset

And then she looked towards me..... OH CRAP. I know i was going full crimson mode and was about to scream in embarrassment

Evellyn: You know darling its fine to be kinky... but remember only the apartment is soundproof

Can i get any more red!

Kai'Sa: And that doesn't include the balcony *blush*

Why you blushing now!!! You were watching us there for half an hour even started touching yourself!!!

Ahri: And please use the other wall next time! You guys actually knocked down a few of my pictures

Lightning strike me now.... and why are you all looking at me, Akali is the one who wa...

(Y/N): She is not here....

Kai'Sa: She disappeared after Ahri mentioned security ....

As i was thinking of how Akali is a traitor suddenly Evellyn grabbed my head and purred into my ear.

Evellyn: I still need to show you my appreciation for defending me last night darling. So how about we go to my room now and i make you scream like you made Akali scream.....

Oh.....oooohhhhhhh

'YOU RAAAAAAAAAAAANG' WAIT NO!!!

(Y/N): Ah i *cough* cant

Evellyn: Huh ?

(Y/N): *ahem* I actually have plans today

Kai'Sa: Oh! Are you going somewhere ?

(Y/N): Yea i need to go to the PC shop and get the parts that are missing, i have been prolonging that repair for a long time

Evellyn looked a little disappointed actually... i think she wanted to spend some time with me...

(Y/N): Ummmm do you want to go together Evellyn ?

Evellyn: *smile* I would love to

I mean its OK.... what can go wrong ?

TIMESKIP

Me and my big mouth.....

We were in the elevator that was going to the fourth floor of... " THAT" Mall... sight

(Y/N): Ummm Evellyn... i kinda don't want to go here

She just smiled and bend down planting a kiss on my mouth

Evellyn: Nonsense darling this place has the best possible selection that you can find

Sigh.... i guess she just doesn't get it

As we walked out of the elevator we were greeted by that amazing sight... and then my amazement was gone when i saw those ServantBastards standing next to us... huh? Don't they look a little to afraid

HeadBastard: Ummm*gulp* M--m-misteress Evellyn.... may we assist you today ?

Unlike last time they were not running towards her trying to get in the line they were all just in the back waiting.... oh yea... she did kinda made chaos here that time because of me

Evellyn: No we are fine

They actually all sighted in relief.... OK now i am happy and its worth being back here hahahah

(Y/N): OK Evellyn lets go find the parts, and if you want to do some shopping i don't mind !

Evellyn: Ummm... darling you have a huge smile on your face

TIMESKIP

We were siting on the top floor waiting for our coffer. The shopping went well, well mostly because where ever she would pass people would just move away and any store we enter they would just get out... its nice when you don't have to wait in line.

I was even able to buy some parts for my PC finally and Evellyn actually bought a phone while we were inside... i was sure it was for me until she took it out of the box and then pulled her phone out while removing the cover and taking the Sim card out of it

Evellyn: Here this is for you

(Y/N): Ummm this is your phone right ?

Evellyn: You need one since that one got stolen and i know you said how you liked to take hand me downs from me... plus i left a present in the picture gallery *grin*

She made a small grin when she told me those words so of course i went in to check it right away..... *YOU RAAAAAAAANG*

(Y/N): *BLUSH* E-e-e-Evellyn !!! This is

It was full of naked pictures of her in different posses

Evellyn: Now don't you dare and go play with yourself when we come back, you need to share

He...hehhe sharing is nice

crash

One of the waiters accidentally drooped his tray and coffee fell on Evellyns boots. She just looked towards him and that guy in my shock fell to the floor sobbing

Waiter: I am so sorry !!! PLEASE PLEASE FORGIVE ME

Evellyn: It's fine....

Waiter: NO PLEASE DON'T HURT ME PLEASE !!!!

Evellyn had a shocked expression on her face....

RandomPerson: Omg he drooped it on HER!!!

RandomPerson2: Poor guy... he will be lucky if he survives

RandomPerson3: Wow what bad luck, in all of the days when that monster queen is here

RandomPerson4: Why does she shop her! I cant relax when ever she comes !!!

RandomPerson5: Yea its so hard... i wish she would just leave

People started murmuring all around us while the guy was sobbing on the floor and crying begging her to spare him, i looked towards Evellyn expecting her to lash out on these randoms but..... she looked hurt and dejected... crap..... hmm i know

(Y/N): Evellyn lets go i know a very good place to get some lunch !

Evellyn: Huh?

(Y/N): Yea just pick up your stuff i am taking you to my secret hideout !

TIMESKIP

(Y/N): Oy Panth ! You here ?

Pantheon: Just a moment !

We entered a small store in on of the back alleys behind the flea-market. As we sat down on the chairs a big man with a full muscle build came to greet us. Now if you see Pantheon on the street you would think he was some Body Builder or a fighter... nah this guy was the..

Pantheon: Welcome to the best bakery in town ! OHHHHHHHHHHH (Y/N)!

(Y/N): Hey there Panth how are you !

Pantheon: Hahahah you know the same ! Good at baking sucking at love !

Yep... a freaking baker that looks like he can brake stones with his fists

Pantheon: Oh and who is this ?

(Y/N): This is Evellyn

And then i turned to her and whispered

(Y/N): *whisper* Get ready... and please be nice he really has good food

Evellyn: Huh?

(Y/N): 3....2.....1....

Pantheon: OH MY MUSE!!!!!! YOUR BEAUTY SHINES LIKE A MOONLIGHT IN THE DARKEST NIGHT!!!!!

In just three seconds Pantheon was on the floor in front of Evellyn holding some flowers.... he does this every time some lady walks into the store and i still don't know from where he pulls them out

Evellyn: Huh!

Hahahah this was definitely worth it, Evellyn was just there with a shocked face looking down on him

Pantheon: TO THINK THAT SUCH A BEAUTIFUL BIRD WOULD GRACE MY BAKERY! THE TV DOES NOT DO YOU JUSTICE OH SWEET DIVA OF KD/A Oh he actually know..... PFFFFFF hahahahahhahahahahhaha

Evellyn was looking at him and then turned her attention to me since i couldn't keep my laughter under control anymore hahahah. She looked pissed but then just made a evil grin.... oh crap Before i could do anything her tongue was slammed into my mouth as she pulled me over the table

Evellyn: Sorry but i am taken

Wow..... huff.... that kiss was... yea still cant compare to her

Pantheon: I understand..... but no worries, my love for you will never die and i will wait for...

And just as another lady entered he suddenly jumped in front of her with the same pose

Pantheon: DID YOU GET HURT MY ANGEL WHEN YOU FELL FROM HEAVEN

RandomWoman: Waaaaah

slap and she run away... this is why only guys buy here... woman always run away

Evellyn was just looking at me with a shocked expression

(Y/N): Yea he is always like that... but don't be fooled his food is the best one in town

Evellyn: If you say so darling....

(Y/N): Yo pantheon can you give me 2 specials one with blueberries and one with strawberries please? We are hungry here

He was still massaging hiss cheek when i called him

Pantheon: Sure sure give me a sec

Then he brought two filled with fruits and cream, and after one bite i was in heaven... god this man can bake! To bad he is such a perv

Evellyn: Wow!

Even Evellyn is impressed openly and i know how hard that is to do. This just confirms his skill ! Yea lets bring some more for the girls.

After we picked up the pastries and got back into the car i was happy that Evellyn was looking better. So i just kinda used the moment and kissed her on the cheek

(Y/N): I know you were upset and the mall and i am sorry... i know that it happened because of me... even if they call you a monster me and girls

know how you really are !

.... ah crap she is just looking at me with wide eyes... but then she liked her lips and pureed while starting to crawl over the seats to me

Evellyn: Now now darling aren't you becoming brave

(Y/N): Evellyn !

Evellyn: Ah yes this red flustered face is the one i want to see..... you know *whisper* i don't think i can wait until we get back...

Ohhhh.... OHHHHHHHHHH

Thank god the windows are darkened.... but it still didn't help with my moaning

TIMESKIP

(Y/N): We.... are back..

I was dead tired.... these last 2 hours in the car were..... i feel dirty

Kai'Sa: Hey guys.... ummm (Y/N) are you OK?

(Y/N): Yea.... just tired

Evellyn just gave a small laugh to that and started walking towards her room swaying her hips Evellyn: I will see you for lunch, i need to get a shower

God this woman is going to be the end of me

Akali: She look very happy... something happen ?

Akali was there in front of me taking the bags for me and giving me a hand Akali: Umm... why are you looking at me like that !

Yea i was staring

(Y/N): Traitor...

Akali: Wait what did i do ?!!

Kai'Sa just laughed to that and mentioned lunch will be ready in 15min... oh god i just want to go to sleep.

It was very dangerous now to go to my bed since i know i would get knocked out right away so i decided to go sit in the living room. Ahri was on the sofa going through some papers until she heard me sit and just smiled

Ahri: HEY! (Y/N) i got some free time later so i was wondering if you want to go with me for some shopping

.... oh god no please let me sleep... and i heard about Ahri's shopping... it even makes Akali tired

(Y/N): Sorry Ahri... but i just want to go to sleep after lunch.... i am just to...

Before i could even finish she just cut me off with a upset voice

Ahri: Fine!

..... please not today... and my throats hurts so much

(Y/N): Fine we can go after....

Ahri: You don't have to if you don't want to ! I am not going to force you

sigh... i just want some sleep... meh fuck it

(Y/N): NO i really want to... and i will even bring my VIP card from Syndra

Ahri: REALLY!!!!

Her ears were now perked up and her tales were waging non stop..... but then she just stooped and she started purr while giving me a seductive smirk

Ahri: And if you are good maybe we can play in the car on the way there

(Y/N): *stare*

Ahri:*stare*

This lady is going to ... wait why do i feel blueberries suddenly

(Y/N): *barf*

Ahri: AHHHHHH MY PAPERS! WAIT NOT THERE THAT'S MY SHOES ITS WORSE!!

TIMESKIP

Akali POV:

Kai'Sa closed the door to (Y/N)'s room as she walked out of it

Ahri: IS HE FINE !!!

Kai'Sa: Yes dear he is OK, just a common cold

Evellyn: And i wonder whose fault that is

The then all looked towards me....

Akali: Sorry.....

CHAPTER 31 (I don't speak Russian)

OK so the last chapter was supposed to be much longer... but i guess i just felt bored, so after a 2brake lets try this one. I don't know if will publish a chapter tomorrow since i was thinking of writing 1-2 chapters for the other story i am planing in the
'Claymore x Malereader' just to see if i will grab someones attention. Don't worry il try not to leave this one on a cliffhanger..... *nervous laugh* il try

(Y/N) POV:

(Y/N): *moans*...ohhh....*moans*..... ohhhhhhhh yes *moans*

Yasuo: OK CAN YOU STOP!!!

(Y/N): Sorry.....*moans*..... this cigarette is so amazing

I was siting on the balcony at our penthouse with Yasuo. We were currently smoking some brand he brought from down south and it was amazing

Yasuo: I am glad you are feeling better... how did you even get sick

(Y/N): *cough cough* Ahem well you see i went outside in just a T-shirt for my morning smoke and one thing led to another...

Yea i was sick for 2 days with a common cold. I was only able to leave my room for the bathroom and even that was hard, luckily Kai'Sa then angel she is didn't mind coming and feeding me.... not to mention at one moment.... she was a little to kinky... and kinda got me to do a work out helping me sweat allot... he he he

Yasuo: yea yea... *sight* i still cant believe Akali doesn't want to join us for that new album... i was sure we got her but then she just calls two days ago

and tell us " Sorry but NO, my image is already perfect and i don't want to change it" what ever that means

It took al my strength not to grin in his face... yea Akali is not going to go away so that makes me happy, not to mention she will still keep dressing like usual which is a OK for me ! Then i heard the balcony door open and Ahri came out

Ahri: (Y/N) I was wondering if you want.... oh... hello Yasuo....

Wow awkward... she went from excited to disappointed in a instant

Yasuo: Hey Ahri, sup ?

Ahri: *sigh* nothing i wanted to ask something (Y/N) but since you are here i guess you have plans

Yasuo: Ummm yea we were planing to hang out today....

Now i might be a idiot when it comes to women... but even i can see whats going on here..... *sigh* i just cant look at her like this

(Y/N): Hey Yasuo.... can we hang tomorrow ?

Yasuo looked at me with a raised eyebrow and then towards Ahri... then he just made a sight like he understood and stood up

Yasuo: Ah our (Y/N) has grown up... fine man but we need to talk tomorrow about the Larp OK ?

(Y/N): Sure, and thanks i owe you one

Then we shock hands and he left leaving Ahri looking at me in confusion

(Y/N): So..... what do you want to do ?

After those words she made a huge smile and her tails were wagging like crazy

TIMESKIP

Ahri: OK so we can go to the mall first! And then we can go to the flea market i stile haven't been there and i feel jealous about that and....

Yea she was so exited. Ahri tends to act like a full on mature woman, her dedication to the team is no joke... but sometimes she can be such a child... i think it makes her look very cute

RING RING RING her phone just started ringing while i was getting dressed

Ahri: Hello.... ah hello Syndra !

.... why do i have a feeling i am forgetting something

Ahri: Mhm nothing special just planing to spend a day with (Y/N).... uhu..... aha.....really..... you don't say....

And now she was glaring at my direction.... her tales were not wagging anymore..... oh shit i forgot

Ahri: Well..... if (Y/N) said so..... fine!

And she hang up..... crap think think think !!!!!

Ahri: Sooo apparently you said Syndra we will meet with her and Ashe..... when you were with her for coffee .....

THINK THINK THINK!!!!!!!

Ahri: So shall we go *growling*

(Y/N): Did i mention how beautiful you look today

Ahri then smiled.... it was not a nice smile.... FML

TIMESKIP

Ahri: I finally get some free time ! And i have to spend it with that stupid Russian Bitch

(Y/N): Watch the curve !!!!

Ahri: And here i was thinking that i will finally get to spend some alone time with you!

(Y/N): watch out FOR THAT BICYCLE RIDER!!!

Ahri: But nooooooooo, i have to go to Syndras now because you made a stupid promise

(Y/N): ITS RED !!!! ITS REEEEDDDD!

Ahri: Its fine! According to Akali Red is just another Yellow

(Y/N): NO ITS NOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOTTTTTTTTTTT!!!!!!!!!!!

CHANGING PANTS TIMESKIP LATER

I was siting in Syndras office currently cursing the gods for making me go through that hellish ride.

AhrI: And now we have to wait for them *grrrrr*

Ahri was siting next to me with her legs crossed tapping on the arm chair in frustration

(Y/N): Ahri you know your upset.... but come on just one quick meeting

Ahri: *whispers* i could be shopping, or eating some ice cream with my free time but noooo i have to come here, no no its fine when we finish i will tie up (Y/N) upside down like in that video that Kai'Sa told me... yea he-he-he-he, i just need to find a mouth gag and a pineapple

.....Loading.....loading.....completed.... THE FUCK IS KAI'SA SHOWING THEM AND FOR WHAT DO YOU NEED THOSE THINGS! ESPECIALLY THE PINEAPPLE!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

As i was having a panic attack and thinking how it would be a very, very smart idea to go visit my family in a different town! Then door opened and i heard that accent

Ashe: *AHhhhh (Y/N) i am so happy to see you again*

(Y/N): *Hello Ash how are you*

Syndra and Ashe came in to her office and Ashe was already hugging me

Ashe: *I am fine, thank you very much, how are you*

(Y/N): *I am very good ! Your back in Piltover i see ?*

Ashe: *Yes i like Syndra's clothes so i will happily model for her, and i am glad i have somebody to talk to now. Syndra is fine but her Russian is very broken*

(Y/N): *Well i am here so we can talk now i really don't mind*

Ahri: Wow..... he can really speak Russian

I then turned my head towards the voice and saw a amazed Ahri still siting, but then she just got her composure on and went full profession.

Ahri: Good day Miss Syndra and Miss Ashe its a pleasure to see you today

Wow.... from 0 to 200.... and she was acting like such a child a few moments ago... i have to say i am impressed

Syndra: Hey (Y/N), and good day to you as well Ahri

Ahri: *whisper* why is she so casually calling him like that did something happen during the coffee its never just coffee

..... Ahri i can hear you and it was just coffee....

Then Syndra just turned to Ashe and started speaking while moving her hands around..... it took every ounce of strength not to laugh

Syndra: She.. you..speak.. that... she ... has... fire... in.... her...pants

Yea i didn't have enough and i started to laugh like crazy Ashe of course joined me right away i was sure Syndra has been talking like this whole day i don't even want to imagine how much self control it took not to laugh.

Both Ahri and Syndra were looking at us shocked... and i just couldn't resist

(Y/N):.... hahahaha... OK... Syndra you just told her that Ahri has fire in her pants....pfffffhahahahhahahhahahah Which of course made her go full red, both her and Ahri

Ashe: *Do you see what i am dealing with whole day !!! Hahahahahah its so hard to control myself*

(Y/N): *I am sorry hahah for your pain ! hahahahahhaahh*

TIMESKIP

We were now siting in her office me and Ahri on one side while Ashe and Syndra on the other one. After 15min of non stop laughter we made a deal that i will be translating for the girls

Syndra: So i wanted you two to come to terms since i really need you both for this

Ahri: With all do respect I refuse to work with her

Ashe: *I will not work with her*

Syndra and me both sighted..

Syndra: Why ?

Ahri: It's very simple i just don't believe that we are compatible, there is no personal emotion involved in this situation just a simple view of my professional opinion so with all due respect and sadness i will have to refuse your kinda offer and hope you will forgive me and not ruin our future.

Wow..... the way she speaks and handles herself.... actually turned me on.... oh crap she is looking towards me.... does she know what i am thinking ! Crap i am going red.... and no emotional influence my ass

Syndra: Ummm (Y/N) are you going to translate....

(Y/N): Huh... ah yea sure

(Y/N) *translates*

Then Ashe just looks towards Ahri and makes a smirk

Ashe: *I just don't like her*

Oh crap.... Ahri is glowing blue..... she is pissed off so hard now.... OK lets calm this down..... *sight*

(Y/N): Ahri listen i know you don't like her but this is business right... so i am sure it will be good for the KD/A image and i am sure Syndra will even throw in a discount for you

Syndra: Yes of course 10% off !

Ahri: If it works with (Y/N) black card then we have a deal.... but only because you are asking me (Y/N) !

..... wow i think i actually saw Syndra bite her tongue in force not to lash out at Ahri... yep there is blood coming on the side of her mouth

(Y/N): *And common Ashe i know you don't like Ahri but that's not a reason to put your carrier in risk, and i am sure she is sorry for the dress she ruined* Ashe: **sight* Fine... but under one condition... (Y/N) has to go on a date with me tonight!*

Ahri: Hey why you not translating what did she say ?

I may be a idiot when it comes to the ladies.... but even i am not that big of a idiot... i know if i translate all hell will break lose. Ahri is very needy and

possessive, especially now since i didn't spend that much time with her these past few days

(Y/N): Ummm she wants me to show her the city tonight

Ahri: Unacceptable !I refuse !

.... i actually find her being this jealous extremely hot.... but i owe Syndra and i did promise.... plus a date with a Russian supermodel doesn't really go on my bad list

(Y/N): I will just show her around town Ahri, nothing special don't worry, OK

OK and now to close the deal

(Y/N): And please do it for me ! I have never seen a fashion show so would love to to see you on my very first one... *blush* i just think you would be amazingly beautiful on it

Wow i am actually surprised i was able to say that with only getting red in my face. Before i would have a full on panic stuttering attack

Ahri: *blush* Well.... *sigh* Fine...

Syndra just gave me a smug grin and a thumbs up..... your lucky i like you Syndra

TIMESKIP

I just finished dressing myself up..... and i have to say i look fine. I actually told Syndra what Ashe really wanted, i was not sure if she understood and was afraid she would say something in front of Ahri that would get me into trouble

She then just made a huge smile and took me down to the work room where she made some ladies make a suit for me telling me in the process " Since

you are helping me il help you with Ashe"

I cant blame her really she didn't know about me and the girls... and its good. They didn't need anymore image scandal. Already rumors are going on the net about their secret boyfriends... There were even a few pictures grabbed out of focus like me going on the market with Kai'Sa, or riding on the bike with Akali. And luckily they all thought it was a different person

That the girls need to keep this a secret or it would be a huge scandal in their carer.... yea i really don't deserve them...

As i entered the living room i suddenly heard a crash on the side and i saw Kai'Sa standing with her open mouth looking at me while the broken glass was in front of her feet

Kai'Sa: (Y/N)... w-w-w-what are you wearing !

Which of course got the attention of rest of the girls and the reactions.... well i was going red

Akali: *whistles* WOW! I have to say.... wow *whistles*

Evellyn: Oh my darling *licks lips* i suggest you start running! I wont be able to control my self much longer

Ahri: *stares*..... only a night out

Ahri was the only one who had a cold expression... shit she is figuring it out... but man these reactions... i guess clothes really do make a man... to bad il never wear them again because everything fucking itches especially on my balls !!!!!!!

(Y/N): *ahem* well you can look but no touching *blush*

OK i better stop that look in Evellyns eyes is screaming danger its like when you dangle a glass of water in the dessert.

DING and then Ashe showed up, must of called when i was still getting ready and they let her in... and man..... holy shit man... WOWZA !!!!! She

was in a black one piece dress that shining and barely went over her bottom ass and he hair was let down with a little frills on the side... crap i think i am drooling

Ashe: *OHhhh (Y/N)! You look so handsome !*

(Y/N): **gulp* Yes and you look b-b-beutifull...*

Ashe: *Shall we go ? I know where i want to go*

(Y/N): *Ummm yea s-sure, don't wait up girls il be back by later tonight*

AhrI: *Hehe (Y/N) you said it in Russian to them*

(Y/N): *Ahhh i gues i did he he.* Il be back

Ahri POV:

(Y/N): ????????. Il be back

Then (Y/N) and Ashe left the apartment, why was he giggling so much !

Kai'Sa: I THOUGHT YOU SAID THIS WAS JUST A NIGHT OUT !!!!!!

Ahri: That's what he told me !

Kai'Sa was already screaming at me while the rest of the girls joined her

Akali: Then why was he dressed like that ! And why was SHE DRESSED LIKE THAT !

Ahri: I don't know ! He just told me he she wants someone who speaks her language to show her around the town !

I have a feeling he lied now... oh (Y/N) i am going to make you scream !

Evellyn: *growling* I don't speak Russian .... but i know when (Y/N) is stuttering and getting red

Ahri: Its obvious what we need to do ! We are going to stop this right away !

Kai'Sa: No we cant! What if we are wrong.... he will be mad

Evellyn: Then we will just follow them and make sure !

Akali: Leave it to me ! If that bitch tries something i will make her run home in tears !

Ahri: YES ! Go Akali if something happens take care of it!

And then was gone Akali in the blink of the eye.... oh (Y/N) my dear dear (Y/N)....

When i get my hands on you! The night in my heat will feel like a walk in the park !

Maybe il drop a chapter by the end of the night but no promises

CHAPTER 32(Enjoy your self's while you can)

Yea i decided to continue writing tonight... but man why does everyone make so many OP characters. I understand people want to be strong but still... i found about 20 interesting titles while skimming through wattpad.... and 19 of them have OP fucking characters who can kill gods *sight*

(Y/N) POV

Ashe was currently driving in a car that would make even Evellyn like it. Now i am not a car person but when a lean black car with only two leather seats pick me up i know its good.

(Y/N): *This car is very nice*

Ashe: *Ah yes i love this model! When i saw i could rent it i was extremely happy. I also prefer this model since the horsepower is much stronger*

(Y/N): *Ummmm.... its a nice color....*

Oh god its a nice color really? But Ashe just started to laugh !

Ashe: *Ahahah i guess you are not a car person ?*

(Y/N): *Yea sorry, same with bikes when ever Akali tries to explain me something i just look at her like a fish,*

She actually made a little frown when i mentioned Akali... hmm guess she still remember her from the party and how she was laughing at her

After a few more moments we stooped in front a very fancy club. Even though we were outside the music was heard and not to mention the line for getting in was huge. Ashe then just grabbed my hand and started to pull me inside... it was clearly she was a VIP since we just went directly to the entrance and the guard just allowed us in

Once we entered i have to say it was impressive. The lights were going on and off in different colors, people were dancing on all sides and the music was being spun by the DJ who was on a stage in front of everybody... oh my they even had dancers above in cages

????: *Ashe ! Darling i am so happy for you to come !!! Give me a smooch ! *smooch smooch**

Ashe: **smooch smooch* Thank you Taric ! Your club is always amazing and its a pleasure to come !*

Taric: *Oh no no no my darling the pleasure is mine. I am always happy to see you and have you grace my club*

I don't know why... but this guy was screaming danger through my spine. And then he looked towards me.....

Taric: *And who is this GEM hidden in the dirt !*

Oh god... i know this look

Ashe: *This is (Y/N) ! You remember how i told you there was that one guy who was nice and could speak Russian at the party*

Taric: *OH MYYYYY!!!*

OH NO I WANT TO RUN AWAY SO BAD SUDDENLY.... ok ok calm down just extend my hand and relax

(Y/N): *Good evening Mr.Taric its a pleasure to be here, your club is amazing !*

Taric: *OHHH SO POLITE!!!! Come here you beautiful little GEM you are passed the hand shake faze !*

OH GOD NOOOOOOOOOO!!!!! BACK! BACK FOUL DEMON BAAAAAAAAACK.....

And he just moved and gave me the same smooch on my check like he did with Ashe.... but he did it three times..... can i go home

Taric: *Well my dear GEM'S if you need anything talk to me and i hope you have a good time*

Ashe: *Thank you Taric!*

Taric: Oh and my little GEM... i saw the stream... i will only say well done and you are free to come here when ever you want and drink on the house

Sudenly he just got serious as he said those words

(Y/N): Ummm.... excuse me ?

Taric: My brother is a powerless like you.... so i am happy that at least he will have one less evil to worry about in this cruel world

Huh..... i guess this guy is not so bad even though he is very strange...

Taric: *And now my dear GEM'S i must leave !! SO ta ta *blows a kiss**

Ok NVM..... i don't ever want to talk to him again

Ashe: *What did you talk about ?*

(Y/N): *Hmm? Ah nothing just something he wanted to know about me. Nothing serious*

Ashe: *Heheh sure ! So lets grab a drink !*

(Y/N): *Yea i could use one after Taric*

Akali POV:

Akali: That bitch.....

I was looking the club (Y/N) and that Russian model went to.... only a night out my ass. OK lets try calling the girls and then we will see how it goes.

RING RING

Ahri: *Hello Akali? Whats going on !*

Akali: We have a problem! (Y/N) went with Ashe to the " BLUE GEM"

Ahri: *NIGHT OUT MY ASS!*

Akali: Exact thing i said

Kai'Sa: *Can you get in?*

Akali: No... the security is to high. And i am not dressed properly even if they recognize me i don't think il be able to go in

Evellyn: *I agree... that place is a paparazzi heaven! If you show up like that they are going to have a field day !*

Kai'Sa: *BUT WE CANT LEAVE (Y/N) ALONE WITH HER!!!*

Evellyn: *And if we all show up its going to draw to much attention*

Ahri: *OK, il get dressed and il come ! This is my fault for letting (Y/N) trick me ! I will make him pay *growls**

Evellyn: *Akali stay there and follow them if they leave !*

Akali: Yea got it !

OK, Ahri its on her way and then we will see whats really going here.... that bastard (Y/N) if he thinks he will two time us he is will get another thing coming

TIMESKIP

Ahri POV :

I arrived after about 1 hour to the club. Luckyly the bouncers reckognized me right away and there was no need for me to wait in the line ! Alredy as i

enterd the club it was filled with music and before i could even make a step Taric showed up

Taric: AHRI!!! MY FOXY GEM, how are you my dear ! *smooch smooch*

Ahri: *smooch smooch* Hello Taric! I am fine and how about you ?

Taric: Just amazing darling just amazing. I watched your previous concert ! Now tell me i just have to know who is this princess that can make our diva blush

He is like the 30 person who is asking me this question. Ever since (Y/N) made that scandal on the concert people we know keep trying to get the information...

Ahri: Sorry Taric *smiles* but that's a secret even for you!

Taric: Awwww well to bad ! Anyway...

Before he could finish his sentence some paparazzi just jumped in front of me and started taking pictures. It was clear he was new to his job... because every one of them learns the most important rule for club 'BLUE GEM" don't interrupt Taric

Paparazi: Heyyyyy Ahri ! Why you alone here ! And come on smile for... GUAAAAAH

Tarick just grabbed him for his waist and did a German suplex..... it was perfectly executed Tarick: Tick tick... such bad tack... boy throw him out but brake his camera first... and maybe one leg

Bouncer1 : Yes boss

Then two big guys just grabbed him for his legs and dragged him out. This is why we liked to come to this club. It was a popular hang out for celebrities simply because they felt safe, with Taric around no bullshit ever happens here

Ahri : Actually i have a question..... did you by any chance see a foreign model with white hair..

Taric: Ohhhh you mean Ashe, yeees she is on the dance floor now she came with that GEM of hers

Ahri: HE IS NOT HERS! HE IS MINE !!!!!

Oh....did i just yell that. Taric was just looking wide eyed at me... and then he just made a huge smile

Taric: Well well well! Isn't this a juicy little scoop! I have to say he is starting to shine in my eyes

Ahri: Ummm.... Taric i don't know what you are talking about

I was getting very nervous... our plan was to keep (Y/N) in the secret as much as possible.... not because we were embarrassed of him.... just our image would take a hit. He was very sweet and he made my heart beat... but people wouldn't understand

Taric: Its OK darling! Like i said to that cute little GEM i owe him and i will keep your secret... but i suggest you be carefully darling.... this kind of situations tend not to end well

Ahri: Yea.... we know that.... but we have to try.

Taric: Good! Now they should be somewhere on the dance floor

Ahri: Thank you Taric! See ya

Taric: Of course my dear ! Now come visit some time with the rest of the family! I always love watching Kai'Sa dance

I started making my way to the dance floor.... and it took much longer then i expected not only was the crowd huge, i was getting stooped constantly by people i know or the people who recognized me.

And then i saw it.... and suddenly everyone backed off.... they should back off i am so MAD NOW!!!

There thy were Ashe was kissing my (Y/N) who had his back turned towards me .... she was kissing MY (Y/N) HOW DARE SHE. I didn't even care about my image anymore. I was walking in rage to them i will make her pay. AND (Y/N) HOW DARE HE KISS ANOTHER GIRLS NEXT TO THE FOUR OF US!!!!

As i was walking towards them in rage Ashe got her filthy tongue out of his mouth, and when she saw me her eyes got wide! Yea you better be ready bitch ! But first i grabbed (Y/N) turned him and slapped him so hard he feel to the floor !

SLAP

Ahri: HOW DARE..... huh ?

As i was about to scream at him in rage first and then murder Ashe.... i noticed... that's not (Y/N)

He had almost the same outfit but when you give it a better look. He was much taller and had black hair.... oh... thank god....oh no !

And then it started, in a matter of seconds everyone had their phone out and were taking pictures.... and the paparazzi where already there joining them while making phone calls probably deciding on the price.... oh god this is going to hurt us so bad

Ashe: *????? ?? ??? ??????*

Ahri: Ummm... what ?

Ashe: *????? ?? ??? ??????*

Taric: She asking what's your problem

Ahri: Umm... i.... i thought it was....

Ashe: *sigh* (Y/N) *????? ????????? ???????????? ????????? *hmph* ???????????? ??????? ??????? ????????????? (Y/N) ?????? ????? *smile*

Taric: She said (Y/N) is not here. He was feeling uncomfortable and didn't want to stay.... also what kind a guy takes a girl on the date and only talks about his four girls back home! Oh and she will do the fashion show... apparently you earned her respect thanks to how (Y/N) looks at them

Oh GOD.... i fel like a idiot now.... but why am i happy !

Ashe: *smile* ????? ?? ??????? ?????? ?????

Taric: You are very lucky, she is jealous and next time don't let him go like that

Paparizi: Who is this (Y/N) !!!! Quick go check

RandomPerson: Ohhhh maybe her boyfriend !!! Lets check social media

Oh no !..... this will not end good !

(Y/N) POV:

sight.... tonight was a disaster.... Ashe was so patient and cool... but i just felt bad about being on the date with her.... it kinda felt like betraying the girls... i mean she was hot... and if she tried to take me to the hotel i don't-know if i would have enough resistance.... but she was still not one of my girls

Bartender: One more Goblin Snot ?

(Y/N): Yes please.....

Bartender: And this one is on the house! They way you attacked that guy took guts !

I was in the Dirty Mug. I just couldn't stay with Ashe and left about 40 min ago.... i couldn't even stand 20min and i was only talking about the girls...

she kinda pointed that out and said she wouldn't mind if i left.... she was upset.... but its better this way

(Y/N): Thank you.... but i just got my ass kicked nothing else

Bartender: True true, but you stood up to him and that's what is important ! I heard him how he was talking and nobody should have to listen to that

(Y/N): *sight* Thanks man..... its pretty slow tonight

Bartender: Its always slow on Tuesdays... but what i am wondering why are you here dressed like that

(Y/N): *sight* Just a stupid idea, that came out of good intentions

Bartender: Hahahahhahah most of them do !!!

(Y/N): *sight* you know man.... life tended to be so simple before... i would work... go home on my pc... and back to work... now i am literally fighting for my life *gulp gulp gulp* another goblin!

Bartender: Meh i know it maybe looks bad but fighting for you life ? Come on it cant be that bad.... and here another one

(Y/N): *sight* oh no no... its not bad its amazing actually he he he

Bartender: Your drooling

(Y/N): But the problem is i just cant keep up sometimes

????: Oh that's OK! life is like that

Huh ? I turned around and i saw a girl sit next to me she was dressed all in yellow and pink in that cute way. I would look more but the big hat covering the top of her head and sunglasses were giving me a hard time recognizing her

(Y/N): Ummm hello do i know you ?

????: Nah i just overheard and it looks like you could use a friend today

You know what

(Y/N): I actually wouldn't mind that my name is (Y/N)

????: HI there i am.... ummm... you can call me Sara

(Y/N): Sure so what are you.....

RING RING RING RING

(Y/N): Ah sorry

(Y/N): Yes hello ?

Ahri: *Ummm... (Y/N) where are you ?*

(Y/N): Ah hey Ahri i am in the Dirty Mug

crack

Sara: Ah i am so sorry i applied to much pressure to it

Bartender: Its OK, these glasses are old ! You didn't hurt yourself ?

Sara: NO NO i am fine thank you

Ahri: *Hey (Y/N) are you listening to me !*

Ah i was not actually, but i better not tell her that

(Y/N): Sorry bad signal

Ahri: *Anyway wait there i am coming to pick you up*

(Y/N): Ah OK... see you in a few and can you check with Kai'Sa if she can heat up some food

I then put the phone away and started to get dressed and ready to leave and when i looked towards Sara she had a extremely angry face ... huh... *blink* its normal.... maybe just my imagination

(Y/N): Sorry Sara i have to go... thanks for offering to give me company but i have to go.

Sara: Its fine i understand *smile* i am sure we will run into each other again!

(Y/N): Um... yea sure... bye

As i walked out of the bar i didn't have to wait long until Ahri showed up
(Y/N): Hey thanks for picking me up.... huh those clothes... did you go somewhere

Ahri: N....no....no

.... yep she was.... hmmm and why is she so red

(Y/N): Ahri are you ok ? You look extremely red

Ahri : *whisper* I will make you scream tonight

(Y/N): S-s-sorry ?

Ahri: When we get back i am pulling out the vials

Oh SHIT!!!!

(Y/N): W-w-w-wait Ahri! Can... *gulp* we do it gently

She then just looked towards me while smiling.... that smile.... then she locked the doors of the car

Ahri: I am going to make sure you cant walk straight for 3 days after i am done with you

Oh..... ohhhhhhhhhhhh.... oh SHIT !..... yay

???? POV:

The car that picked up (Y/N) just left around the corner leaving in haste

????: I suggest you enjoy your self's while you can.... because i will take EVERYTHING YOU CARE ABOUT FROM YOU!!!!!!!!

Ummmm cliffhanger BYE!!!!!!!!

CHAPTER 33(I don't want to embarrass you)

And i am back miss me ? I actually wrote this up during my morning coffee since some idiot decided its smart to call at 9 am and promote bullshit over the phone

(Y/N) POV

Kai'Sa: Die you pathetic fool !

Yasuo: WAIT!!! NOOOOOOOOO

Kai'Sa: Then i stab my pole-arm to the floor and pick up his head shouting "VICTORY!"

Yasuo:Nooo why me! Why do i always die !!!??

Ekko & Braum & Garen: HAHAHAHAHAHAHAH

We were just about finish with a DnD session with Kai'Sa beheading Yasuo. The guys called me this morning telling me they wanted to have a game, and since i remembered Kai'Sa enjoying herself last time i invited her again, she accepted right away

Ekko: Man but seriously ! When i heard Kai'Sa was playing DnD i didn't believe it at all !

Yasuo: I know right its just unreal, and you are actually very good

Kai'Sa: He he, i kinda just accepted it to spend time with (Y/N) but it became actually very fun for me

She then looked towards me and made a beautiful smile..... crap so cute

Garen: Awwwwww look at our big bad DM going all red

Braum: Hahahahha and he was so big and dangerous when he brought out that Hydra !

(Y/N): Ohhh how about i give another one *smile*

Bram and Garen: WE ARE SORRY !

All of us just started laughing after that and we started to pack up and were getting ready to leave the Dirty Mug

Garen: OH! I almost forgot here

Garen handed us our tickets... ofc i knew what they were it was the invitation and participation team for the Larp

Garen: Remember its in 2 days in the Piltover East park ! Its going to be capture the castle

Yasuo: Ohhh i like that one !

(Y/N): Of course you do

Ekko: Yea that one is speed more then anything else

Kai'Sa: Ummmm sorry ?

And then i remembered we never mentioned what Larping exactly is to Kai'Sa

Yasuo: So basically allot of us dress up fantasy style

Ekko: And we meet up to bash each other heads in !

At those last words Kai'Sa actually grabbed my hand and looked at me giving me the look that was saying " YOUR NOT GOING !"

Out of all the girls she is the most overprotective.... and i cant really be mad at her because i knew that she is the one who cried the most during that night

(Y/N): *sight* Don't worry Kai'Sa its not like that

Braum: Yea boss, there are rules and regulations

Garen: And we have referees who walk around checking that nobody brakes them, not to mention a few of our regulars have healing powers so the chance of permanent damage is very low

She relaxed a little, but the look was still there

Yasuo: Don't worry about him he is our tactician so he doesn't get to be on the front line and even if the do get to use he can still use a sword pretty well

Ekko: Awwwwwwwww poor witle (Y/N) forbidden from getting a witle bittle boo boo

(Y/N): Awwww poor witle Ekko going to solo a Manticor next time

Ekko: I AM SORRY !

And we started laughing again... well all except Kai'Sa... 'sight' how am i going to deal with this... and i have a feeling of she tells the rest of the girls she is going to specify the head bashing... seriously am i that weak looking ?

Garen: By the way... a couple of guys requested to be on your team....

(Y/N):Huh ? Who?

Garen: Ummmmm Jimy and Kenny

(Y/N): *growling* You are getting raped by wild kobolds next time

Garen: I AM SORRY!!!!!!!!!!!

TIMESKIP

Me and Kai'Sa just got out of her car and were making our way to the elevator when she finally spoke

Kai'Sa: (Y/N) i am sorry.... but i really don't want you there, what if you get hurt ?

(Y/N): Its OK Kai'Sa i will be fine really, like they say i stay on the back line and if somebody really does come close to me i can still kinda of defend my self.... i can use a longsword you know

She was still just skeptically looking at me as we entered the elevator

(Y/N): If it makes you feel any better i usually stay away from the fighting, i rarely have to do something

I actually love fighting but i am just to weak

Kai'Sa: Fine... but promise me you will run away if it get dangerous!

Sight.... seriously... i cant even play with my swords anymore.... i know she means well but this is something i love to do... this is my passion like her dancing is to her.... i am starting to get mad

(Y/N): Fine.... i promise

I promise to make sure i kill at least 20 of them that day

Kai'Sa: OK ! That's what i wanted to hear *smile*

Good she was back to normal..

Huh ? I started pushing the elevator button again trying to get it moving since it suddenly stooped

(Y/N): Huh are we stuck ?

Kai'Sa: Hmmm must be a power spike or something

(Y/N): Ah crap i already don't like elevators, but being stuck in one is actually much worse...

Kai'Sa: Wellllll *blushes* i maybe have a idea how to take your mind of it

Oh..... ohhhhhhhhh

And then she unzipped her jacket and made a very seductive smirk

YAY!!!!

TIMESKIP

DING

The door to the elevator finally opened, we were stuck for about 2 hours.... 2 very very very nice and sweaty hours.

(Y/N): Umm Kai'Sa... should we... i don't know clean it ....

It was a mess..... we really went crazy inside of it and overdid it... and the smell... wow

Kai'Sa: Yea.....

As we entered the living room all there girls just had huge grins on their faces

(Y/N): Hey girls.... whats up

Kai'Sa: Why are you..... looking at us like that ?

Evellyn just grabbed the remote and chose the option.... security feed..... no... it cant be! And then

CLICK

Kai'Sa: *OH GOD *MOANS* YES YES JUST LIKE THAT !!!!*

(Y/N): *HERE ! *heavy breathing**

There we were.... on the TV... in full display....

(Y/N): *Wait Kai'Sa.... don't lift my leg like *moans* Aahhhh*

Kai'Sa: *AH!!! JUST MOVE YOUR HIPS WITH ME!!! *MOANS**

Akali: Wow.....

Ahri: I have to say... impressive

Kai'Sa: a....a.....a..

Kai'Sa was trying to say something but

Kai'Sa: *OH YYEEEEEEES JUST SUCK MY BREAST HARDER!!!!*

The voice on TV was just to loud

Evellyn: darling.... your a beast

(Y/N): I.... didn't know... that we had a camera ....

(Y/N): *AH you LIKE IT LIKE IN THIS HOLE DON'T YOU!!! SAY IT*

Kai'Sa: *YES I LOVE IT !!!! DO IT HARDER !!!*

Akali: Wow.... i want to try that *heavy breathing*

.... Ohhhhhh.... ' YOU RAAAAAAANG'

DIDN'T YOU HAVE ENOUGH! DOWN BOY!!!!!!! but she wants to try it... he he he

Ahri: But Kai'Sa ... you knew about the camera

I just snapped my head towards Kai'Sa who was extremely red looking at the floor.... its always the fucking quiet ones !

Akali: WAIT! How did you bend your legs like that !

Ahri: Did you just put your tongue inside of his..... wow

(Y/N): *OHHHH YEEEEEES!!!! JUST LIKE THAT FASTER !!!!!!!!*

Oh lightning strike me now....

TIMESKIP

ShopOwner: Thank you, come again !

I just left the costume shop after i picked up the last piece for my armor. I was not going to buy a whole one but actually make a personal one out of different parts.

(Y/N): OK! And that's the last check on the cloak

I need to leave for the larp tomorrow early morning and if i am lucky i will be out before they wake up.... i was never really embarrassed about me being a nerd... but i have a feeling= me showing up in a costume with fake swords is just going to be to much

(Y/N): *sight*..... i guess they would probably just laugh....

????: Who would laugh ?

(Y/N): HOLY SHIT ! Huh ?

Morgana: Hihi, well good day to you (Y/N) i didn't scare you did I

As i turned around after screaming like a little girl i saw Morgana standing with a innocent smile...

(Y/N): Huh!*ahem* no i hit my foot.... Hey Morgana long time no see !

There standing with a couple of bags of clothes and in dressed like it was -20 was Morgana... can she even breathe with so many layers of clothes.

Morgana: *gigle* Yea sure. Hey there (Y/N) how are you, everything fine

I saw Morgana and Kayle once when i woke up after my coma. Morgana was very happy to see me, but what shocked me the most is when Kayla grabbed me into the huge and started screaming how sorry she was. Apparently they found out i got captured after the girls were trying to find information on me

(Y/N): Yea all is good actually just picking some stuff for.... umm a event. How is your sister ?

Morgana: She is fine, she is at a party. Today and tomorrow is a national holiday so this is one of the rare days when we can just relax and do our thing since the restaurant is closed.

(Y/N): Umm... does she still feel bad about you know... it's not your guys fault you know that right

Morgana: *sigh* Its better now... but she still hired 20 security guards to walk around around the place so that this never happens again.

And then she looked into my eyes and hit me over the head

Morgana: And next time you keep a secret like this i am going to do more then smack you ! I told you already if you need help come to us !

I could only smile. These two ladies were monsters when it comes to their work, but they are also extremely lovely. I talked to a few workers while i was in my hell for a day experience with them and thy can only say good things about them

(Y/N): Well i owe you one so if i could return the favor in any..... oh no

Her eyes were sparkling

Morgana: AND i will cash it in ! You are good in a kitchen and i am still offering you a job !!!

Ah.... never again.. oh crap look at the time

(Y/N): Anyway i need to go, i need to prepare for the event tomorrow

Morgana: *huh* ummmm it wouldn't be Larp in the East Piltover park.. would it ?

(Y/N): Wait wut ? How do you know that !

Morgana: Well... Kayle actually participates every time... i am there just to support her

(Y/N): OK... i am impressed now..... wait.... what personality is active...

First she was looking at me like she was trying to understand the question, and then after a 'aha' face she just made a innocent smile

Morgana: The fun one

FML..... lets hope she is on my team

TIMESKIP

(Y/N): And a needle this way here... and done !

I just finished sewing in a emblem of a raven on my cloak.... yea i have a cloak.

As i walked back and threw one more look at my costume... i have to say i was impressed. I knew i was never into full plate armor i always love those types that focus more on leather and movement while protecting partly some areas.

That's why my costume was full leather with metal plates over my arms and lover part legs. One of the shoulders was going to have a shoulder guard.

And my chest is covered in a simple half plate that just covers the breast part... And the cloak

(Y/N): God.... this cloak looks amazing.... i love it !

It was a long black one with a big emblem of a red raven.

KNOCK KNOCK

Ahri: *Hey (Y/N)*

CRAP! I just jumped and threw a blanket over my costume, i really don't need them to see this and make my life miserable

(Y/N): Y-yea ?

Ahri: *Dinner is ready*

God..... seriously why am i jumpy i am a grown ass man i can have hobbies.... yea lets just sneak out in the morning...

As we were finishing up dinner i decided to speak up about tomorrow . Luckily Kai'Sa went to the bathroom so this was a perfect moment (Y/N): Soooo you girls have any plans tomorrow.

Evellyn: Not really darling. Just some stuff in the morning

Akali: Yea apparently there was a incident a few nights ago and we need to talk to Mundo on how to deal with it.

Both Akali and Evellyn just looked at Ahri with frowns... which made her actually blush and look down to the floor. Hmm maybe they beat up some sleazebag or something

Akali: How about you ?

(Y/N): Ah... ha-ha... just to meet up with Yasuo and Ekko... ha-ha nothing special

Evellyn: Ummm darling your kinda sweating

(Y/N): Oh am i! Wow its so hot today... ah Kai'Sa your back let me help you with the dishes !

I could feel them staring at my back.... ok ok just play it cool and get away before they get up ! Yea simple right.... what can go wrong

TIMESKIP

creak Shit why is this door so loud this morning.

I closed the door very slowly and started making my way to the living room on my toes trying everything not to make a sound but as soon as i entered

Akali: Oh (Y/N) you are..... PFFFFFFFFFFFFFFFFFFFFFFFFF AHHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAH

Evellyn: Darling ! what... what are you wearing... Hhahahhahahaha Ahri: Hihihihihihihi is that... is that a cloak Hahahahahahah Kai'Sa: Ahhhh look at the cute little raven on the back !!!!!

AAEK: HAHahahahahahhahahhaahha

(Y/N):..... ffs

I entered the living room and to my great displeasure the girls were still here.... ffs

Ahri: Ah ah ah *tries to breath* i am sorry hahah i never imagine hahaha this hahahahah

Akali: Hahahah i am so glad hahah Mundo told us to come before breakfest hahahahahahh

Both Ahri and Akali were doing everything they can just to breath while holding their sides in laughter

I am not amused

CLICK *CLICK*

Evellyn even took out her phone and started taking pictures while laughing in my face... and Kai'Sa was using one of her hands to support herself on the wall

Kai'Sa: You were not kidding hahahah when you said i should not be worried hahahahah

I am not amused at all

Ahri: Ah don't look at us like that hahaha i find it very cute

Its not supposed to be cute grrrrr

Akali: Wait do you have a weapon ! Please show me your weapon !!!!

(Y/N): *blush* Its not... here..... its over there at the park...

Akali: Wait seriously there is a weapon !!! AHHahhahah

I was going full red out of embarrassment... and not the good kind

Kai'Sa: Oh is it a big Axe ! You look like a big strong warrior hahahahahh

OK this one is pissing me off now.... i thought you liked DnD Kai'Sa

Evellyn: Oh don't be like that darling... don't pout... hahahah.... what did you expect you look ridiculous..

And im done! I just started making my way to the elevator in a speedy walk

Ahri: OOOOMMMMGGGG DID YOU SEE HOW HE THREW THE CLOAK BEHIND HIS BACK AHHAHAHAHAH!!!!!!!

AAEK: HAHAhAHHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAAHAHAHAH

Fuck this.....this is something i like....

Kai'Sa: Ummm.... hahaha...(Y/N).... haha.... wait why do you

(Y/N): *growling* Il maybe be back by the end of the night *growling* don't wait up

Ahri: Wait wait.... ahhaha.... let us give you a lift its no troubl.....

(Y/N): No need... I don't want to embarrass you

Kai'Sa: Hahaha... wait you.. are not...

(Y/N): LIKE I SAID ITS OK! Now goodbye ! Il make sure i take the back entrance i don't want the security to think how the great pop-stars hang out with lame-ass nerds. Bye !

I was so glad the elevator was right here because i just wanted to jump of the building i knew they would find it ridiculous.... but this was just to much..... shit

Evellyn POV:

Akali: Ah...hah.... wait....

Ahri: ... yea i think

Kai'sa: We overdid it

When darling came out i just couldn't control my self... none of us could. I mean he looked so ridiculous in that armor and the way he was pouting was just to much.... i even took over 30 pictures... its not that i hated it i just found it a little funny but ...

Evellyn: I am afraid we went overboard dears

Akali: You saw that look

Those words in the end... and the way he looked at us.... i really don't want him to look at me like that ever again...it was not anger... just sadness and disappointment.... we were not laughing anymore

Any of you ever tried Larp? Its actually pretty fun when you get into it

CHAPTER 34 (Not the Goblin Snot's again)

I just have to say WOW.... now i have no idea how rankings work... but man when i saw #1 on the KDA tag and all those other rankings i have to say i had a huge smile on my face. The number of views is also freaking amazing and i am so glad i keep seeing old face and new faces under the comments and likes. I really want to thank you all i never imagined that something that started as just a simple experiment would actually grow into this kind of enjoyment. Now as I thank you, let me lave some cliffhangers

(Y/N) POV:

TAP TAP TAP TAP

Ekko: Ummmm

TAP TAP TAP TAP

Yasuo: *whisper* Just don't say anything

TAP TAP TAP TAP

Ekko:*whisper* Man.... he looks very scary now

TAP TAP TAP TAP TAP

Braum: *whisper* i think he will calm down.... i hope

TAP TAP TAP TAP TAP TAP

Malph: Huh? Why we all whispering ?

(Y/N): I CAN HEAR YOU ALL, YOU KNOW!

We were siting in a rented buss making our way to East Piltover. I was taping my foot in anger while the rest of the guys around me were just

whispering and looking my way... well all except Malph who was just slow... wait why is Malph here.... ah yea Braum mentioned he invited him

Braum: *ahem* Sorry man.... your just kinda giving out a aura

Ekko: Yea bro! Save it for the battlefield

Yasuo: By the way Malph you understand the rules in the end right ?

Malphite: Mhm... The point is to either capture or defends the castle depending on the team we get. Powers are allowed but are not encouraged and there are some extra rules about them right ?

Yasuo: That's right. Now for the powers a good example are both me and Ekko. For my instance i would be stooped since i could make a wall of wind and basically stop their whole range attack process.

Ekko: While for my time control it would be ok since unlike Yasuo who would go all AOE broken bullshit my time control would be just for me which allows people to actually have fun

(Y/N): Gaysuo here is still allowed to use his powers, but he just needs to be careful not to overuse them to much.... we don't want the fun being destroyed just because of his saltines

Yasuo: OI!

I actually started laughing there a little with the rest of them.... yea lets just calm down. I was expecting the girls to react like that but pfffff... At least they could have controlled themself a little..... and i would have loved to invite them with me..... but yea they would just laugh if they saw it

Malphite: And we can always come back in the fight ?

Braum: Well... if we have "white mages" alive on our side you can come back after a time out. But it gets longer every time they "resurrect" you

Ekko: You can always also just back out when you had enough... we do use fake weapons and all but people still get hurt and then to drop out after 1 or 2 resurrections..... crap i still remember that one year with that bastard Brand...

(Y/N): SHIT! Don't remind me... the way he burned that girl... and he does similar shit every time... he knows his power is dangerous but he still used it on people like that.... i cant believe he is still allowed to come back

Yasuo: Yea.... that girl is lucky Soraka was there... her healing powers are amazing... but you know how it is! He is a rich bastard and he donates a large amount for every larp so they have to let him... even though he ignores most of the rules

Yea... there are cool people... and then there are bastard like Brand who just go wild. ohhh please don't let Ezreal be there i cant stand that guy... and those fucking guys Jimmy and Kenny... fuck

????: OMG! Your Ekko from True Dmg !!! Can i get an autograph !!!

????: Holy shit you are right i can believe you Larp! Awesome armor by the way Yasuo

We were currently in a buss that was organized by the group. At the beginning everyone was coming by themself. But as more and more people got into it they started to organize transportation.... plus allot of them get stooped by police and its hard to explain that you are dressed in full-plate mail because you are going for the battlefield

Ekko: Sure guys ! And love the helmets you got! They are awesome

????: Holy shit man!!! Your big !! Want to be the tank for the squad duels!!

????: Hey i remember you the guy with the mustache !!! It was awesome how you just charged into the enemy line last year!

Malph: Umm sure ?

Braum: HA HA HA. Thank you my lady! And i remember you! Your ability was awesome with those illusions !

IllusionGirl: *blush* hehehe

Yea Ekko and Yasuo are both famous celebrities so its understandable that they will draw attention. And Malph like Braum is a huge guy so for sure people will want them on their team. And i am happy to hear Braum also has a little reputation. And then i felt someone pull on my sleeve. And when i turned to the side i saw a small kid maybe 10 or 11 with what was probably his big sister

SmallKid: Ummm excuse me are you (Y/N) ?

(Y/N): *smile* Oh, you know my name ? What can i do for you

SmallKid: I-i-i just wanted to say im a big fan!!!

(Y/N): HUH ?!

And then he just blushed and hide behind his sister... she just laughed then and smiled my way

Sister: Sorry about that. I always bring him when i come, he can at least watch since he is to young but he remembers you from those two years ago. By the way i am also a fan your plan was amazing !

And then one of the guys who was talking to Ekko looked at me

????: HOLY SHIT!!! Man your the Dirty Bastard !!!!

AH CRAP.... i hated that nickname

????: Hahaha the way you led those guys into a trap was amazing !!!

????: Oh yea man i remember! I't was epic or that one time with the spoiled food ! I still tell that story to my son on how brains can beat brawn if used properly

????: Oh oh ! Yea i know i was with my daughter that one time when you came and asked her if she can you her power to make the bridge slippery. We still laugh for dinner on how those guys were screaming when falling off the bridge

Ok now i am full crimson! I knew i had a reputation for my crazy *ahem* dirty plans but still

Braum: Oh yea i hard about that! People started to check food before they eat it and they actually had to put a new rule that forbids people from tempering with the battlefield before the start

Ekko: YEA!!! That day was awesome and we thought you were crazy when you showed up in front of us with those shovels 30min before start hahahahhahahahha

Yasuo: Please dont reminds me... i still remember when you made me sneak into the enemy camp and stick laxative in their drinks !

..... you know what.... FUCK THE GIRL! I am going to have fun today. An just as i thought that, we finally close enough to see the park and people started to gasp in excitement.... yea its going to be fun today ! hmmmmm that girl can use Illusions?

IllusionGIrl: Umm do i have something on my face ?

MUNDO POV:

Mundo: And so Mundo is sure that if we just keep quiet, and drop some fake rumors that the incident in the 'Blue GEM" will end fast! Mundo also talk to Taric and Taric agree with Mundo to cooperate !

Ahri:..... yea sure

Kai'Sa:..... mhm

OK... Why does Mundo feel like Mundo know why all the girls have no motivation today Mundo: So Mundo will just ask what did (Y/N) do ?

Akali: Huh ? Nothing !

Yep Mundo is sure now its (Y/N) again... it's always (Y/N)... Mundo feels bad for him

Evellyn: *sight* its not him, its us

Mundo: Oh ? Tell Mundo maybe Mundo can help, Mundo has a mastery you know

Ahri: *sigh* That still makes no sense... but.....

Kai'Sa: We kinda went overboard this morning with him

Mundo can see that the girls were feeling shame, Mundo likes to see the girls like this, its good for them. Mundo is worried sometimes how cold they tend to be.... well it is to expected considering their time in th...

Akali: Well its his fault! Coming outside in that ridiculous outfit !

Evellyn: *sigh* And that cloak... he was so proud of that cloak

..... Mundo is confused.... again....(Y/N) makes Mundo scratch his head allot

Kai'Sa: But he was so hurt when we started laughing... not even angry just hurt

Ahri: *growl* him and his stupid... what did he call it L...La...

Mundo: Larp ?

Then all the girls just looked at Mundo with a shocked expression

Mundo: OH! (Y/N) went to for the Larp! Good Mundo will be glad to see him latter

AAEK: HUH!!!!????

Now they were looking at Mundo like he was crazy

Ahri: Mundo... you know what that is ?

Mundo: OFC Mundo knows. He's company is one of the sponsors for it. So Mundo always goes like a representative

AAEK: HUH????!!!!!

Mundo: Ummm Mundo starts to think Mundo can see the problem..... what do you think that is ?

Kai'Sa: Ummm just a bunch of people running around hitting each other on the head.....

Mundo: *sight* did you even ask (Y/N) to explain properly

They all just looked away.... yea Mundo can see the problem... they were probably just laughing their asses of.... (Y/N) probably mad now

Mundo: It might sound strange to the girls but Mundo also likes the event. At the beginning it was just people running around with fake weapons. But after a few years it became something much more and bigger

Evellyn: You are serious... aren't you

Mundo: *nods* Now its a complete festival actually more of a resonance fare ! People from all over the city and outside come to watch. Its a festival for drinking, hanging out, playing games and there are even bands every time to play and sing on it. Last year its a popular group called Evene... something. Mundo doesn't like rock, this year Mundo not sure but again somebody popular

The girls were stile looking at Mundo in shock... but Mundo was happy he was seeing signs of guilt in their eyes Mundo: The battle starts at noon and lasts until one side wins which is usual by 5 or 6. And then even after it people still stay until midnight for the after war party.... there is a reason why they call it the 'Dreams Come True Festival'

Ahri: ..... we... never knew... that

Kai'Sa: We didn't even ask properly.... they mentioned it a few times... but i didn't really go into that much detail after i hard they fight with fake weapons

Akali: We fucked up..... He was so exited these past few days....

Evellyn: Its clear darling loves this place.... and we just threw it out of the window... he was probably even thinking about inviting us... but just gave up at some point

Good Mundo likes to see girls like this. (Y/N) is a very good influence

Mundo: So Mundo has a suggestion. Hear Mundo out ....

(Y/N) POV

????: Shit MAN! Is that a limited edition card !!!

????: Hahah you have a good eyes young man, yes and for you only 300 gold!

????: Get some honey mead ! Only 2 gold per mug

????: Wow look at that ladies armor... its covering almost nothing...

Ah this was my place. The fair was busting with people from all over, from selling limited collectables to drinks done fantasy style, and the costumes were amazing.... wow that armor... i bet it would look great on Akali!..... shit

Ekko: Bro will you stop frowning

(Y/N): *sigh* Yea sorry....

Braum: So what happened my little friend ?

(Y/N): Nothing Braum just a night

Yaso: Is it the girls

(Y/N): *growling*

Yasuo: Yep its the girls

sight I just feel disappointed... i really thought they would want to come with me... not laugh in my face.... OK NO MORE MOPPING AROUND!

Malph: Ummm why are they all asking for gold ?

Ekko: Ah its just for immersion you know, 1 gold is 1 dollar Yasuo: Yea helps the people get into the spirit, you can also see some of people here without costumes who just came to visit and watch. Or they just don't have time so they pass by before their work or something

Yea this place is amazing as always. But like all places... somebody always has to be a dick.... and right on cue as i thought that

????: OI! Get out of my way you low class brat

????: *tch* Why do they keep letting children hear... they should have just taken my request and put a ban on age under 21

And there we go.... the two biggest dicks that always cause shit every time

Ekko: Shit.... Brand and Xerath

Yasuo: Lets just go away or they will annoy us...

I was lucky i was a nobody... for me they will not even pay a moments attention. But Ekko and Yasuo were part of True Damage so for sure they would force them to be on their team.

????: OMG! Its you guys !!! Heeeeey!

..... oh god.....

Ekko: H-h-hey Ez... how are you ?

And there he is.... one of the guys that i find extremely annoying beyond words Ezreal.... he was not pray tell a bad guy... but he always talked to much and always pushes my buttons always thinking he is something special... plus he pokes me before my morning coffee..fucking annoying kid... i hate when someone talks to me before my morning coffee !.... AND OF COURSE THOSE TWO MORONS ARE WITH HIM! FML

Jimy&Kenny: Sup !

Ezreal: I am so glad you guys are here! Lets join up for the party duels and we can ask to be on the same team !

Yasuo: Ah... well you see... ha-ha

Yasuo and Ezreal didn't mind him that much... but they know how much i despise being in his presence. Lets just stay quiet and maybe he wont..

Ezreal: Oh Dirty Bastard! You here as well

.....MOTHERFUCKER..... fine

(Y/N): Hello Ez...

Ezreal: Awesome man! We are sure to win with your dirty tricks ! So we have to join together! Ezreal and The Dirty Bastard ! We will win the war for sure

.....*sigh* and he still keeps calling me that no matter how many times i tell him i hate it... i really don't like him

Ezreal: Oh and these are Jimy and Kenny good friends of mine

Jimy: Oh we know (Y/N) and Braum we had a session once!

Kenny: By the way is Kai'Sa here hehehhe.. kinda want to see her in a costume hehehe .... i am going to make sure they die a slow and painful death today Ezreal: Ohhhh yea they showed me a picture!!! Can't believe you know Kai'Sa man!! How did a loser like you ever meet her!

growling oh you will die

Ezreal: Hahah can you hook me up !

(Y/N): *smile* Sure man! And lets make sure we are on the same team !

Ezreal: Awesome!!! OK we need to go check something see ya guys later cya!

Yasuo: Ummm (Y/N)? I thought you.... oh shit!

(Y/N): He-he-he *evil grin* let him be on my team he-he-he.... i will make sure to use him properly he-he-he *evil laugh*

Ekko:.... rest in peace Ez... you will be missed

Braum and Malphite actually backed off and looked like they wanted to run away right about now.... yes yes.... i can use him as bait and....he-he-he

Braum: *gulp* Ok guys how about we get some breakfast and maybe a drink ?

Ekko: Y-y-yea.... crap (Y/N) calm down save it for the war

Yasuo: We also need to get some weapons

Oh YEA! I almost forgot the best part....

(Y/N): So you guys going with the usual ?

Ekko: Mhm! A short spear for me and Yasuo will go with a katana again

Yasuo: Are you going to go with two swords again.... you can barely use one

(Y/N): Oy oy oy! The important thing is that i have two !

Ekko&Yasuo: Suuuureeeeeeee....

Braum: You guys didn't bring your own ?

And then when i looked at Braum i actually finally payed attention to him. He was wearing a full plat armor and on his back he had something huge thing in a bag

(Y/N): Ummm.... Braum what is that ?

He just made a huge smile and then removed the covering..... holy shit

Braum: Its a tower shield ! I made it myself using my cousins metal factory !

Man.... that was not a tower shield... that was a freaking giant block of metal.... i think it was about 2,5m tall and 2m wide... not to mention it must have weighted a ton.... god i pity the fool who gets hit by that

(Y/N):Yea... sure... what about you Malph ?

Malph: Il just punch people !

.... so simple... but i remember he can go rock mode..... i better make sure i get them on my team

RING RING RING

Then my phone started ringing, and as i pulled it up to see who is calling i made a frown...

(Y/N): Yes Evellyn

Evellyn: *Hello darling, is everything fine over there*

(Y/N): Yes

Evellyn:.... *i see, listen me and the girl are going to....*

And then suddenly music started and i was shocked! I didn't know who it was but when i heard the start of the song i recognized them right away

(Y/N): WAIT! IS that Disturbed !!!!!!!!!

Evellyn: What ?

(Y/N): No not you ! Listen i am busy and i don't want to bore you with the details of my hobi, so il see you guys probably tomorrow i am not going to return tonight

Evellyn: *WAIT DARLING!*

FFS ! This is my favorite band..... fuck

(Y/N): What Evellyn...

Evellyn: .... *I am sorry... we all are*

.... wow..... Evellyn apologized.....ah shit.... why am i such a pushover

(Y/N): *sight*.... i am not angry.... i am just very hurt... il get over it by tomorrow.... now bye i actually am busy. Enjoy your day

I then put away my phone and basically started speed walking towards the stage

(Y/N): Shit man! I cant believe they got Disturbed !

Ekko: YEA! I actually heard the rumors the they were into this stuff!!

Ekko was keeping up with me side by side while Yasuo was behind us and chuckling, i guess Braum and Malph went somewhere else because i couldn't see them anymore

Yasuo: You sound better (Y/N)

(Y/N): Of course! Its my favorite band and i also saw some Goblin Snots over there !

Ekko: Oh god! Not the Goblin Snot's again

Yasuo just continued chuckling and when i looked behind he was just making that smart ass smile

Yasuo: Yea sure! That's the reason

Taric POV:

I was siting in my chair finishing some early morning paperwork when the door to my office opened and my assistant walked in

Assistant: Sir there is somebody to see you

He then moved and let the her in

Taric: Ohhhh my! My sweet shining GEM i am so glad to see you, when did you come back

????: Oh hello there Taric, a couple of days ago actually. So i just thought i could come visit and have a drink with you *smile*

That smile is so much different then before.... but i guess its understandable people change in after some time

Taric: Of course my GEM of course now let me grab a bottle of....

????: Ah no need ! I brought something myself

And then she pulled out a bottle of Gragas Red Stallion

Taric: MY GEM! That's my favorite one!!!! You trying to get me drunk hahaha

????: I know its your favorite one hihihi.... *smile*

***NOW!* I know some of you already know who the ???? person is since i am not really hiding it... but some people still haven't figured it out. So**

lets keep it a secret for their enjoyment nobody likes spoilers (even though its pretty obvious... or is it *grin*)

CHAPTER 35 (Good Luck Kiss)

Yea yea i know i said im not gonna post anything today... but i want to write up before i forget something like i said 20% is planed 80% just comes to me during writing.....

**(Y/N) POV*

Garen: And so we all agree with this arrangement ?

GroupOfPeople: Yes

(Y/N): I don't !

Garen; OK then its decided we start at noon which gives us another 3 hours of relax time

(Y/N): Oi!!!!

TIMESKIP

sight i just came out of the organizer tent upset. It was strange that Garen invited me to be present but once i heard why it was to be expected.... *sigh*

Garen: Yo (Y/N)!

And here comes the person responsible for my sighting

Garen: Don't be upset man. It really was decided by a mass of votes

(Y/N): *sigh* I understand man but it still doesn't make me like it any more... why do i have to be King!

Yea the decided that i will be on the defense team and not only that i am the King... fuck... but what really pisses me of is that everyone except Malph and Braum is on the other one....except those idiots (Y/N): Could you at least give me Yasuo! You can take Ez and those 2 morons with you !

Garen: Hahaha, sorry bro but no can do. We want to balance it out a little and separating you from them is a good start

(Y/N): Man i know my plans are fucked up but they don't always bring victory

Garen just shakes his head and made a chuckle

Garen: True... but they do make the enemy teams lives a living hell.... remember the hornet nest...

(Y/N):.... i need to see a shrink don't i

Garen: Yes you do

..... *SIgh*

TIMESKIP

We were siting in one of the tavern enjoying our drinks... well i would be if Ezreal was not being fucking annoying

Ezreal: Yea man so you see the plan is foolproof ! We just need to get some catnip and the work is done...

God.... what an idiot. Yasuo just poked me with his elbow and whispered

Yasuo: *whisper* Come on man at least try to be nice! I know your pissed about the team line up but what can you do. And before you say i know Ez is annoying but he is just a 20 year kid let it go

(Y/N): *whisper* Man Akali is 21 and she is much more mature... and ffs even Ecco is not a brat like this one

Yasuo just sighted and gave a chuckle..... *sigh* Then i heard a buzzing sound and i saw a drone fly above me... still cant believe it (Y/N): I know i didn't come for the past year... but this sure got allot more lively. They even have drones now

Ezreal: OHHH YEA!!! Since when its stuff like Capture the Castle people don't know whats going inside so they got drones to cover the battle to help people see!!!

I actually didn't like that... as i looked in the distance i can see that the big TV screen was being assembled

(Y/N): I don't know... it just doesn't feel like our world anymore ...

Ekko: I actually understand you... now just so many people and so many companies actually invest into all of this... plus you have to buy a ticket to enter now...

Yasuo: Yea its losing its touch... its good now and all since we are getting more people bigger events and so on... but man its just

Ezreal: ITS AWESOME RIGHT!

All of us just looked at him and sighted.... such a brat

Jimmy: So (Y/N), is Kai'Sa going to come

Kenny: Yea man! Or any of the other members !

..... calm down calm down just relax

Ezreal: Oohhhhh! If they come i got first dibs on Ahri

Kenny: I have to go with Evellyn man those tits !

(Y/N): I WILL MUR?? ?????? ???????? ????? ??? (*I will murder you and mount your head where my tail used to be)*

Is what i wanted to say but Yasuo just grabbed me and put his hand over my mouth making my voice be completely muffled

Yasuo: *whisper* (Y/N) relax they are just kids! Relax man relax

Fucking hell this day cant get any worse

????: Oh there you gentlemen are

.....i was wrong it just got worse. I turned around and i saw Xerath approaching us.... acting like a rich snob he is and not only that he thinks of himself he is a wizard so it only makes him more annoying. As he approached us he looked upon me and then frowned to Yasuo and Ekko

Xerath: Can you come for the strategy meeting and i know you guys are friends but he is the enemy today.

Ezreal: Ahhh don't be like that bro! We are all friends here

Then he just snapped his head towards Ezreal and growled

Xerath: First off i am not your 'bro'... and i should ask for a 23 year old age restriction next time.

I don't really approve of this guy... but it would be nice not see Ezreal so i am going to support that !

Yasuo and Ekko just gave me a apologetic look and left with mister rich man, yea i figured... they are popular and they are good at the battle so for sure they going to get some stronger position.

Jimy: So our King! Whats our plan!

Kenny: Yea man you got us !

Ezreal: We going to kick their asses Dirty Bastard style!!!

..... suddenly want to go home... no no just relax.... fuck this day is not going as i wanted it

TIMESKIP

Sigh.... this is like the 20 time i am sighting... at least the strategy meeting is over. Allot of them were happy when they found out i was king, but some got upset once they learned i had no powers and that i cant really defend myself in the fight.

Luckily the people who recognized me vouched for me and it was all good in the end.... and thank GOD i was able to run away from those three idiots i really cant deal with them.

????: WHAT DO YOU MEAN YOU CANT COME IN TOMORROW!

..... deja vu.

As i turned my head i saw Kayle siting on one of the tables in full armor and yelling over her phone. Across her was Morgana enjoying some food but unlike her sister she was dressed normally

????: SO WHAT IF YOUR FATHERS FUNERAL IS TOMORROW! JUST POSTPONE IT! ITS NOT LIKE HE IS GOING ANYWHERE!!!... hey, she hung up

OMFG SERIOUSLY.... OK NO NO other side i am not dealing with this !!!

Luckily i was able to sneak off without them noticing me, i was walking with my head down until i bumped into someone and fell down

(Y/N): Crap... sorry about that....

????: Yo brother its all cool

Huh.... i know that voice. As i lifted my head... i screamed like a little girl

(Y/N): HIiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiii YOUR YOUR YOUR!!!!

It was the lead singer of the band Disturbed

LeadSinger: Ha ha yes i am

Omg omg omg..... OK calm down calm down lets just be cool and ask for a autograph

(Y/N): G-g-g-g-g-g-g-g-g-good d-d-d-d-d-day sir, m-m-m-m-m-may i g-g-g-g-g-get a...

Singer: Hahah its cool man its cool !

And then he took out a pen.... and signed my half breast plate.

Singer: Epic cloak brother ! Good luck at the war, see ya later

I know when i remember this moment sometime in the future i will be embarrassed on how i acted.... but for now i am just going to scream

(Y/N): HIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIII HE LIKES MY CLOAK!!!!!!!!!!!

TIMESKIP

Sight.... number 27 by my count. After that episode of me screaming i was final able to calm down after some time... god that was so embarrassing ! Never again will i make fun when girls scream if they see celebrities.

I was walking through the fair, it was about 1 hour left until noon so i had time to kill. I tried to find Ekko and Yasuo but it was no use. I actually ran into Garen at one moment but he was with his girlfriend so there was no point in me interfering. Braum and Malph were with some guys who were big as them... apparently they decided to make a squad for the Larp and THANK GOD they were on my team.... i pity the full who runs into the 6 of them

Ezreal: Heeeeey (Y/N)!.... huh strange i thought i saw him here... lets try there

..... Wow that was close... omfg why do i keep running into him! JUST LEAVE ME ALONE. Sight seriously whats with my luck today can i get any *bump* and i again i bumped into someone and fell down.... ok if its the drummer now i am going to have a heart attack

Mundo: OH (Y/N) Mundo happy to see you! And nice cloak Mundo approves

(Y/N): Huh? MUNDO! Why are you here

Mundo just extended his arm and pulled me up as i grabed

Mundo: Oh Mundo here as his companies representative! Plus Mundo like honey mead !

(Y/N): Hahaha well i am glad to hear it....

Mundo: Mundo has a feeling you are not... does it have to do with sponsors ? or maybe the girls ?

(Y/N):*sigh* Yea... both actually i just feel that the sponsors are changing this to much... i mean i saw the castle that was built and man i have to say its amazing... but same its drawing people here for different reasons.... and girls *sigh* the girls are a different story

Mundo: Oh and why ?

(Y/N): I was kinda hopping.... they would be here with me..... but they would never come here

Mundo: Ohhh Mundo not so sure

(Y/N): Huh ?

And just before i could actually comprehend whats going on i heard the announcer

Draven: Ladies and Gentleman, boys and girls, Orcs and Elves i have a speeeecial announcement to give !!!!

I just suddenly turned to the every year announcer Draven. Apparently he was some sport commentator but he came here every year for free according to him he likes to yell.... he does

Draven: IT GIVES ME DRAAAAAAAAAAAAAAVEN great pleasure to announce some special guests for today!

... no... it cant be. I just looked towards Mundo but he was gone.....

Draven: These ladies agreed to do a few songs for us to boost our spirits ! Now give it up for KKKKKKKK-DDDDDD-AAAAAA

Ah.... ah... really... this is a joke no....

Senna: Nop!

I then turned and saw Senna standing next to me with Qiyana

Senna: Mundo had an idea for both KD/A and True Damage to do 2-3 songs just for some publicity you know Qiyana: Yea didn't really mind since we know you guys enjoy this stuff

I was still opening my mouth like a fish until i heard massive screams and then i saw the 4 girls walking on top of the stage in their usual concert outfits

Ahri: Hellllooooooo everyone! Did we drink enough Mead today ? !

Evellyn: Good morning my dears i hope your weapons are sharpened !

Kai'Sa: Hey All! And lets roll some Nat20's on the tables

Akali: Sup! And don't forget it all comes to down to victory!

The people were screaming like crazy from adoration to proposals to just some fantasy words and of course the massive "HAR HAR"s.... but what i couldn't believe is that the girl were actually here..... why

Mundo: Mundo can answer the question your face is making

(Y/N): HOLY SHIT DON'T DO THAT!!!!

Mundo: Hahah Mundo has mastery so he cant follow your request. When girls came to Mundo's office they were upset they disappointed you. So Mundo give idea and they agree

They were now singing on stage in full power while the people were going crazy.

Mundo: So Mundo also call in true damage and decide to make it a promotional event. We were looking to expand our fan base and what better

then a place like this!

I had no words... i was actually extremely happy they are here.... but then i went completely red

(Y/N): Omfg they are going to watch me during the battle !

Qiyana: HAhah we all are!

Senna: Yea Ekko always says how your plans are fucked up i want to see that.

I was going completely red now... oh god they are going to watch me....

TIMESKIP

The girls finished their concert and now True Damage was one stage doing the last part of their act... Ekko actually looked pretty funny while trying to move like usual in his armor so that was also a good laugh as a bonus. I wanted to go see the girls... but it was impossible to come close...

They were surrounded by people who just wanted to talk to them or get a autograph so no mater how much i wanted to push in there was no way.... *sigh*.... number 31 today. Then i just felt a tap on my shoulder and as i turned i saw Kayle

Kayle: Hey (Y/N) we should get going unlike the attackers we need to set up our position. Hmm you ok

(Y/N): *sigh* Yea i am, lets go...

As we were walking down the fair making our way towards the battlefield i suddenly felt something pull me to the side. And before i could even react a tongue was inside my mouth going crazy for about 10sec and the it finally relented .

Akali: This is a apology for this morning

And then she grabbed my little friend and *whispered in my ear*

AkalI:*whisper* And if you win. We are going to try that

Oh.....oooohhhhhhhhhhh.... YAY!

And then she was gone in a blink of the eye.... *_YOU RA_.....* NO! NOT NOW LATER! *_FIIINE LATER_*

Kayle: Hey (Y/N) ! Where are you !!!

(Y/N): Yea coming !

Ahri POV:

Evellyn: Ah there you are Akali, where did you disappear to

Akali: Oh just giving our big brave knight a good luck kiss

Those words just made both me and Kai'Sa chuckle

Kai'Sa: How did he look ? Was he still....

Akali just frowned and sighted but then grinned

Akali: Yea he is still a little down but i think i got him motivated *grin*

Then i noticed that Senna and Qiyana were looking at us strange... oh we better be careful they don't know about us.

We were siting now in a lets say VIP seats. They were pretty similar to the rest but we had a few body guards around us. We had a pretty good look at the battlefield and not to mention that the big TV screen they made was right in front of us. We were still talking between each other when the announcer spoke in a full voice

Draven: HELOOOO ALLLL THIS IS DRAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAVEN ARE WE READDDY!!!!!!!!

MassOfPeople: HAR HAR!!!!

I really hope he doesn't get hurt.... and if somebody does hurt him.... they will die

Senna: Ummm Ahri... are you...

Man1 *POV:*

**SIGHT*....*

Man2: Man can you stop looking at that picture already

I was looking at the picture of my Ex-girlfriend and being depressed... my friend here meant well but he would never understand

Man1: Bro i thought she would be the one

Man2: I understand Bro but she is in the mental hospital... there is nothing you can do about it

????: Excuse me

Man1&Man2: Huh ?

Some girl just stood in front of us... i couldn't really tell how she looked like because the sun was shining directly into my face

????: May i have a moment of your time

CHAPTER 36 (LADIES AND GENTLEMAN, ELVES AND ORCS!)

I am spending to much time here....

Kai'Sa POV:

Draven: *SOOooooo in a few min we will explain some of the rules for our newcomers !*

Ahri: And one Unicorn Spark for me please, and don't worry i know what is is

The waiter left with a little bit of shocked expression. Apparently he found it very strange that girls like us knew what the drinks actually were. I knew from before the first time i was there and went for the Chain-Lighting right away. And the rest of the girls found out that night when we visited the Dirty Mug and took the choices like then

Akali: He.... he is going to be fine... right ?

Senna: Well i never really watched them before, but according to Ekko and Yasuo they are good at this game

All of us were nervous. I understand this is what he likes to do... but the chances of getting hurt are very big... and its not bringing us any joy to sit on the side and watch that.

Evellyn: He will... and if anybody dares touching him... i will make them pay

Evellyn was growling and acting all relaxed but i it was clear she just wanted to run down there and pull him out.

Ahri: If it gets to rough. Akali get in and get him out i don't care if he gets mad later!

(Y/N) would probably we very upset if we actually did that... but to tell you the truth i didn't care. I will personally go down as well. And then Draven started speaking again

Draven: *So! The rules are simple! There are 2 teams Red which attacks and Black which defends! The objective of the red team is to go inside and slay the King of the Black team! Another chance of wining is to force king out of the castle for 5 min! There for capturing it by automatic defeat! For the Black team to win they either need to wipe out the red team or survive until dusk! Capiche !*

Ahri: The rules sound pretty simple.... on which team is (Y/N) ?

Senna: Well Yas and Ekko are on red so he should be Black...

That actually shocked me and made me panic a little

Kai'Sa; WAIT! They are not with him ! So he is alone !!!!

Senna: Ummmm... i think Braum is with him

Evellyn: If Braum Lets even one scratch fall on (Y/N) he is getting fired

Braum suddenly feels a shiver down his spine

Draven: *Now as you know getting knocked down is not the end ! As long as you have a white mage on your team you can return to the fight after 15min and that time doubles every time you fall so its going to be 15-30-1h and so on! But lets be honest.... none of you come back after you get your ribs broken! They may be fake weapons but getting hit by a giant metal ball still hurt hahahahaha! Oh and the king cant res ahahahhahahahah*

Ahri: THAT'S NOT FUNNY!!!!!!!!!!!!!

Draven: *Also please be moderate with your powers ! We don't want to lose all the fun because somebody is being salty ! So if the referees decide that you are overdoing it they are going to give you a nat1! And if you do the same thing again its bye bye !*

Akali: Crap already he is at a disadvantage

Draven: *And finally no killing nothing is forgiven! We understand accidents happen! But that's why we have a age-restriction 18+ you are grown enough to think for yourself and to vote... so even if something happens and it is accident you are still going to prison for murder no excuses !*

And that was the last straw that we were willing to take

Akali: I am going inside and pulling him out !

Ahri: GO! I will call Mundo and tell him to make a excuse for leaving so early

Evellyn: I don't care if i have to TIE HIM DOWN HE WILL NOT DO THIS !

Qiyana:Wow..... i feel bad for (Y/N) when he is surrounded by people like you

Kai'Sa: WHAT!

Evellyn: Careful Qiyana i like you but you are pushing it

How dare she say this to us! Does she know how hurt he can get! I don't care i am just going to...

Qiyana: I have no idea whats going between all of you and what kind of relationship you have ... and i don't really care! But the way you are treating him i am surprised he just didn't pick up and leave

Ahri: You have no idea ! So don't talk to us about ignoring this

Senna: Sorry girls but i am going to agree with her.

Mundo: Mundo also agrees !

AEEKQS: WHERE DID YOU SHOW UP FROM !!!

Mundo: Mundo has mastery

Senna: Anyway... he is a grown man not some 13 year kid... if he wants to go and play his stupid game let him. He can make his own choices

I know it was making sense what she was saying..... but this is (Y/N) Qiyana: Or did you forget when he attacked Lucian in the bar for you ? Everyone could see he had no chance but he still did it, even that time with the Jhin... Lets be honest the only reason we saved him is because he saved himself by tricking Jhin

AhrI: *growling* I-i-i know that.... but stile!

Mundo: You should relax girls. Mundo ask around and (Y/N) has a reputation

Akali : Reputation ?

Draven: *And let us welcome the teams on the battle ground ! On the east side is the Red team lead by Xerath !!! Their objective is going to be to attack !!!*

MassOfPeople: HAR HAR!!!!

You could see people coming from the forest they were all dressed in costume like (Y/N) from this morning. Some of them were impressive looking incredible well done, while others weer just pieces of metal scraped to clothes Senna: Hahahha that guy has a frying pan on his head !!!

Draven: *And on the west side is the Black team defending the castle*

Across on the west was a castle. It was nothing like the one in movies but it was still impressive. Approximately 80x80 in size and with about 2 floors and the top roof which was open as a balcony! They apparently got some guys with abilities and they were able to build in a weak. There was even a moat wide 5m and deep 4meters around it filled with water. You could see there were 3 entrances. Two of them were a drawbridge that were risen and another one was normal stone walkway approximately 2m wide

Draven: *And their King (Y/N) !*

MasOfPeople: HAR HAR!

AAEK: HUH!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

And there he was (Y/N) standing on the 3rd floor balcony with a cigar in his mouth and 2 people on his right and left looking upon the battlefield with his hands behind his back

Senna: Ekko mentioned something about (Y/N) entering pushed button mode for this event what ever that means.

(Y/N) POV:

(Y/N): Balanced my ass.....

Marko: So you noticed...

(Y/N): Yea...

I was standing on the top floor overlooking the front of the castle, we were about to start in a few min and i have to say i was already upset. Next to me where Marko and Sofia. I knew Marko from before and i knew he was a smart guy not to mention his ability for making barriers was perfect. Sofia was good because she could enhance her voice. She could make either specific groups or the whole battlefield listen to me

Sofia: Whats going on?

Marko: The game is fixed....

Sofia: What !

Yea... it was clear now.... i had my suspicions when i saw the player on my team... but considering the enemy team this was just to broken.

(Y/N): All of the popular and veteran larpers are on the other side.... and almost all of them are stronger when it comes to 1v1 in ability power....

Marko: And we have allot of newbies as well... about 30% of our guys are newcomers and they maybe have 10%... which mans allot of our guys are just going to give up after a first knockout

Sofia: This is unfair!!! Being on the defense team is much harder !!! And we get a weaker team as well

Marko: *tch* I should have known something is going on when i saw Xerath this morning talking with the organizers!

(Y/N): Maybe we can stop it ? Ask for a reshuffle....

Marko: Nah... its to late now...

Shit this was definitely not good.... i am really starting to hate this game.... and omg the girls are watching mE! Fuck and i thought i could actually show my cool side once!!! And maybe even get that reward from Akali... he he he

Sofia: Boss you are drooling

Marko: So we stick to the original plan ?

(Y/N): *sigh* Yea put a few squads outside on the offensive we cant let them cross the stone bridge... and... are those fucking siege ladders !

Sofia: What did you expect... Brand always spends money like crazy on these events

(Y/N): Motherfucker..... we are going to need to put almost everyone out now

Draven: ARE WE READY TO START !!!!!!!!!!

(Y/N): Ok Sofia give orders! Put squad " I pity you fool" on the front and send the 5 support squads with them! We cant lose that stone bridge. Also

set up squads of 4 all around! We need to keep us from getting so rounded ! And have the range rotate the attack ! We need them to support not to take out !

Marko: What about squad Justice and squad Suffer ?

(Y/N): Keep them in for now

Soifa: Aye aye boss! *Braum listen to me you and your....*

Her eyes just gloved and she started speaking in a monotone voice.

Marko: I think we should move a couple of the range squads to the left sides more after the initial move. I can see that's where they are planing to focus the ladders

(Y/N): *nod* I agree those ladders are going to be a problem... shit fucking rich boys

Draven: *LADIES AND GENTLEMAN, ORCS AND ELVES AND THOSE GNOMES IN THE BACK!!! LETS GET READY TO RUUUUUMBLE !*

(A/N: I had to... it was stronger then me https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=nendMLrpI-s)

https://youtu.be/nendMLrpI-s

And in that moment everyone gave a battle cry as the battle finally started

(Y/N): Soffia NOW ! Before they are in formation !!!!!

KAI'SA POV:

Draven*: LADIES AND GENTLEMAN, ORCS AND ELVES AND THOSE GNOMES IN THE BACK!!! LETS GET READYYYY TO RUUUUUMBLE !*

Then they all made a huge battle cry and just as they were about to start running we herd a loud voice all around the field

Sofia: *A MESSAGE TO EKKO ! RAPING IS NOT SINGING! ITS YOU WALKING AROUND AND TALKING*

And then like on Que everyone got quiet... well everyone except

Ekko:*mooooooOOOTHERFUCKER ITS A ART !*

Ekko suddenly ran in full speed using his power to control time to cross the battlefield in 2 seconds leaving everyone behind... which was apparently a bad idea since suddenly from the castle top.

PEW PEW PEW PEW PEW SWISH SWISH SWISH PEW PEW BAAAAM

All manner of ability attacks and fake arrows fell upon him that lasted about 10 seconds. After the dust cleared you can see Ekko laying on the ground and one of the referrers and medic running to him after about 5 seconds they just gave a thumbs up

Draven: *AND EKKO THE POPULAR RAPER FROM TRUE DAMAGE IS DOWN! GIVING FIRST BLOOD TO BLACK TEAM!!!! OH LOOK AT THEIR KING NO WONDER HE HAS SUCH A NASTY NICKNAME*

And then the TV screen was showing (Y/N) with a evil grin on his face clearly doing a super villain laugh .. me and the girls were just watching it in complete shock with open mouths

Draven: *THE DIRTY BASTARD STRIKES AGAIN!!!!*

MassOfPeople: HAR HAR!!!!

Senna: Wow... no wonder Yasuo was so scared

Qiyana: And he was so specific as well about bringing him a unopened soda can !

(Y/N) POV:

(Y/N):NUKE HIM !

After Ekko was down and was removed by the referees i was just doing a evil laugh

(Y/N): Mu ha ha ha ha, they lost one of their heavy hitters !

Sofia: Holy crap boss.... your scary

Marko: I missed this! Its not the same without your ideas !

Draven: *THE DIRTY BASTARD STRIKES AGAIN!!!!*

The initial shock of Ekko's charge didn't last long. After about 10 seconds they all started charging again. And then... all hell broke lose. People were fighting all around us, screams and bone crushing sounds were heard and referrers and medics were running like crazy.

A few attacks were flying to the top probably trying to take me out right away but Marko was here with his barrier not to mention he was assisting in the control of the battle field

Marko: Sofia send Squad's 3 and 4 to the front

(Y/N): And tell those morons in squad 7 not to move away from the range support

Soifa: Aye aye !

Marko: Shit this is not going good!

(Y/N): Crap.... mothrfuckers what do they get from fixing this!

It was a disaster... for every 1 guy we knock out they take 2-3 of ours. You could clearly see this was going in a very bad way. Luckily i had Braum and his "I Pity You Fool" squad on the most important position

CRASH

8 random people were flying through the air after Malph charge into them.... how the hell am i still alive after that night ! That guys is a fucking

rock train!

Marko: Shit ! (Y/N) Garen is coming

(Y/N): Shit! Sofia move squad 2 squads from away from Braum and to the sides! And tell squad "You will Suffer" to get ready to move !

Marko: You want to use that this early ?

(Y/N): There is no choice... you know Garen is in the Piltover Elite Task force. He will take out at least 3 squads just by himself

Marko: Yea you are right, crap our right flank is falling il turn my attention to there.

OK, time to take out the big gun he he he

Sofia: Umm boss you having a evil grin and squad " You will Suffer" is ready

(Y/N): *grin* Send them !

Kai'Sa POV:

Ahri: They are loosing....

Akali: Yea even i can see that. Thy are losing their members much faster then the Red Team

I was doing everything i can not to rush into the battle and to (Y/N)... i know its wrong but the way some of them are screaming and being carried off on the stretchers is scaring me beyond words

Evellyn: Another Devils Horn please

Waiter: Umm mam maybe go a little slower..Hiiiiiiiiiii right away !!!!!!!

Evellyn was also extremely worried and she was already on her 4th drink. We were not far behind it was taking everything we can to control our self's

Kai'Sa: Maybe... maybe we can just i don't know....

Draven: *Oh Garen another popular vet is charging through the Black Team with about 20 people will anybody be able to stop him and his army! AH BUT WHAT IS THIS! A NEW CHALLENGER HAS SHOWN AND HE IS CHARGING TO HIM*

Kai'Sa; Hmm those two look familiar

Garen was just going through (Y/N) team but then i saw some Blonde guy with two familiar people... what are their names i don't remember. I know they were playing with us but i didn't pay any attention to them. The only notable thing is that they were carrying two big backpacks with them.

And just as they were about to come in contact with Garen. A fire ability from the top of the castle hit them on the back their back exploded

Draven: *OHhhhh friendly fire in the max bu..... WHAT!!!!!!!!!! OH MY GOD!*

When the packs exploded some kind of dust fell all over them and Garen and his team... Then they all started screaming and rolling on the floor scratching them self like crazy.... you could see the ones with armor were suffering the most because they couldn't reach with all those layers

They were screaming and crying and begin for the medics to help them

Akali: What just...

Draven: *OH LOOK AT THE KING! THAT SMILE EXPLAINS EVERYTHING I THINK*

And there he was again (Y/N) laughing like a maniac

Ahri: Ummmmm... is this... even legal what he is doing

Mundo: Well... when Mundo asked around.... they told him that about 10 rules have been added because of him

(Y/N) POV:

(Y/N): MU HA HA HA HA HA !!!!!

Sofia: Ummmmm boss... how did you get them to agree to carrying to that....

(Y/N): *stare* *evil grin* I never told them

Marko: *smile* I missed this

Hahahahha take that you son of a annoying bitch! Good thing i actually bought all that itching powder before the battle started. And it was easy to talk Ezreal and those two idiots to carry the backpacks since they never knew the contents of it !!!

(Y/N): MU HA HA HA HA that's what you get Ezreal! Your suffering has just began HA HA HA HA

Marko: I thought this was to take out Garen?

Sofia:BOSS YOU ARE SCARING ME !!!!!!!

Draven: *A quick message from our referees! Apparently from now on there is a rule that forbids itching powder usage ! THE DIRTY BASTARD HAS DONE IT AGAIN!!!!!!!!! ANOTHER RULE THANKS TO HIM! HAS HE NO SHAME!!!!!*

MassOfPeople: HAR HAR!!

(Y/N): You know... i kinda need to stop doing this.....

Marko: What did you expect with your fucked up plans

(Y/N): Well at least Garen is out! He came with his girlfriend so there is no way he will risk a rash

BOOM BOOM BOOM CRACK *BLAST * *CRASH*

(Y/N): *COUGH*

Suddenly fireballs fell upon us and after a 3rd blast they actually broke the shield and one of them hit me directly sending me crashing to the wall making me cough out all the air i had !

Marko: SHIT! Duck Sofia!

Sofia: BOSS! Are you ok ?!

(Y/N): Yea fine... fuck i was lucky i had my breast.... huh

Marko: Shit that was Brand! Probably got pissed and did a full barrage at us

Sofia: We should have some time before we can... huh boss

Marko: Oh shit i know that look !

(Y/N): My.... my..... my signed breastplate!

Sofia: Hiiiiiii sorry ?!

(Y/N): He-he-he the place where my favorite singer signed is burned off

Sofia: B-b-b-boss?

(Y/N): Now i am mad

TIMESKIP

Kai'Sa POV:

Its been about 4 hours since battle started. And the Red Team just broke into the castle finally. Braum and his party just go to tired and fell out at one moment... it was clear (Y/N) was going to lose.

When (Y/N) got hit with that fireball after the itching powder incident we lost it. Both me and Ahri were already jumping over the seats and were

making our way down. But we were stooped by Mundo who had help from Senna and Qiyana.

Akali: This is over...

Evellyn: They have no chance anymore... their defense has been breached... and i am glad

Kai'Sa: I agree! It will be over soon and (Y/N) will get out of that danger

Qiyana: Oh look ! Ekko is back and he is running towards the casstle

Draven: *LADIES AND GENTLEMAN! A SPECIAL MESSAGE FROM THE BLACK TEAM'S KING TO EKKO PLEASE LOOK AT THE SCREEN*

And then the screen showed the picture of Ekko siting in his room with a measuring ruler on his shoes

Draven: *IN HIS WORDS " IF THE SHOES ARE MORE THEN 1,8cm HIGH THEY ARE HIGH HEALS! HOW DO YOU FEEL ABOUT THAT ? "*

Ekko was just standing there looking the screen and the just suddenly turned around and ran away from the battle crying in shame

Ahri: Mmmmm.... i am starting to think that (Y/N)...

Evellyn: Is kinda of a dick....

Akali: But i have to say... its impressive

Draven: *AND ANOTHER RULE FROM THE REFERRERS! NO MORE USING THE SCREEN TO PROVOKE THE ENEMY TEAM! THIS IS THE 3RD ONE TODAY CAUSED BY THE DIRTY BASTARD*

MassOfPeople: HAR HAR !!!!!

Mundo: Mundo has to say... Mundo is impressed... but that thing with the pigeons was scary !

Qiyana: How the hell is he still allowed to come to these events

Mundo: Apparently they are scared of banning him...

Ahri: Wow....

(Y/N) POV

I was siting in the throne room thinking about the current situation... this is bad... 95% of our guys completely drooped out. Even Marko got hit by Brand at one point and had to drop out because the burns were to severe

Ezreal: CRAP! We are going to lose!!!

Jimmy&Kenny: Shit i still itch

I have to give to the 3 stooges... they didn't give up.... which was pissing me off since it was clear when they were talking that they want to impress the KD/A girls Sofia: Boss "Justice Squad" was able to secure the escape route... but they have fallen once they ran to the front line

(Y/N): Shit... Kayle was the strongest monster in our team

At one moment i let Kayle on the battlefield... and holy shit ! She was in full armor with two swords bashing and slashing like the goddess of war herself! She took down 30 guys until finally Yasuo and Xerath stooped her

(Y/N): OK plan B

Ezreal: Whats plan B ?

(Y/N): *grin* We make a stand

And i looked toward my secret weapon

YASUO POV:

Shit this battle was fucked up from the beginning ! Not only was (Y/N) in the different team... he was not holding back at all... Ekko is now probably

crying on the stands since he didn't spend even 1 min in battle...

Xerath: LETS GO! THE THRONE ROOM IS JUST BEYOND THIS DOOR!

At least it will finally be over.... the biggest problem is not getting (Y/N) alive out of here... these guy are out for blood.

Brand: IS EVERYONE INSIDE!!! LETS GO LETS GO. AND THAT BASTARD IS MINE I AM GOING TO BURN HIM TO A CRISP

Shit this is very bad..... and i cant help him by myself

RandomGuy: Why is there so much water on the floor all over the castle !

CRASH We finally crashed through the throne room. There in front of us were Ezreal and his two friends... and on the throne (Y/N) was siting with a cigarette in his mouth and his legs crossed... i have to say he did look badass.

Brand: MOTHERFUCKER WHEN I AM DONE WITH YOU!!! I WILL MAKE YOU SCREAM IN PAIN

(Y/N): Sorry i already have somebody making me scream every day *grin*

Brand was about to release hell on him but Xerath stooped him

Xerath: You understand this is over right ? Your whole defense is down. More then 97% of your players are out.... *smirk* and your a powerless bastard so what can you do alone against all of us

... shit... i should help him but how

(Y/N): *yawn* is that all ?

Xerath: Huh ?

(Y/N): Man at least be original or something.... this is so i am going to win villain speech... that's so pathetic

Brand: AND WHAT ABOUT YOU!!! WHAT MAKES YOU WITH THOSE FUCKED UP IDEAS OF YOURS

Then he just made such a evil wide grind that send shivers down my spine

(Y/N): Me ? I am a Dirty Bastard

Yasuo: SOMETHING IS WRONG!!

I started to look around and my view stooped on a girl in the corner. Wait that girl where did i see her... ah the illusion girl !

Xerath: What is wrong he is done there is no.... oi... why is that cigarette not giving off any smoke....

And then he just disappeared and the only ones left were Our team and Ezreal from his. And by his reaction how he was looking wide eyed towards the throne it was clear he didn't know it was fake

Draven: *OMG! THE BLACK KING JUST APPEARED IN FRONT OF THE CASTLE... huh you want the mic ? Sure here*

(Y/N): *Ahem! To all morons who all charged into the enemy territory*

We all rushed to the windows and saw (Y/N) standing in front of the castle with some other guy who had spiked hair.

(Y/N): *Thank you very much for providing this much entertainment! I didn't even know how much stress i had inside of me*

Brand: DAFUQ YOU TALKING ABOUT YOU SONOFABITCH!!!

Xerath: This is clearly over now ! We just need to keep you out for 5min... but we will still come and murder you

Then he just smiled and was looking around until his eyes stooped on me

(Y/N): Suckyuo whats my favorite DnD spell

Yasuo: Well that's Chain-Ligh..... no

And then i started maniacally looking around... our whole team... all of our surviving members were inside the castle... and there was water everywhere on the floor

Yasuo: You wouldn't...

And the i saw those three guys from his team just looking wide eyed on the floor and when i looked at the girl i saw she was wearing huge fat rubber boots up to her knees... oh no

(Y/N): *Oh and message for Ezreal, Kenny & Jimmy... SUFFER!*

EJK: Huh ?

(Y/N): *Rick.. shock them*

And then the guy just put his hands on the water that was in the castle.... and all hell went lose

Kai'Sa POV

(Y/N): *Rick.. shock them*

As he said those worlds, the young boy who was next to him ran inside and put his hands on the water.... and the next sight was not pretty

The electricity he released clearly got channeled through all the water and then the screams started.... it was not a nice sound hearing all those people scream. But after 10 seconds everyone in the castle was down on the floor twitching and moaning in pain except the girl in the rubber boots... already we could see referees running inside with the medics and grabbing all the people and checking them

Ahri: Did... did he....

Akali: No.... impossible....

Kai'Sa: I cant believe it.... he really did

Evellyn:He won....darling won....

And to confirm our theories Draven suddenly yelled after he got the mic back

Draven: *LADIES AND GENTLEMAN, ELVES AND ORCS!!!!!!!!!!! IT IS OVER FOR THE FIRST TIME EVER THE CASTLE DEFENSE TEAM WINS BY ELIMINATION OF RED!!!!!!!!!! NOT ONE TIME IN THESE PAST 10 YEARS HAS IN A CASTLE CAPTURE THE DEFENSE TEAM WON BY ELIMINATING THE OTHER TEAM!!!!*

And then all of them started screaming in cheers and rage. It was clear some people were impressed by the victory... but allot of them were throwing insults and showing signs of rage. Some guys from the enemy team who got kicked earlier were actually starting to make their way to (Y/N) but Braum and Kayle just suddenly appeared and they had to back off when they saw those two monsters

Draven: *BLACK TEAM WINS!!!!!!!!!!*

Well this took longer then expeceted..

CHAPTER 37(It's just business)

Ah finally done with this one... i have to say i enjoyed it... and yes we did use one time itching powder during our larp.... i got my ass kicked latter

(Y/N) POV:

????: Its always a pleasure to watch ! So for sure i will be back again

I just finished shaking the hand of some random guy who came to congratulate me. We were siting on the victory table at the after war feast with me being on the very end in the biggest chair... and i have to say i felt good.

Marko: I can't believe we freaking won.... hahaha.. ouch

Sofia:Careful Marko! Let me help you

Marko and Sofia were siting on my left, Marko had a few bandages over his face nothing serious that would leave wounds but the medics told them just to keep them up until the skin completely heals. He didn't really mind since the main reason he got burned was to protect Sofia... which is now fawning over him like a lover and it was making him do a wide grin. AH young love... actually isn't he like 38.... meh no biggie

Braum: Hahaha i have to say it was fantastic ! Especially you miss Kayle the way you dispatched those guys was just dazling

Kayle: *blush* Please stop hihihi it was nothing

Yes PLEASE STOP GIGGLING! It is scary how you can change your personality like that... i kinda have a feeling i should warn Braum but meh let them be happy. I looked towards the other table and i saw Ekko and Yasuo.... yea they are not going to talk to me for some time... Ekko was screaming in my face and Yasuo was just doing his "I am upset" look.... sorry guys all is fair in love and war !

Xerath: Mister (Y/N)

And then Xerath came next to me. Already Kayle and Braum got tense and were ready to jump in but he just extended his hand towards me... so i just accepted it

Xerath: Well played.... and sorry

Which actually surprised me i have been going to Larp's for about 5 years and he never apologized

Xerath: Brand is the one who fixed the game... apparently he got the tip that the KD/A was coming so he wanted to look all big and impressive

Marko: What ? But i saw you talking with the referees in the morning ?

Xerath: Oh that... i wanted to cancel this bullshit about sponsors... its going to destroy this event

Yea Brand and Xerath are dicks... but Xerath is more of a smart dick.. and he has his pride. He also loves Larpin and he doesn't spend money every time to give himself a edge

(Y/N): *sigh* Yea its ok..... but man you were good! I cant believe you dealt with the pigeons so fast

And those words they all went dark

Xerath: I think i am going to have nightmares till the rest of my life

Braum: Birds are scary....

Sofia: I am getting rid of my parrot and getting a dog instead

.... yea i really need to stop doing this....

Draven: Hello ALL! Are we having a good time !

MassOfPeopl: HAR HAR!!!!

Suddenly Draven was in between and making announcements !

Draven: Well lets speed it up! Its already 8 a o'clock and time for the PARTEEEEEEEE!!!!

People just started cheering and slamming their mugs on the table, but Draven just lifted his hands making all go quiet and continued !

Draven: NOW!!! As a special reward for our MVP of today! We all know he is !

MassOfPeople: THE DIRTY BASTARD!!!!!!!!!!

Half of them yelled my nickname in good amusement while the other were yelling in rage... crap i need to be carefully today i made some enemies....

Draven: He gets a personal congratulation from our honorary guests the KD/A!!!!!!!!!

.....HUH? And then the girls walked into the mass and people just started to cheer and whistle... They were just moving towards me with professional smiles. Oh crap i better keep it cool.

I stood up then as the girls approached and stood in front of me... i guess i should just extend my hand for a handshake..... Ahri was looking at my hand with a raised eyebrow and then she just looked towards me and made a very quick mischievous smile..... oh crap. She then came close bent over and kissed me on the cheek

Ahri: I have to say we were impressed ! It was amazing to watch you

????: OMG!!!!!!!!!!!!!

????: HE JUST GOT KISSED ON THE CHEEK BY AHRI!!!

????: HE NEEDS TO DIE!!

Oh crap... and why am i going so red! And then Ahri backed off and Evellyn came..... oh shit is she actually drunk... that look is dangerous. But

she just extended her hand to me..... and gave me smirk that was basically saying *you were expecting something else*..... fine lets play

(Y/N): *smooch*

I took her hand and i kissed it. Which of course made the crowd scream

????: OMG!!!!!!

????: HOLY SHIT THAT GUY HAS GUTS!!!!!

????:NO WONDER HE IS A BASTARD HOW DARE HE GO KISSING MISTRESS EVELLYN'S HAND

She was actually looking at me in shock... but then she made such a seductive and evil grin that i knew i will pay later.. and to confirm my suspicions she just worded with her mouth without sound " you will pay with your body"

.... Oh.....Ohhhhhhhhh.... YAY !!!

Then Evellyn walked away, making a extra sway to her hips. And then came Kai'Sa... OK this should just be simple. She is a sweet girl and *ugh*.... and she just hugged me

????: OMG!!!!!

????: NOOOO DON'T TOUCH HIM HE WILL INFECT YOU!!!!

????: LETS MURDER HIM AND PROTECT THE PRINCESS !!!!!!

OK those comments hurt.... and can you say something more then OMG. Kai'Sa was still holding me in a bear hug but just as she was letting go she whispered in my ear

Kai'Sa: *whisper* I found a nice Amazon warrior queen costume

..... OH GOD!!!!!!!! "YOUUUUUU RAAAAAAANGGGGGGG" NO DOWN DOWN ..... hehehehe

Shit good thing i have my cloak or my friend will be tangling in front of everybody. And then AKali approached me.... oh i won didn't I!!!! Which mean she will

THUD

(Y/N): GuaaH *cough cough*

She punched me in the gut making me spit all air out of it

Akali: What did you say about raping *smile*

?????: OMG!!!!!!!

????: HAHAH HE DESERVED THAT ONE

????: KYAAA AKALI!!!!!!!

Oh god... that hurt so much.... and the armor didn't help at all... i better make some pancakes tomorrow but as i raised my head she just gave me a seductive smirk and was actually standing so clothes my nose was maybe a inch away from her fun place.... it smelled wet..... oh! I will be getting that reward

"YOUUUUUU RAAAAAAAANG AGAIN ? " YES YES I DID !!!! This is why cloaks are awesome

TIMESKIP

It was 11pm and the party was still going full power. People were drinking singing and dancing non stop. I wanted to try to talk to the girls but it was impossible to approach them. They were constantly surrounded.

Ekko and Yasuo chilled out a little but they will still giving me the cold shoulder but i knew that by tomorrow it will all be fine. I couldn't also really join them since they were with their group and were also surrounded.

Braum was actually on the side talking to Kayle and i have to say the man's got a way with words. I didn't see Morgana anywhere so i guess she left.

Garen was also there with his girlfriend but the look he gave when i saw him a couple of hours ago was screaming murder.

I even saw Ezrlea and his two morons but they were currently fawning over the girls hoping they will at least get a look from them... hmm they can still move..... i should have used more powder

(Y/N): *sigh*....

All the joy and everything left me actually.... the people who would talk to me would either come to congratulate me or spit some bullshit in my face, other then that there wasn't really anyone to spend some time with

I just decided to go for a walk and relax but just as i was about to leave

Mundo: Mundo has to say he is impressed

There was Mundo with a pint of mead standing next to me

(Y/N): Hey Mundo.... nah man i am just... bored

Mundo: Yes Mundo understands... listen (Y/N) I need to talk to you

OK... that shocked me... he just suddenly changed his speech pattern

Mundo: There is no easy way to say this... but its about

(Y/N): Its about the girls right ?

Mundo: Yes... don't get me wrong i am happy on how they are acting now...they are smiling much more and showing so many range of emotion

(Y/N): Yea... i am glad to see them like this every day

Mundo: But... i have to think of their carers first and happiness second... i am their manager and that's my job

(Y/N): Its about the situation in blue GEM ? I know about it i can use the internet

Mundo: *nods* Not only blue GEM, its also the Mall and the Warehouse.... I wanted to ignore it... i wanted to think about their happiness... but this is not healthy

I just stayed quiet.... was not angry... i was not sad.... i knew where this was going.... i just felt... nothing

Mundo: They were willing to destroy everything today because they thought you would get hurt... their whole carriers and futures on a small possibility of you getting just a simple beating

(Y/N): I think i know where you are going with this....

Mundo: I am sorry (Y/N).... i like you i really do.... but this is simply business (Y/N): You know i can just refuse right....

Mundo: I do... but i also know you want whats best for them... so think about it...

Yea..... i am...and i want to cry

Mundo: *nod* *smile* So Mundo going now and enjoy yourself OK ? And let Mundo congratulate you one more time.

And then he left.... and i was siting alone in the darkness looking at the four bright stars that were shining in front of me

???? POV:

I was sitting on the bench in front of the east park tapping through my phone when i heard the leafs rustle and he walked out

????: Is it done ?

????: Mundo has done his job so how about you pay Mundo now.

????: *tch* Can you stop talking like that its annoying

????: What but Mundo..... hahahaha yea sorry sorry i got into it to much but we were lucky their Manager got a call and had to leave after the battle

The his image just started shaking like it was a simple mirage and in his place now stood a young lizard vastaya... she was the mercenary for hire Neko

Neko: So its all don now can i get payed "Sara"... couldn't you like chose something that's not so similar to your name

I just smirked

Sara: It doesn't matter. He dosn't know who i am, and good job i just transfer all the money

Neko: *gigle* Always a pleasure darling... but i have to say i feel bad even though it was just business Sara: *tch* I didn't pay you for your opinion!

And just as i was about to lash out a car pulled over

Neko: Oh and here i was wondering where your partner was

Sara: How did it go ? Is everything ready ?

????: Its all good.... its all set up

Yes all is going to plan

Sara: *grin* YEs good.... i will make you all suffer !

Neko: Wow... scary

????: *tch*

Well this one was a little short but i just decided to finish up the Larp arc like this

CHAPTER 38 (Why am i not a asshole)

Well i have to say this morning when i woke up and saw 97 notifications i was like WTF! Don't get me wrong i love it its a nice wake up call. Now usual at this moment i would do a side character bio but since i decided i am going to End Season 1 in a couple of chapters i will postpone it and then i will give a idea for my future plans and how this story will go on... unless my imagination goes crazy again... lets just say that the Larp arc changed about 10 times during the writing but il explain more later.... and now lets continue

(Y/N) POV:

(Y/N): So all was fine ?

Yasuo: *Yea man the flight was good no problems... we did have a little turbulence one time*

(Y/N): Did Ekko scream ?

Yasuo: *Hahah no... he was crying Hahahahahah*

I was siting on the balcony having my morning coffee and cigarette while talking on the phone with Yasuo. It's been about a weak since the Larp ended and True Damage needed to leave for a tour....

(Y/N): I just wished you guys stayed longer... but i guess its hard when you are popular

Yasuo: *Don't remind me... sometimes i just wish i could stay and not think about our work... but man its our dream! We have to follow it*

I once had a dream... it was taken away... who am i to take somebody else's

(Y/N): Yea man... you guys are good! And don't you dare tell Ecco i said that !

Yasuo: *Hahaha don't worry i wont! By the way i think Qiyana likes you *chuckels**

I could hear him chuckling like a little kid on the phone i know how he was always mentioning before how he would wish for the two of us to meet

(Y/N): Yea bro she is awesome. Completely different compared to the image she gives on TV i was glad i was finally able to meet her! But i already have enough problems in my life

Yasuo: *Yea you have 4 very difficult problems hahaha*

(Y/N): And try to stop Senna this time from finding a dick again

Yasuo: *Man... that's like telling a fish no to swim*

(Y/N): God.... that girl has such bad taste

Yasuo: *Oh and (Y/N)*

(Y/N): Yea ?

Yasuo: *Whats wrong ?*

Sigh.... he knew already.... cant hide nothing from him...

(Y/N): Lets just say i have a choice to make.... and its a hard one

Yasuo: *Since this is clearly a fucked up thing i don't want to know.... you know that i had to actually get my affairs in order when we were coming.... those girls were not joking on the murder thing.... but.... just make the choice that you know is right*

(Y/N):That's the problem.... the choice that i know is right.... is the one i don't want to make....

Yasuo:... *whats the thing you always say*

(Y/N): I am a smart-ass not a asshole.....

Yasuo: *Exactly... but you know... sometimes its ok to be a asshole*

Heh.... the famous wise man Yasuo is actually changing his principles for me... whats next

(Y/N): Thank's Yas..... but this is something i have to do in the end..... shit why cant i just be fucking happy...

Yasuo: *Because life is a bitch...*

(Y/N): *sigh* Yes it is.... you know sometimes i hate my life so much... i never told you this.... but a few months ago... i wanted it to end

I heard something slam on the other side of the call.. but Yasuo just kept quiet.... listening to me

(Y/N):I was having a very bad month... nothing was going right

Yasuo: *Yea... i remember.. when we talked you really sounded depressed*

(Y/N): So i decided to call home you know... maybe just talk to somebody... i needed to talk to somebody..... my sister answered and when she heard my voice she just said " Nobody is home call latter".... i guess it was just the final straw Yasuo: *What made you change your mind*

(Y/N):.... Kingdom Hearts 3 was out... and then i played it and wanted to kill myself again on how disappointing it was hahahahah He actually laughed on that last part... but i could still hear the edge in his voice

Yasuo: *Listen (Y/N)....*

(Y/N): Don't worry... those thoughts are long gone

Yasuo: *Just don't do anything stupid..... please.....*

(Y/N): You are just saying that because the girls will blame you

Yasuo: *True true... but most of all you are a friend*

TIMESKIP

Ahri: And that's why i think we should just do it like this!

Kai'Sa: I agree! Its going to be a little hard but if we have no problems on the road it will work

I was in the living room doing the finishing touches on my PC while the girls were talking about their tour that they were supposed to begin soon. They were leaving the day after tomorrow

Evellyn: So we drive into this city... and then we will be back for 2 days and then we can make it to Demacia on the last flight in the evening.... hmm we will have to cancel Ionia then

Akali: That's going to take a hit... we have a huge fan-base there

Ahri: But its the only way we can be here for Christmas that's here in two weeks

Kai'Sa: Hmm how about we cancel the one in Noxus then ?

Evellyn: Possible dear... but that one is going to drop our ratting... but considering its new year at that time.... i don't know maybe if shorten the show

Akali: We already shortened the show in France.... if we do it to much people will stop wanting to pay our prices on the tickets

Yea.... i am a smart-ass... not a asshole.... fuck

(Y/N): *sigh* Girls we need to talk...

Ahri: Ah one moment (Y/N).... but what about if we move this show to here and

Kai'Sa: No that will not work... maybe if we don't sleep for those 2 days we can maybe make it

Akali: I think we should just cancel the tour !

.... this has to stop

(Y/N): Now please...

The girls just lifted their eyes from the papers and were looking towards me with questionable looks. Then Evellyn just made a grin and licked her lips

Evellyn: Now now! I know you want to spend time with us but i think its best if you let us arrange all of this! Then i can personally spend some quality time with you

And even Kai'Sa blushed then and smiled towards me

Kai'Sa; And the costume is all clean.... *blush* we can use it again... OH but you promised me a date first before we leave!

Ahri: How about we all go for dinner tomorrow ! We can spend tonight packing and just grab a few hours of sleep...

... I hate this.... i despise this... but there is no other way

(Y/N): Actually.....*ahem*... i don't want to do those things

Shit... don't look at me with those sad and shocked faces

Kai'Sa: Ummm (Y/N) is something wrong ? Why don't you...

(Y/N): Don't get me wrong! Its not that i don't want to... actually *sigh* i want to spend the holidays with my family not you guys

Which is a huge fucking lie i want to spend it with you..... but i have to do this..... please don't look at me like that. Already they were just opening their mouths processing what i said

(Y/N): I will go back to Zaun... i already made a call and Diana and Dad agreed...

Akali: Don't worry!... I mean we can come with you and meet your brother and sisters....

Ahri: Hmmm if we cancel that charity show then yes !

And this is the problem..... he was right. They have become to needy and possessive... all of us have of each other.... but i have to do this.... i will not destroy their dreams ! Not for my happiness

(Y/N): Sorry but this is a family reunion. So only family will be present there is no need for you girls to be there

As i said those words Evellyn just slammed the papers on the table and left for her room without saying anything

She was followed by Kai'Sa who had tears forming in her eyes... the look she gave me broke my heart in pieces

Akali was so mad and i was sure she wanted to punch me... but she just grabbed her keys and helmet and went to the elevator not even looking at me anymore

And Ahri was just siting on the table... looking at me.... i hated that look... its the one she gives when she is on a business meting

Ahri:I thought we were your family as well.... I guess i was wrong

And then she just got up and left ..... yea you are my family... you are my world..... and this is why i have to do this

TIMESKIP

I was barely able to sleep last night.... the nightmare with Zilean was back again after a long time....

(Y/N): Shit!... yea i am starting to notice the pattern... lets just say goodbye to the girls before they leave

Yesterday was awful.... girls were barely talking to me all day. They spent most their time packing and didn't even want to have the dinner i made together... they just grabbed a piece and went back to work leaving me alone on the table...

Today is the day they leave... so lets just wish them good luck and act happy.. i know il make them pancakes before the trip!!!

As i entered the kitchen and started to prepare the filling i noticed a sticker on the fridge

"We have left for the Tour, will be back in February, there is money in the bank account, and have fun with your family"

They left.... without even saying goodbye..... i know this is for the best..... why am i not a asshole

This chapter was pretty short i admit... but i believe this is the best place to start the final arc in this season

CHAPTER 39(Perfect To Perfect Actually)

Truthfully i have no idea how this is going to go on my brain is fighting 3 different ideas. I know how i am going to end it but i have no idea how to get there

Sara POV:

Announcer: *Give it up for KD/A!!!*

Ahri: *HELLOOO London, we are happy to be here tonight !*

I was watching a stream on my phone of them when the person that i was waiting for sat on the other side of the table

Sara: Ah you are her, would like some coffee

????: *Tch* No i am just here to deliver the files nothing else

Sara: Oh don't be like that. We are partners

SLAM The person across me slammed the table making it crack all over. That was kinda bad since we go the attention of everyone in the coffee shop

????: We are, and i repeat again NOT PARTNERS!

Wow so angry

????: I am doing this just because there is no other way !

Sara: Sure sure what ever makes you happy *smile*. Now.... is everything that i requested here ?

????: *Sigh* Yes.... all of it.....is on this file

Sara: Good! Its about time for me to make a appearance hahahahah

(Y/N) POV:

(Y/N):.... *sigh* no messages even today....

Its been 9 days since the girls left for their tour... and it was not easy. I have called them a few times until now... but it was not going well. The first time i called Ahri in the evening on the day they left she answered with a concerned voice

Ahri: (Y/N) Is everything OK ?

(Y/N):Ummm.... yea just wanted to make sure the flight was OK

Ahri: Oh... it was fine... if its not else i am going i am busy

And then she just hanged up on me with that last sentence sounding very emotionless and bored. The next day i called Evellyn but she didn't answer her phone so i tried Kai'Sa then who actually answered like she was happy to hear from me... but that changed in less then a second which was followed with a " I am practicing, bye"... after that i was afraid to call again but i did after about 2 more days this time trying Akali...

Akali: What do you want ?

(Y/N): I... i just wanted to see how you are all doing

Akali: Oh we are perfect ! Don't think about us to much. You need to prepare for the time with "your" family

The "your" part was half growling..... after that i didn't even try anymore and its been 5 days since i last heard from them.

(Y/N): *sigh*... maybe.... maybe i should just

RING RING RING

AH THE GIRLS!!!!..... no... its Garen

(Y/N): Yea man.....

Garen: Hey bro! Want some DnD today ?

(Y/N): Ummm i am not really in a...

Garen: Please man! I need to slay some monsters! Lets meet up in the Dirty Mug (Y/N): ..... *sigh* fine

Garen: Good and ummm... i kinda invited my girlfriend he he he ... so make me look cool please !

Then i just hang up and was again looking at the phone hoping that a message will show up that i was busy and i missed a call.... nothing came

TIMESKIP

Garen'sGirl: Garen you are so COOL!!!!

Garen: *blush* He he stop your making me blush

(Y/N) & Marko & Rick: Yes please stop !

And then we all started laughing while Garen was even more red.... ah i needed this. When i came i was expecting a disaster but i was pleasantly surprised when i saw Marko and Rick. Marko is from North Piltover se he is on the far side but he spent a night at Sofia's so he decided to come join before going home. Rick is from the south like us and after the Larp we stayed in contact plus he was a cool guy. He was very happy when he heard he will also shock Ezreal that day so i earned his respect and he mine

Now for Garen's girlfriend... i had no idea who she was. He changes them every week... i mean i cant blame him not only is he in the Special Task Force he is also handsome. So he keeps jumping from one to another

Marko: Listen (Y/N) i actually stayed in contact with Xerath

Rick: Oh that's a surprise

(Y/N): Yea i thought you hated him

Marko: I did at first, but we spent that night talking... and he turned out to be OK. A little on the snob side but nothing special. Anyway he made a

suggestion that for the next Larp we don't participate. We need to send a message that the festival will not sell out! And if all the famous vets don't fight its going to be boring

Garen: I actually approve that... Don't get me wrong ! The new stuff and the castle were amazing!

Rick: Especially the TV stream man! Do you know there is a video of me on the net! Of me doing that thing in the end with my power!!!

(Y/N): But its just going down.... you saw last time how the game actually got fixed. This would have never happened before... but now it was possible.. I guess if the vets don't fight it will send a message

Garen: Anyway we will see how it goes but man i am disappointed that Kai'Sa didn't come. Its always fun to watch he play she is very good at it

Rick: If you have told me before the Larp that a popular pop-star was playing a Orc warrior and beheading monster i would have called you crazy

Marko: Yea... you never told me how did you meet ?

(Y/N): You wouldn't believe me... but lets just say that it all started when Malph did his rock train on me Rick: Holy shit how did you survive that! I saw him that day on the battle and it...

Gare'nGirl: Wait you cant be talking about Kai'Sa from KD/A ?

Garen: Ummm yea sweetie she came with (Y/N) a few times

Garen'sGirl: OMG! How did somebody like you ever get in contact with her! She is so out of your league !

..... Yea i didn't like her and i don't feel bad about not knowing her name anymore. Garen kinda understood by my look what was going on since he did everything he could now to change the subject.... but the girl just kept pushing which was just punching my buttons...god... i miss them so much

TIMESKIP

Marko: Thanks for the awesome session man! And we will see each other around i will be coming here to visit Sofia.

(Y/N): Yea Marko it was a pleasure... see ya man

... And i was alone. Marko was the last one who left after session was over. It was currently 9 o'clock and it was to early for bed.... i checked my phone every hour but there were still no messages or calls from girls.

(Y/N): *sigh* i guess i should just leave and go home

????: How come every time i see you, you have a depressed look

I then looked up to the voice and saw Sara standing next to me

Sara: Hey! We meet again. Want to join me for a drink ?

..... fuck it

(Y/N): Yea! Why not

Sara just made a radiant smile and sat across me on the table, she was very similar to last time. She had a big hat and huge glasses covering her face so it was hard to get a good look at her. As she was getting comfortable my favorite waitress came

BustyWaitress: Oh (Y/N) you staying ?

(Y/N): Yea il have a drink first

BustyWaitress : Sure honey no problem, so what will the two of you have

(Y/N)&Sara: Goblin Snot

Which made me just look at her with a raised eyebrow as the waitress left to pick up our drinks

Sara: Wait is it your favorite to!!??

(Y/N): Actually yea haha

Sara: Oh awesome !

Oh wow, long time since i saw somebody drinking Goblin Snot. It was a coll drink but people tended to stay away from it since its on the weak side. Which was perfect for me since Sara: I know people don't like it to much since its weak but i love just because of that, i get drunk from like two beers

(Y/N): OK WOW! I was just thinking that ! I am the same

Sara: Oh you don't say *smile* what are the chances right.

Just as the drinks were delivered and i was thinking how to continue this conversation somebody let Disturbed play in the background

Sara: Oh wow this song is amazing. Its from my favorite band!!!

(Y/N):.... your joking right!

Sara: No i love them! Wait you to!!!!! Wow !

TIMESKIP

(Y/N): OK, everything is turned off sir and if anybody comes looking for us just tell them the girls are on the tour SecurryGuard: Got it Mister(Y/N)! Have a pleasant trip home

I was now standing in-front of our building thinking of which buss to take back home while waiting for the taxi to pick me up. Tomorrow was Christmas so i was going to make my way home today and be back day after tomorrow.

(Y/N): *sigh* ... well it will be good to see my Dad and Brother... even Diana hahaha..... still no messages... screw it

I was in a better mood i have to say. When i decided to have a drink with Sara two nights ago i was not expecting much... but man the girl was perfect to perfect actually

She liked the same drinks like me we loved the same music and her favorite TV show's were the same like mine i have to say i was impressed. Not to mention she was so easy to talk to! I even got a little drunk at one moment and started to blabber

FLASHBACK

(Y/N): And then they don't even call ! Can you imagine how my friend feels !

Sara: Oh no!!! He lets them go follow their dream and they treat him like that !

(Y/N): EXACTLY!!! They have no idea how lonely he is! Believe me! And when he did try to call they just stood him up!

Sara: Well that is just RUDE!!! He should never speak to them again

(Y/N):... well i wouldn't go that far...

Sara: No no defiantly, maybe even get revenge hahaha

(Y/N): Hahah actually maybe hahah

END OF FLASHBACK

Good i was able to keep at least some control and didn't really give any details... although i think it was the drink but that smile looked dangerous when she mentioned revenge.... nah just the drink. Oh the taxi is here

TaxiDrive: Where to sir ?

(Y/N): Piltover buss station please

Sara POV:

Hmmm so they are here now good... and in two days... ah perfect i have a connection there!.... i just need to make some final preparations and all is

perfect!.... (Y/N) was so fucking annoying last night! And what the fuck is wrong with his taste!!! Those rock bands are like a decade old!

Sara: *sigh* OK OK calm down just calm down. You have been planing this for a long time don't rush it now!

I then took out the file on (Y/N) that i got from that person and started skimming through some of the info on him. Better just make sure one more time i got everything memorized

Sara: Hmmm using something about his night with Jhin is dangerous... he is actually very smart in a strange way and i till make him suspicious .... maybe i can use up his bad blood with his family, he did mention last night he was going to visit them... good yea i will use that.

Yes all is going according to plan. (Y/N) is ready to brake and the day after tomorrow he will be mine.... hahaha i can only imagine the face the girls will make when they see the video i will make of (Y/N) moaning in pleasure with me! How will they all feel betrayed when their favorite toy gets taken away! YOU WILL FEEL EXACTLY LIKE ME !!!!!

(Y/N): Haha hahahaha AHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHHAAHAH

Sorry another short chapter. I actually have to step out for 1h so better just to post this now and continue when i come back. Want to finish the Sara arc today

CHAPTER 40(You are Grounded)

And i am back

(Y/N) POV:

DING DONG DIIIIIIIIIIIING DO

(Y/N): Seriously... it still sounds so broken.... when is dad going to fix it

It was now afternoon a just before sun down. I was currently standing in front of my house sighting after ringing the doorbell... its been broken for 15 years already and the old man just doesn't want to fix it.... something about memories what ever that means.

Diana: *Just a minute !*

After hearing the voice on the other side the door locks started to open... god even the door locks are still stuck... me and that old bastard need to have a talk how can a freaking handy man have so many broken stuff

Diana: Yes who..... MY LITTLE PTE*GUAH*

I was able to slam my hand on her mouth stopping her from finishing those words

(Y/N): OK! If you call me that i am going to turn around and leave! Do we understand each other

Diana: *nods*

And then i removed my hand.... big mistake

Diana: MY BABY!!!!!!!! GIVE YOUR MOMMY A HUG

.....*sigh* I am back

After about 2 min of her crying in my face and kissing my check she finally let me go... of course that caused a huge commotion in the house and then they al started showing up. The first one to come was probably my only sibling that is happy to see me

Mike: BIG BROO!!!!

(Y/N): Holy.... man you got big !

Yea my autistic brother came and gave me hug that could compare to Braum... crap my bones my bones.... i think he was almost 2m tall now and about 120kg heavy.. it was not all fat he was just a very huge big boned even when he was a child... he kinda stole all growth in our family

Dad: Well well well! Look who it is

Then dad came and also gave me a hug

(Y/N): Yea sorry for calling on last notice.... kinda just decided to visit

Diana: You knew he was going to come !??

smack she smacked him over the head with a spoon.... man i remember those.... they look like they hurt allot when ever he would get them

Dad: ow ow ow ! Wait woman he called me this morning ! So i decided to make a surprise

Katarina: Why are you all yelling! I am trying to watch my show..... hello

My younger sister Katarina came down and once she saw me just made a cold expression. She was 10 years younger then me and is still in high school ... She was always the strong girl type who didn't afraid to get her hands dirty. I remember the constant nights how Diana will fight with her because Katarina would make trouble and get in a fight at school or just plain insult the teachers. Not to mention she gets brought home by the police every month at least twice.... the only reason she is not in juvenile hall is because of our aunt Casi: Seriously i am on the phone here! How do you expect me to have a social.....

And then came Casi... and as soon as she saw me she just turned around and left. She was actually a vastaya. Apparently Diana'S previous husband had some reptile vastaya blood and it manifested in her giving her exotic eyes and a lover body of a snake. Not to mention even though she was 15 she looked like a beautiful and older woman... which made her popularity skyrocket where ever she went. So if Kata was the leader of the school, Casi was the beauty queen...

I still remember the day when Diana and the girls showed up at our home. I knew Dad was seeing someone and i didn't mind. After our mother left us he needed to happy. But it was a shock when he decided to remarry. And the girls... they actually loved me in the beginning... up until high schol when that incident happened...

Diana: OK! Get your stuff up to your old room! Its exactly the same as you left it and we will all have diner

Kata: I was planing to eat out tonight mom i am going to

Diana: AH NO!!! You are still grounded ! i don't care where you want to go ! And your brother is here so you will spend time with him. YOU TO CASI!!!!!!!!!!!!! DON'T MAKE ME COME UP THERE AND TAKE YOUR PHONE AWAY!!!!!!!!!!

Wow... i forgot how loud she can be when she is mad...

Mike: Oh come come... i show you... come i show you my new game... come ..... *sight*.. I guess i really am back

MUNDO POV:

Mundo: *sigh* Another one

Assistant: Sir?

Mundo: Mundo just got another complaint

Mundo was siting in his favorite chair in his office with his personal assistant... and Mundo was not happy

Mundo: This is the 6 email Mundo is getting with a complain on the KD/A VIP event....

Assistant: Sir what happened ? We can probably fix it without drama

Mundo: A fan tried to hug Akali but she refused

Assistan: OK that's not to hard... i know they were VIP but we can

Mundo: And then she broke his hands after he tried again....

Assistant:..... Il make a call

Mundo was not happy at all. Not was this the 6 complaint in the past two weeks from the VIP event... it was the 4th violent one....

Assistant: We also need to deal with the scandal in London..

During the concert in London Evellyn just suddenly stooped and walked off the stage mid show. When Mundo call and ask what was wrong she just answered with "I am not in the mode"... *sigh* Mundo knew something was wrong when he saw the girls on the airport that day... And of course Mundo knows what is the reason

Assistant: Sir... to many incidents are happening in such a small time frame.... if it continues like this the KD/A image will go down

Mundo: Mundo knows this... but there is nothing that Mundo can do... only one person can take care of this and Mundo has no idea whats going on with him

Assistant: You mean mister (L/N)

Which Mundo just raised his eyebrow to his assistant

Assistant: Sir please... i have been working for you for a long time i know everything you do, don't worry nobody else knows in the company yet

Mundo: Good! Mundo likes how the girls act when (Y/N) is there... but this now scares Mundo.... Mundo has a very very bad feeling about this

Assistant: Sir.... what happens *gulp*... if you know....

Mundo knows what he means... and he really hopes Mundo's feeling is wrong.... Mundo like (Y/N).... but Mundo wants to kick (Y/N)'s ass now for giving him so much trouble

(Y/N) POV:

(Y/N): *Acho*

Diana: Oh honey! Are you ok ? Getting a cold?

(Y/N): Nah... i am good just my nose itched

We were finishing up dinner.... and i have to say.... it was a amazing disaster. We were all siting on the big table with Mike constantly pestering me about something which i of course didn't mind. I was glad to see his speech improved allot and that he was more active. Diana was just as him always asking some questions while Dad was just chuckling like always.... which left Kata frowning and Casi just ignoring me

Dad: Soooo how are you girlfriends

(Y/N): *COUGH COUGH* What ! I told you its not like that !

Dad: Hahaha sure sure... ah when i was young what me and Diana used to do

Diana: Hoooneeey stop

(Y/N) & Kata & Casi: YES PLEASE STOP!

Mike: Hehe i am happy!

Sigh.... well this is going actually better then i planed so guess its not so bad.

Diana: OK! So what are your plans for tomorrow!

(Y/N): Actually nothing special really was just maybe thinking of taking a walk and just chill around a little you know... its good to get out of the big city Diana: Wonderful OH! I know you can go with me and the girls to the new store that just opened !

Cais: WHAT! NO!!!!!!

Katarina: I REFUSE WHY DOES HE NEED TO COME!

SLAM

Diana: BECAUSE HE IS YOUR BROTHER AND I SAID SO! THAT'S WHY NOW FINISH YOUR VEGETABLES!!!!!

..... wow.... I am suddenly starting to enjoy her never yelling at me...and that look that dad is making.... yea i know that look.... i think i am going to barf now

Diana: Well anyway you are tired so just finish up and go rest we will meet up tomorrow

(Y/N): Ah sure but let me do the dishes OK

Diana: No no you need to...

(Y/N): Hahah its OK really i don't mind. You look a lot more tired then me Diana: Well if you insist

Dad: Hahaha always the gentleman. Anyway me and your brother have some work tomorrow so we will be back in the evening

Mike: OH OH OH!!!! You going to cook, you going to cook!!!!

(Y/N): Hahaha sure sure il help with the dinner tomorrow

Mike: Yaaaay! I love your food

I got up and went to the kitchen... still the same i can still see the scratches we made as we were growing up.... ahah and there is that one that i made in rage after figuring out my growth spurt stooped.... god Mike could you share some growth genes. As i started to clean everything

CRASH

Casi was standing behind me with a broken glass in front of her on the floor, she was looking towards my in shock not moving at all. Diana rushed into the kitchen and then she screamed ... oh shit my sleeves were pulled up

Diana: What... what is that ! HOW !

She was looking at my arms.... my arms that looked like shit after that night with Jhin. My dad and Kata ran into as well and dad just widened his eyes while Kata was looking at me with open mouth.... ah crap i forgot

(Y/N): Ahahah don't worry about it. Its from that accident

Diana: But... but but

(Y/N): It's fine really! It just looks like that just some simple scars nothing else I could see that Casi had a skeptical look... ever since we were kids she could always figure out when i lied or try to trick her into something.... and Kata was actually wording words with her mouth without sound but i could read her lips *Those are no crash wounds* Then luckily Dad came into rescue

Dad: Come on Ladies don't stare! He said its fine. OK i am off to bed early so il see you tomorrow night (Y/N): Sure good night!

sight

It took me about 15 min to clean all the dishes... i need to be careful if they see these wounds on my legs or even the gunshot ones this will end bad.... very bad..

(Y/N): I could use a smoke

I picked up my jacket and walked out to the back... if Diana catches me smoking inside she will kill me! She was extremely against smoking and luckily she found out i smoke after i moved out! But she still gives me a lecture every tie she sees me

Kata: Ahhh.....Shit * cough cough*.... its you... fuck my last one

I ran into Kata and she kinda got jumped scared and threw the cigarette to the ground but once she recognized me she frowned and now was looking through her empty box.... sight i just be a responsible big brother now

(Y/N): Here

So i offered her one.... yea my mind was telling me that letting her smoke was bad... but i have no right to say anything, i also started in her age.

Kata:..... thanks....

(Y/N): I hope you like it.... its the last pack i got from Yasuo and they are good

At first she was looking at me skeptically but then after lighting it and taking a breath she made a satisfied expression... yea good shit. Then after about 2min of silence she spoke

Kata: Your not going to tell....

(Y/N): *sigh* Well... you clearly still in trouble so this will only make it worse.... and i started at your age so i have no right to teach you a lesson... plus i enjoy smoking so i cant complain how bad it is...

I was sure we were done there Kata stooped talking to me first but to my surprise she started again

Kata: Those wounds..... they are not from a bike crash are they....

Hmmm even though she likes to fight and make shit where ever she goes shes a extremely smart kid. Casi is the one with grades but i am sure Kata could beat her if she had the motivation

(Y/N):.... I got into some trouble..... and this is the price

After that she just stomped on her cigarette and left inside.... wow... we talked more today then in the past 8 years.... i guess i really haven't visited in a long time... to bad she still hates me...

Mike: BRO!!! Lets play a game!!!

(Y/N): Yea yea coming

TIMESKIP

.....motherfucker.... really

I was standing in my town's center.... and in front of me was the store... my eye was twitching

Diana: So this is the store the girls wanted to visit! Its called Syndra's Boutique

.....Seriously.... OK, OK, lets just calm down and go inside and il just pay normally without showing my card and no attention will be drawn

Casa: Can we go inside already.... i don't want to be seen with my mother

Kata: *tch*

Of course the girls are so happy that i am here.... not

As we entered the story it was nothing less then flashy. Syndra had class and she didn't care if it was open in a small town she will still make it up to her standard

It was already full with high school girls who were looking all around and checking the clothes not to mention a good number of guys were looking at

the men's section... OK lets just stay calm and all will be fine. Then Diana just stood in front of us with arms on her hips and a smug smile

Diana: Now don't you kids worry! Your mother good a bonus at work and all is on me! So go have fun .... I knew my mothers job.... and she didn't know Syndra's prices.... this wont end well

Casa: Can you please not draw attention to us.... its embarrassing... and couldn't you wear something else Yea even i have to complain... she was dressed like a simple housewife... she couldn't be anymore obvious with her style

Kata: Lets just get this over with

.....

We were in the store already about 20min. Kata and Casi unlike at the beginning were actually enjoying themself now going from corridor to corridor checking the clothes. They even meet with some friends apparently and were talking happily

Diana: This... price is....

And then i saw Diana.... my sweet step-mother who couldn't be more out of place with her blue overalls and fuzzy snow hat finally looking at the prices... her face was devastated....*sight*

(Y/N): Yea i noticed they are a little pricey... and you know how i feel about these type of stores how about we go to the flea market after this ?

Which made her give out a huge smile.... yea this lady is the one responsible for my flea-market love... but then that smile went sad and she made a look of resolve

Diana: NO! I said i will buy my children present and gosh darned i will....

Gosh darned..... really.... hahahah.... i am really starting to get a bad premonition

(Y/N): Fine il go pick out something

Diana: And maybe a different color then black

(Y/N): Don't push it !

After about 10min i found a simple black shirt that was not expensive actually on the cheap side considering the usual price tag... yea i don't need clothes and this will make her happy. And as i was making my way to the counter i heard a tone of voice that made my blood freeze... not again.... you cant be serious

Worker1: Excuse me ?

Diana: Do...do you maybe.... take multiple payments.... i have some coupons from different stores that i can use as well for trade

Casi: Mom DON'T!

Kata: SHUT IT CASI! Wait mom il chose something else

There she was Diana on the counter looking with plea towards the two shop ladies while Casi and Kata were behind her... Casi was massively embarrassed and Kata was pissed off... the clothes they chose were clearly on a much higher pay grade it was a beautiful dress for Casi and a red leather jacket for Kata Worker2: Hahaha seriously hahahahah

..... somebody is going to die today

Worker1: Pfff... madam there is a flea market about 400m to the east...pffff hahahah you can try coupons there

Cais: *hisssss*

Kata:How... dare

Diana: No no girls don't... its OK.... i am sorry i couldn't buy it

Worker 1 & 2: Hahahahha

Kata was already activating her ability and even Casi didn't care anymore and she wanted to teach these two a lesson... our mom may be embarrassing but she is a wonderful mother.... and now these 2 bitch workers decide to discriminate..... i will make them suffer

(Y/N): AHhhh there you guys are!

The girls just looked towards me and even the workers. Ofc i was in casual clothes so you could see they were ready to laugh... good! They didn't recognize me so i started speaking in a loud voice

(Y/N): Hey i found some clothes for Mike and Dad as well but you need to check it Mom *smile* you know their sizes! Awesome Jacket Kata i saw one more in a white color that would also be good so you should grab it.... hmmm Casi i don't know about that dress... better take two more and we can check back home which is the best They were looking at me in shock! Diana had her eyes wide while both Kata and Casi were looking pissed probably thinking i had no idea what was going on

Worker1: Hahahah sir just as we were telling your mother. This is a little bit our of your price range

Worker2: If you want there is a fle..

(Y/N): Ah yea the flea market definitely! I just cant stand these stores i prefer comfy clothes any day

Everyone was looking at us in silence and then they started to laugh in our faces.... yes laugh bitch laugh i will have the last one

(Y/N): Hmm is there a problem ?

Worker1: Sight.... this is why i hate towns like this people have no class

(Y/N): Oooohhh really ? Can you then please call your manager ?

Diana: Honey... there is no

(Y/N): NO no no its OK.... *growling* call him

I actually growled a little on the last words and one of the workers went into the back...

Casi and Kata were looking around and even said a few times " Its fine lets just go mom" and Diana even pulled my hand but i wasn't budging.... i don't care if you discriminate against me... but my family.... Then finally one the girl workers came out of the back with some older man.

First he frowned at the scene and she clearly told him what was going on since he first laid his eyes on my mother and did a *tch*... then he looked towards me.... and after about 5 seconds his eyes widened.... *grin* let the games begin

StoreMenager: M-m-m-mister (L/N) its a pleasure to see you in our humble store! How may i assist you

And then all laughing and snickering stooped... the two workers were just looking at him with shock and my sisters and mother were switching their look between me and him

(Y/N): Are you the manager

StoreMenager: Yes sir

(Y/N): I have a complaint... your staff are rude bitches

That made the mass of people gasp in shock. And Diana even started shacking my hand... huh did Kata just actually snicker.... OK now i am seeing things Casi actually has a smile on her face

Diana: (Y/N)! Don't say stuff like that !!! Please its fine we can (Y/N): *growling* ITS NOT FUCKING FINE

Which made her twitch away from me... Even Casi and Kata were looking at me like me in complete shock now

Worker1: How dare...

Worker2:Hiiiiiiiii. Mister (L/N) I APOLOGIZE! It was just a joke!

One of the workers decided to talk back but the other one screamed in fear after she finished tapping something on their work PC. Then the one who wanted to fight went to her and she also made a screaming sound

Worker1: SIR! We are so

(Y/N): Shut the fuck up *smile*

I was not yelling, no i was smiling... after all of the bullshit i had to endure these past two weeks THIS SHIT HAPPENS AGAIN! WELL NEVER AGAIN !

StoreMenager: Sire... we can

I just took my phone then and made a call while putting it on speaker

RIING RIING

Syndra: Oh my (Y/N)! To what do i owe a pleasure of this call

Once she spoke the it was clear the manager used every ounce of his strength no to whimper

(Y/N): Hey Syndra how are you

Syndra: *sigh* Busy.... so much work i cant even get a free day for another 3 weeks. How about you ? And we need to go for coffee again! I found another good place

(Y/N): Oh nice nice! I am just now in Zaun actually my hometown

Syndra: Oh that is so good! I actually opened a branch store there! So you should go visit and do some shopping! I think you will like it we have some leather jackets and allot of casual black shirts that are just for your taste. I know how you like it casual

(Y/N): Ah yes i am already here with my sisters and mother... i just finished having a lovely chat with on of your workers... I have to say, i am a little bit upset

And then there was silence... until she finally spoke

Syndra: Put them on

(Y/N): Your on speaker

Syndra: Who am i speaking to right now

The manager was just looking at the phone in shock but i just made a smile motioned him to speak

StoreMenager: M-m-m-mam this is the StoreMenager m-m-my name is

Syndra: You are fired. All of you get out!

TIMESKIP

Syndra asked me to stay watch the store for about 10 min until some other workers showed up... Ofc it was clear they were also idiots and snobs but they knew better then to say anything. I told the girls to pick up more clothes and they were still so shocked and actually scared that they just did it without complaining. I then even made Diana pick up some clothes... she was reluctant at first but when i told her it would make Dad happy she accepted.

After they chose what they wanted the new StoreMenager told me it was free of charge but i refused and still payed. When Diana heard the price i she almost fainted and fell down but Kata caught her.

Now we were on our car driving back home. I was in front while Kata and Casi were siting in the back... it was dead silence since we left the store without anybody speaking but finally Casi was the first one to talk.... she didn't talked to me in 6 years before this

Cais:Ummm... (Y/N)..... thank you

(Y/N): Huh ?

Cais: For....umm... the dresses

(Y/N): Ohhh! No worries Casi! Its no big deal

And then Diana suddenly punched the brakes making us drift into the stop and me almost hitting my face into the front of the car.... i thank the person who invented seat belts!

Diana: No big deal! NO BIG DEAL! WHAT DO YOU MEAN NO BIG DEAL!!!!!!!!!

(Y/N): Diana...

Diana: I TOLD YOU TO CALL ME MOTHER!!!!!!!! AND WHAT DO YOU MEAN NO BIG DEAL!

(Y/N): Wait holy shit calm down

smack

Diana: DON'T YOU DARE CURSE IN FRONT OF ME BOY!

HOLY SHIT!!!!! She is dad level mad!!!!

Diana: FIRST YOU ACT SO DIFFERENTLY THEN YOU SAY THOSE THINGS TO THOSE WORKERS THEN YOU GET THEM FIRED!

(Y/N): Wait they....

smack again she smacked me

Diana: I AM NOT DONE YOUNG MAN! AND THE PRICE DID YOU SEE THE PRICE IT TAKES ME AND YOUR FATHER 5 MONTHS TO MAKE THAT KIND OF MONEY!!!!!AND WHY ARE YOU SMILING

.... huh i was.... i guess this was the first time she was yelling at me and not treating me like some engendered crippled child

Diana: STOP SMILING WHEN WE GET HOME YOU ARE GROUNDED!!! HEY STOP LAUGHING !! WHY ARE YOU LAUGHING NOW !!!!

TIMESKIP

I was standing behind the house enjoying my smoke.... i have to say... today was a good day. It started to so bad. But he way how it ended was good. Christmas dinner went pretty usual me and Dad talking while the girls were quiet. He was actually laughing like crazy when he heard i got grounded but he got smacked by a still pissed Diana so he calmed down (Y/N): PFffffff grounded ahahhahahah

Kata: You know people don't usually laugh for getting grounded

Kata just suddenly leaned on the wall next to me and offered me one of her cigarettes... so i just took it and now was watching the night with her in silence. At one moment i just spoke

(Y/N): You know... this is the most you talked to me in the past 8 years

Kata: Ah.... i

Casi: Are you smoking ? You want mom to kill you

Kata twitched and was ready to run but then we noticed it was just Casi outside.

Kata: Shut it brat! Your not going to tell her!

Casi: Oh really and why wouldn't i !!!

Kata: Because i said so!

Casi: Make me!!

(Y/N):.... Hahahahahhahahahahahhah

I started laughing like a idiot again witch made just the two of them look at me in confusion

(Y/N): *sigh*... i missed this so much...

Casi: Well your never home, but we always fight

(Y/N): OK.... is Diana dying or something. First Kata and now you are talking to me

Kata:..... its your fault

(Y/N): Huh?

Kata was looking into my face with a angry expression and Casi was just looking down to the floor with tears in her eyes

Kata: You started treating us differently... ever since that day when everyone found out your powerless.....

(Y/N): Wait... girls i

But i was interrupted by a sobbing Casi

Casi: No matter how much we tried to talk to you! You would just look at us with those eyes!

Kata: It was like you were expecting us to treat you differently!

Cais: And then *sob* and then *sob* then you send us that picture from collage of you smiling so happily... like you were happy to be gone from here... from us

Ahhhh.... that's right... when that night happened.... i turned everyone out... i didn't care anymore. The girls actually were still treating me normal after everyone found about me being a Gray... they stooped being my sister about 1 week after that and i thought it was because they understood about my position.... i guess it was just me

(Y/N):Sorry...

Then Kata started crying

Kata: Moron! Idiot! And then we find out your in a coma! *sob*

(Y/N): Yea... i am sorry... next time i will wear a helmet

Kata: SMART-ASS!

And then she hugged me while still crying..... fuck i am a moron..... after about 2min she finally let me go still having tears in her eyes. Then i looked towards Casi who was still looking down on the floor

(Y/N): Hey.... whose my little snake princess

Casi:... *sob* I AM !!!!!

Wait wait don't charge!!! DON'T JUMP

(Y/N): GUAAAAAAH!!!!!!! Wait CASI YOUR BREAKING MY SPINE!!!

Crap ! I forgot how she liked to jump on me and coil all around me with her tail and now she was huge even bigger then me !!! CRAP!!!! MY SPINE

(Y/N):Kata HELP!!!

Kata: Serves you right

Casi: *sob sob*

Crap i cant breathe !!! And then Mike showed up with a big smile

Mike: OHHH I also want a hug

(Y/N): *cough cough* st....op looking and..... . help.... Cais... i cant breathe

Kata: Mike lets go for some ice cream inside

Mike: OK!

TRAITORS..... crap all is going dark

OK this chapter was a longer one.... now no more happy bad to the sad probably two more for the Sara Arc

CHAPTER 41(Guys Have A Rule Book)

OK..... i have no idea how to start..... meh lets wing it and type something... yea first pov some guilty pleasure to start me motivated

MUNDO POV:

Knock knock

Ahri: *Come in*

Kai'Sa: MUNDO! I am so happy to see you

Mundo walked into the dressing room of his girls. They were just finished with the concert in Noxus and were relaxing getting much deserved rest... Mundo is impressed no incident today

Akali: Wow ! How come you are here!

Mundo: Well it is New Year today so Mundo came to spend it with you, what are the plans for us tonight ?

Ahri: We were thinking of going to a popular club here. When we made reservations he promised us its going to be a private seat with no interference

Mundo then looked towards Evellyn who was just quietly staring... not staring at him trying to stare behind him

Mundo: Mundo is sorry Evellyn, but (Y/N) is not here

And at those words the whole atmosphere of the fake happiness he was getting from all the girls was gone Ahri: Oh..... we didn't really....

Mundo: So Akali standing on the chair to look over Mundo's head doesn't give Mundo a hint ?

Akali: Well umm i just...

Evellyn: We thought.... if you showed up like this... maybe you brought him

Mundo: *sigh* Mundo is sorry but no

Kai'Sa: How is he ? Is he OK ? Did you talk to him ?

Ahri: He is not getting into trouble right ? Nobody try to kidnap him or something

Akali: What about the money! Does he have enough we didn't check the account these past few days!

Evellyn: No girls attack him right ? *growls* He didn't find somebody else did he... did he?

Mundo: OK OK STOP!!! To many questions for Mundo, and Mundo doesn't know the answer to any of them. So just call (Y/N)!

And then they all looked down to the floor in shame.... oh boy... Mundo likes (Y/N).... but (Y/N) give so much trouble to Mundo.

Mundo sat on the sofa in front of the girls and started speaking

Mundo: So why don't the girls call him ? Its clear to Mundo you are worried

Ahri:..... we cant.... he hates us now

Mundo: Mundo begs your pardon ?

Akali: He was calling us at the beginning every day... but we didn't want to talk to him

Kai'Sa: Its his fault!.... i mean.... he said those things... that he doesn't want us to visit his families... that we are not his family.....

All the girls looked down even Evellyn was looking devastated and that is a rare sight for Mundo... *sigh* Mundo was right (Y/N) is good for them

Evellyn: And then he just stooped.... not even a message for 2 weeks already.... i guess darling doesn't want us anymore Mundo:Mundo has a suggestion then.. just call him

And again they all look down in shame... *sigh* Mundo needs a drink... a very very strong drink

(Y/N) POV

"You sure you are fine! Why not spend New Year with us! We really don't mind!!!!"

sigh she was always spoiled but i guess it just grew even more now

"Dont worry Casi i am fine, so relax and we will see each other in a few weeks plus its like 3 hours to New Year how do you plan for me to make it... anyway Happy New Year and we will talk in a few days"

And done.... i am very happy im on good terms with my sisters but man.... this is like the 10 message in the last 3 days that i came back... she always was spoiled... but now i am just getting a danger alarm in my head.

Sara: You seem to be having a good time

(Y/N): Oh ?

Sara: Well you were smiling while writing that message *smiles*

(Y/N): Ah no just my youngest sister she is a little spoiled

Sara: Awwwwww so cute

I was siting in he Dirty Mug with Sara. Today is New Years Eve and its about 3 hours till the countdown.... *sigh* i didn't really have any plans and

was just planing to spend my time on my PC and enjoy a drink or something. But Sara called and insisted we meet up

Sara: So here is my plan! We drink we sing bard songs and we continue drinking !

(Y/N): Sounds good ! Except me singing

Sara: Hahah yea you really do sound like dead cats ! AHahah (Y/N): Umm yea sure.....

Before i could finish my thought i felt a tap on my shoulder as i turned i could only smile

Garen: Hey man whats up!

(Y/N): Garen good to see you !

Garen: And who is this little flower siting with you

Sara: Hi there my name is Sara *smile*

Garen: Ohhhhh what a angel!!!!

(Y/N): Oh brother *sigh*

Garen: Anyway just wanted to say hi i am with my girlfriend over there

And again it was some new girl.... man.... the guy has guts i will give him that. As i was looking towards her the waitress came back with our drink

BustyWaitress: Oh Garen perfect! Sorry but your girl is 20 years old so no drinks for her

Garen: WAIT WUT!!! COME ON PLEASE! A big part of my plan for her pants is to get her drunk!!!!

SLAP And he got slapped... while the Waitress just went away in a angry stride.... i have to say it was funny *grin*. Garen just said his goodbye and

left and when i looked towards Sara i saw she was kinda red in the face

(Y/N): Whats wrong ?

Sara: *ahem* well i am just thinking how lucky i am that they didn't ask for my ID

(Y/N): Huh?

ALERT ALERT ABANDON SHIP ABANDON SHIP!!!

Sara: Well i am 19

FALSE ALARM! MOVING BACK TO GREEN ZONE

(Y/N): Oh thank god...

Sara: Sorry !?

(Y/N): Oh nothing nothing i was just thinking how 15 years is a long time

Sara was just looking at me with a confused face

Huh 19... wow..... 19 huh ?

TIMESKIP

I went outside the bar since my phone was ringing and the music was to loud

(Y/N): Hello ?

????:.....

(Y/N): Helloooo ?

????:..... *um sorry*

Huh... strange not was is it only a hidden number but no other words... and i couldn't really recognize the voice since we didn't talk... it kinda... sounded like Kai'Sa.... nah my imagination

As i came back inside the party was going on full, people were singing and chanting. I even got a few free drink because some people recognized me from the Larp

When i came back i saw Sara taping on her phone with a... well that smile looks scary, how much did she have to drink

Sara: Hey i have been wondering something

(Y/N): Hmm tell me

Sara: Well... do you like me ?

.....Nanni?

(Y/N): Sorry?

Sara: Do you like me *blush*

Ah..... wow.....

(Y/N): W-w-w-w-well i do like you... i mean y-y-you are pretty cool and all

Sara: Really! That makes me so happy!!!!

(Y/N): But there is somebody else

Sara: Huh ?

(Y/N): Yea sorry but i have felling for somebody else... sorry OH GOD AM I ACTUALLY REJECTING THE GIRL!!!!! I never thought in my whole life that something like this would happen..... wow..... i cant stop grinning so much

Sara: Why do you have such a big grin *pout*

Ah she is pouting... she is cute like that

(Y/N): Sorry sorry i just never thought this would happen to me you know

Sara: Brake a girls heart *pout*

(Y/N): Haha no no sorry...

And then she just made a smile and bent over the table to whisper into my ear

Sara: *whisper* Hey.... want to come back to my place... we don't have to be in a relationship if you don't want to.... maybe just some fun

Oh.....ohhhhhhhhhhhhhhh

Sara POV:

(Y/N) just sat on my couch while i went to the kitchen to pick up a few drink.... yes... everything is going to plan... I got him here and he is already half drunk which is a plus. Good thing he actually cant handle his drink. So my work is almost complete.... God so many weeks of planing and preparation.... from asking around about him to getting those personal files just for this moment

(Y/N): Umm Sara where should i

Sara: OH! Just drop your jacket where ever and sit on the couch

Yes the couch the couch that will record us latter on tonight. The couch that will take the video that will allow me to finally take my revenge. All of you all of you will pay !

Ahri who stole my future husband !

Evellyn who from the very beginning was against me

Kai'Sa who was acting so sweet and fake but then stabbed me in the back at the last moment

And finally Akali! I thought you were my friend! But you took their side !

I will make you all payby taking the thing you cherish most! I will finally have my revenge and make you feel how i felt! I will take everything from you!... I removed my hat and glasses and walked into the living room with the drink as (Y/N) saw me he made a wide eyed face

(Y/N): Wait! Aren't you ?

Sara: Hehe sorry my name is actually Seraphine

(Y/N): Ah you ! Weren't you with KD/A ? Then left after that spat with boyfriend

Sera: Ah yea.... i still feel so bad about that... i was just a kid who didn't understand what really happened... but how do you know about that ?

(Y/N): Ummmmm i kinda red some rumors on the net h-he-he

OMG WHAT A IDIOT! Did he really think that would work haahahah but no fine control yourself Sera ! Just a little more

Sera: Ummm you don't mind that i lied to you ?

(Y/N): Nah its OK.... i understand its just better to stay in the shadows some times

Hahahha how ironic you who love nothing more then not to be noticed cant function without those bitches and their attention! Ah how i have waited for this long Sera:... (Y/N)... i kinda cant control myself now

(Y/N): S-s-sorry ?

Sera: I want you.

I then left my drink behind me on the table and sat in front on his lap looking at his eyes. As i did that i pressed the button that was on the remote hidden behind his head that starts the recording... Yes YES! So much planing so much work! AH i cant believe how lucky i got by going to that stupid party that Le'Blanc hosted.

I was still shocked when i saw him kissing Evellyn's nose and that girl actually blushed i thought i was going to die at that moment of excitement. Then the incident with Ahri and the punch GOD!!! It was perfect at that moment i knew that was it... but i was still not sure nooo i had to follow you for days i was stalking you after that! Looking, paying attention.

I saw how Kai'Sa was looking at you when ever you were outside, i saw how Akali rushed into the warehouse to save you. And more and more and more you just kept giving me more materials to make me so happy! They cared about you sooo much! It was perfect!!!

Then i just needed to call a few people make a few deals and get them make that file on you... wow i was laughing so hard while reading it, so pathetic from your taste in clothes to your hobbies to your personality EVERYTHING!!! You are nothing compared to my previous crush he was so much more.... BUT THAT BITCH REFUSED HIM!!!! MY FUTURE HUSBAND WHO WAS PERFECT GOT REFUSED BY THAT BITCH!!!!

But its OK he came back to me... he was so lovely then so forceful when he took me.... ah so lovely.... but then he never called.... so i waited and waited and waited for my perfect one but he never called so then i found out he went back to her.... AND SHE REFUSED HIM AGAIN!!! DOES SHE THINK SHE IS BETTER THEN ME! THEY ALL THINK THEY ARE BETTER THEN ME!

Why did he go back to them after me.... that's why i made him pay... that's why he will never hurt me again.... but you, you i will use to hurt the girls. But you were hard.... it was hard to get you to be willing... that's why i hired that mercenary i just needed to do one more push... AND YOU DID THE REST BY YOURSELF HAHAHAHAHHAH and then.... it was done

Now my dear foolish (Y/N) i will use you and i will make the girls suffer. And then when they see you with me they will be devastated... but now... let us enjoy our self's

Sera: (Y/N) i just cant anymore i just have to have you

(Y/N): S-s-s-s-s-sera just wait....

Sera: I cant i have waited for this for a long time *lick*

(Y/N): C-c-can i just ask one thing

Sera: Sure but make it fast ! Can you feel how wet i am

I started grinding and licking his ear. Yes yes this is will be perfect my revenge will be done now

(Y/N): Do....do.....do you know, guys have a rule book

Sera: And what does this *lick* book say *moans*

(Y/N): Th-h-h-h-.....The f-f-f-first.... The first rule is the most important one

Oh god he is so stuttering so pathetic haha just shut up and get hard

Sera: *moans* what is it *lick

(Y/N): Don't stick your dick in crazy

Sera: Huh?

And then i pulled my head back from his neck to look at his face... and all the nervousness and fear was gone in his face.... it was just a look of disgust... and before i could react his foot was on my stomach and he kicked me off of him forcing me to fall on the table

THUD, CRASH

(Y/N): Nice try

Ahoy Silver awaaaay

CHAPTER 42 (Seriously.... again this ?)

The finale.... i hope

Garen POV:

Garen: Come on baby we go back to my place and we can continue the party there

Garen'sGirl2: Yea sorry but no... bye

Garen: *sigh*..... huh

RING RING RING

(Y/N) POV:

Sera was looking at me in shock after i kicked her off of me... wow i still cant believe i actually did it... but man... it felt so wrong with her licking me i couldn't control my self.

Sera: W...w....what how did you...

(Y/N): Well i am weak but even i can kick you know, and then its mostly just physics and laws of gravity

Sera: NOT THAT YOU BASTARD! HOW DID YOU KNOW!!

Ohhhh... i guess no more faking the sweet girl.... yea fuck it in need to release some stress... and buy some time until i think of a way out of here

(Y/N): Wellllll i have to say you did have me fooled pretty well.... it was well done i have to say

Sera: MY PLAN WAS PERFECT!!!

(Y/N): Ummm no... do you want me to tell you why ?

Sera: YES!

(Y/N): Do you mind if i smoke ?

She was looking at me with a shocked expression... wait why am i even asking this girl clearly wanted something from me and since its Seraphin then i for sure has to do something with the girls

(Y/N): Well i figured it out today actually... and i have Garen to thank for that

Sera: How does he have anything to do with this!

(Y/N): Your age

Sera: What

(Y/N): No 19 year old girl listens to that type of music and acts the way you do

Yea that was the big tell. Her age.... I maybe an idiot when it comes to women but even i notice stuff like that

Sera: And just from that !

(Y/N): Ah no it actually just made me start thinking... and truthfully you were perfect, to perfect

Sera: You.....

(Y/N): Then i started thinking... from the first day we meet how it was in the Dirty Mug and i remembered how you broke the glass when i mentioned Ahri. Plus lets be honest a girl like you would never just suddenly start talking to a guy like me

She was just looking at me quietly without saying anything... shit i need to make her talk... i stile have no idea how i am going to get out of here... that look is crazy

(Y/N): The next hint... was Mundo.... that was not him was it ?

Sera: How did you figure it out..... Neko is the best possible mercenary money can buy when it comes to those types of jobs (Y/N): Simple ... Mundo has a mastery

Sera: THAT MAKES NO SENSE!!!!!!

... yea it doesn't ... and that's the point.... Mundo always disappears... and the Mundo on that day actually just walked away.... oh god what kind of a crazy life to i lead when a person walking away from me instead of disappearing is strange !

(Y/N): Then came today with your suggestion of us singing... i find it strange how did you know how i sing ? I never sang alone in the bar and you were never there

Sera: I... i.....

(Y/N): Then of course the age... i mean common seriously lets be honest... you expect me that a 19 year old girl who dresses in pink and has rainbows and unicorns as stickers on her phone listens to Led Zeppelin every morning while she showers... Bitch please!

She was just opening her mouth... trying to say something but it was clear the words were not coming...

(Y/N): Then you suddenly come and tell me to come to your place for some fun.... i mean darn it woman look at me

Yea common i am the pure definition of a short average..... fuck my life if i ever have another brother he better not be taller then me ! FML

Sera: Then why did you come here ! Why did you come to my place if you knew this was a trap and a setup....

(Y/N): Simple..... i wanted to know who was your target

Sera: What ?

(Y/N): *sigh* It was clear it was not me... i am nobody important there was that thing with Jhin of course but if you were a fanatic you would have done things differently.... and you finally revealed your face as Seraphine.... and then it made sense you want revenge on the girls

And then she just started laughing... a very very nasty laugh.... god thank you guys rule book

Sera: That's right! I wanted revenge ! I wanted to take you from them! To make you mine! To make them suffer hahahahhahahah (Y/N): Your disgusting

Sera: Huh ?

I was pissed now... i was scared for being with such a scary person... but i was pissed now

(Y/N): You can never! AND I MEAN NEVER! Replace those four. They are my world and they are my everything. Every day without them is like a darkness over my heart! No matter what you did or who you pretend to be. Being with those girls is my one and true desire!

.... Oh god... i really just said that... crap i am even getting a little red here. And then i looked around shit... this is bad we are on the 3rd floor... and i the door is probably locked .... and by the way she is looking at me i am sure i am fucked.... lets hope that idiot got my message... crap buy time buy time... and then i heard a maniacal laugh... that laugh is probably the reason the first rule was made

Sera: Hah haha ahahhahahha ahH AHHAHA HA HAH AH AHA HA HA HAH AH HA HA HA HAH HA HA HAH HA AH HAHA HA HAH A H AHAH HA HA HA HA HHA H AH

OH SHIT!

Sera: YOU ARE PERFECT! ITS NOT MY PREVIOUS ONE! NO YOU! YOU ARE SO PERFECT

OK,..... seriously what the fuck is it with you people and the perfect fetish!!!!!!!!!!!!

Sera: My previous love... no no... he was not worthy to be my love... that's why i took care of him!

(Y/N): T-t-t-took care of him ? What do you mean by that

Sera: He was not my true love i see now... i am so happy i killed him!

(Y/N): You killed him !!!

Sera: HAhahah ye yes i sliced and sliced and sliced until he stooped screaming !

..... Did i just piss her off... why do i keep pissing crazy people off i need to see a shrink

Sera: But you... you are the one! I was so wrong about you.... i don't want the girls anymore i want YOU!!!!

Oh god.... and why do i actually find this.... no come on no way.... i need a shrink. Then Sera just spread her legs in front of me as she was siting and i could see that she was...

Sera: Look how wet i am... *moans* ah i want you to take me ! I don't want revenge on those girls anymore i just want you to take me now AND MAKE ME SCREAM

..... Your making me want to scream and not the good scream the very very bad one!.... Fuck no choice anymore .... and here i was always saying how Gasai Yuno was hot.... no... its definitely not

(Y/N): Ummm can i say something

Sera: Yes my love ! Ask me anything i would do anything

(Y/N): Umm let me go ?

Sera: Not that

Worth a try

(Y/N): Bitchwanttogetkickedinthefacesaywhat

Sera: What ?

BAM

I was able to use my hands as support and i kicked with all my strength Seraphine in the face making her fall on her back.

(Y/N): AND BYE! WOPOPOPOPOPOPOPO

I started making full speed towards the door... but as soon as i grabbed the knob it didn't want to move it was locked.... and there was no key.... just once..... just once can thing go my way..... just once is it to much to ask...and then i heard Sera rise behind me..... this is probably gonna hurt

Sara: WAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA

(Y/N): SHIT!!!!!!!!! MY EARS !!!! GUAH

Suddenly Seraphine screamed and send a shock wave my way. It actually knocked me to the wall next to the door and i could swear my ears were bleeding

THUD

Then i felt her drop on top of me and put her hands around my throat... that look.... that look was the scariest thing i ever saw in my life

Sera: YES YES YES! PUNISH ME HIT ME MORE DO WHAT EVER YOU WANT TO ME !!!!!!

I she was chocking me in full strength making it very hard for me to breath. It was also not helping that she was grinding on my little friend and every time i tried to resist she would just scream and make my whole body shake

Sera: GET HARD! COME ON GET HARD FOR ME LET US HAVE FUN I WILL GIVE YOU A NIGHT YOU WILL NEVER FORGET

(Y/N): Already.... your.... kinda... doing that....

Sera: IF I CANT HAVE YOU NOBODY CAN!!!!!

Shit ... everything.. is going dark.....

SMASH

Garen: PILTOVER SPECIAL TASK FORCE YOU ARE UNDER ARREST!!!!

And then like a fucking hero coming at my rescue in the last moment Garen smashed through the door..... wait is that his sword from the Larp

Garen: SHIT ! GET OF HIM YOU CRAZY BITCH

Sera: *HIIIIIIIIIISSSSSSSSS* HE IS MINE!! WAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAa And then she screamed at him sending another shock-wave that knocked him back.... well there goes my hero. But before i could get depressed again 3 more people enter and shoot taser into her... only one hit.... perfect fucking storm troopers... and slash with sword first ask questions later FFS

Sera; WAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA!

And all three of them fly away.... can anybody do his job properly HERE! But Garen apparently got up and just charged into Sera in full sped and knocked her to the wall finally pushing her off me

Garen: Shit how can she still move after those things!

Sera actually started to get up and that look..... oh boy....

TaskForceOfficer: Switch to live fire !

The three guys started shooting at her as Garen pulled me away but Sera actually screamed again in a different way and a force field was made around her blocking everything

Sera: DO NOT INTERFERE!!! HE IS MINE!!! ALL MINE! Mine mine Mine MIne MINe MINE MINE MINE MINE MINE MINE

..... shit lets try this

(Y/N): Sera my love

And just like i thought she just suddenly turned her head towards me with a sweet.... but very very very crazy smile

Sera: Yes my love!

(Y/N): Good night!

And that moment of distraction was just what Garen needed. He took the flat part of his blade and bashed her on the top of her head with a jump.... OK that was cool

Garen: Holy shit..... *huf huf*.... this girl was.....

(Y/N): Yea man... yea .....

TIMESKIP

I was siting in front of the building in the ambulance. The paramedic was just finishing with applying ointment around my neck.... shit that's going to leave a mark for a few days

Garen: Hey bro..... you OK ?

Garen then helped me get out of the ambulance since i was still feeling disoriented... not only did she knock me around with that wave she almost chocked me as well....

(Y/N): Just dandy.... fuck man that was fucked up.... even more then Jhin

Garen: Yea.... fucking hell you have no idea how lucky you were my girl actually left me... Or i would have never answered that phone call

(Y/N): Brother... i have been lucky ever since i found out your girl was 20... but how did you find me in the end ?

Garen: Oh we just used our secret satellite program for tracking..... um never mind forget what you heard

Fuck.... definitely that sounds on the level of " I have to kill you now for knowing that"

And then they brought her out... restrained in orichalcum collar and a straitjacket from the mental asylum. Garen was just looking at her and he started to speak

Garen:As soon as you started speaking i understood something was going wrong... so i just called patrols that were close and we made our way... considering she tried to rape you and murder you not to mention she admitted to murdering her previous boyfriend i don't think you will ever have to see her again...

Good thing i called Garen as soon as i kicked her of me... and thank good he is in the Special Forces...

Garen: You sure you don't want to join us... this is like the second crime that gets solved because of you. You can be in logistics department

Yea..... hell no... i know how much they work and i don't want to spend 14h a day with only 2 days per year free.... And then Sera saw me and started squirming making more guys run to restrain her

Sera: MY LOVE!!! DON'T WORRY !!! I WILL GET OUT AND WE WILL BE TOGETHER AGAIN AHAHAHHAHAHAHHAHAHAHAHAHAHHAHAHAHAHAHAHAH WAHWHAHAHAHAHHAHAHAh (Y/N): .... 27 years of nothing and now i am surrounded by not 4 but 5 crazy girls on all sides

Garen: But man.... you got to admit..... she is kinda cute

(Y/N): BRO SERIOUSLY! NEVER STICK YOUR DICK IN CRAZY !!!!

Garen: Don't give me that look... your telling me you didn't even think about it once ?

(Y/N):..... i need to see a shrink.....

Garen: We both do

Sera: haha h HAHA HAHAHHAH AHA HA HAHAhahahahA HAH AHHA H HAHAH AHAHAHAHHAHAHAHAHAHAH

Camille POV:

Sight.... this is ridiculous... so much shit happened just as a new year started... and again it was mister (L/N)... i will need to

VI: wait mam you cant she is... you are GUAAAAh

And suddenly Vi came flying through the door crashing on my desk.

Camille: Who dares.....

And then she walked in... the current commander and leader of the Special Task Force the 'Radiant Dawn' Leona... the greatest hero in Piltover

Camille: MAM! To what do i owe this pleasure MAM!

She was just standing there looking upon me and then at Vi

Leona: You have allot of explaining to do Chief Officer Camille

Camille: Excuse me MAM!

And then she snapped her finger and another member entered... that was Officer Garen who was involved in the last nights incident. He walked up to me and threw a file on my table..... SHIT!

Leona: This file was found last night in Seraphines apartment.... do you want to tell me why was that file there

Camille: MAM!... i

Leona: SPEAK UP OFFICER OR I WILL HAVE YOU DEMOTED TO TRAFFIC PATROL!

Camille:.... We were using Mister (Y/N) as a way to take down the KD/A group... by providing Seraphine with enough material we hope we would provoke the KD/A group into a open confrontation there for finally being able to lock them up... It is my opinion that they are to dangerous to be left alone MAM.... you as well as i know thy used to be...

Leona: Enough! Who was the officer who provided this document

Camille: That would be officer Vi who is currently on the floor

Leona: She is to be punished and she will take full responsibility

Camille: Y-y-yes MAM!

And then she turned.... but in a second i was knocked up to the wall and was doing everything i can to breath... it was incredibly hard because Leona was crushing my windpipe

Leona: Lets get something straight Chief Officer Camille! The KD/A group is currently to be left alone ! IS that understood

Camille: MAM..... they... why they are.... to dangerous....

Leona: Its very simple ! They make my little pterodactyl happy!

Camille: W-h.....what

She let me throat go... but as i was falling suddenly her knee was in my gut making me barf my whole breakfast out

Leona: And the next time you use my nephew like that.... i will make sure you don't ever see the light off day again...

..... i hate my job

(Y/N) POV:

DING

The elevator door opened and i walked into the apartment...

(Y/N): Fuck... last night was crazy i just want to take a shower and sleep forever....

But then suddenly something grabbed me from behind. I already wanted to scream in fear but i heard a voice

Ahri: I missed you much ! WE all did !

Huh? And then i turned and saw Ahri letting me go... which made all the other girls charge into me in a orderly fashion....

After about 10 min of hugging me and kissing me we finally we all just sat in the living room... i didn't want to give time for awkward silence so i just started and just as i was about to say something

Ahri: WE ARE SORRY!

All of the girls were looking at me with sadness... those looks were begging for forgiveness

Kai'Sa: We over reacted.... after we finally calmed down and talked about it

Akali: We figured that you just phrased it wrong ....

Evellyn: So do you forgive us...

... fuck... these girls... are amazing.... i guess.... i can try... fuck it i don't care fuck what is right and what is wrong i want to chase my happiness for once

(Y/N): Only if you promise me something!

Ahri: Anything!

(Y/N): Never again will you put your careers in danger because of me! I don't ever want you to lose your dream And then they all smiled... god i missed them... i missed those smiles so much... and then i notice Kai'Sa staring at my neck.... oh shit

Kai'Sa: (Y/N)... why does your neck look so brui...

DING

Garen: Hey bro!

OH NO!

Garen: You forgot the medicine and ointment in the car! You know what the doctor said she almost killed you by chocking you, you need to..... oh hello

.....3.....2.....1

AAEK: WHAT THE HELL HAPPENED AGAIN!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

TIMESKIP

(Y/N): Sight and that's it... that's when i came back inside to the apartment and ran into you girls...

They were just looking at me with shocked expressions... but that shock turned into rage

Ahri: I will MURDER HER!!!!!!!!!

Akali: WHICH ASYLUM DID THEY TAKE HERE

Kai'Sa: CALL THE POLICE WE WILL MAKE THEM TELL US

Evellyn:... NO MERCY!!!! FOR HER OR HER FAMILY!

HOLY SHIT SCARY!!!!! AND EVEN KAI'SA IS READY FOR A BLOODBATH... They were all making their way to the elevator until i was finally able to just stop them

(Y/N): PLEASE! Just don't...

Ahri: But but she hurt you! She tried to take you away from us!!!!

Kia'Sa: Then she tried to rape you!!!!!!!! I will not someone like her live!

(Y/N): Girls please just let it go

Akali: YOU ARE FORGIVING HER!

(Y/N): No of course not! I would like nothing more then for her to die

Evellyn: Then don't worry darling i will make your wish come true

... holy shit she is serious

(Y/N): But for now just let it go... she cant hurt as anymore she is gone

Garen: Y-y-y-yea i heard they want to banish her to the void .... but its going to take time to arrange the trial and paperwork

Garen is hiding in the corner now behind the couch... he was kinda the first target until i started explaining everything.... holy shit even Special Task Force commandos are scared shit less of my girls.

Ahri: *grrrr* fine... oh my poor (Y/N) she hurt you so much !

Then Kai'Sa just rushed and hugged me not letting me go

Kai'Sa: I am so sorry... i cant believe she was like that

Garen: *ahem* Come on girls its not that bad... i mean you should see the video he handled himself pretty good

Akali: Video?!

Mothrfucker who cant keep his mouth shut... i will make you fight a Hydra and Manticor while you are raped by wild Kobolds!

Garen: Ummm yea..... i have it here

Make that wild hell-hounds with flaming dicks! Yea there was no helping it now already they were taking it from him and going to the TV... but Evellyn just looked at me and said

Evellyn: You know.... a cage doesn't sound so bad suddenly....

Akali: True at least he will be safe then when we are not here...

Ahri: True true... (Y/N) you are not allowed to go outside without us anymore!!!!!!!

Seriously.... again this ?

.....FML!!!!!!!

And thats it for this arc and lets say season 1! Next one will be a side character bio and a little word from me on my future plans hope you enjoyed it and remember people don't stick you dick in crazy

Plans for the future and character bio

OK... finally a relaxing publish... fuck man i am tired XD But mostly because of the larp one.... now for my future plans.... i have no idea what i am doing.

Seriously i already mentioned it a few times but 20% is planned 80% comes on the spot. Then i write something i check it up changing about 50% and then i check and again i change something.... what can i say my mind goes crazy.

That's why i said a to a few guys who were offering me suggestions that there is no point because i just at one moment think of something else entirely... i mean Seraphins chapter was supposed to be ended with a grenade launcher.... don't ask il use it latter down the story or maybe a bazooka.... hmmmm... crap see what i mean

I have to say the Larp arc was extremely hard... and took all my energy to write it up. I think i changed it about 20 times until now! My original plan was just a simple chapter... then it became a triple chapter... then i wanted for it to never happen... then for the girls to participate then not participate.... then i wanted for Sera to attack then... in the end i just went crazy and was writing stuff letting my mind go crazy and i was massively satisfied. So hope you guys liked it

And again for the future plans... meh well see il think something up XD That's how this goes it all comes to imagination and enjoyment. And for the last time no (Y/N) WONT GET ANY POWERS!

And for those who love Seraphine and wanted her into the harem.... i am tempted... we will see

Now lets go to our side characters !

Lets first start with our new Yandera Seraphine the lady with the plan. I know some people find her hot... but man don't stick your dick in crazy..... i think i need a shrink myself since i was getting kinda... no!

Then we have our doctor Shen

Then the man who makes screaming awesome DRAAAAAAAVEN

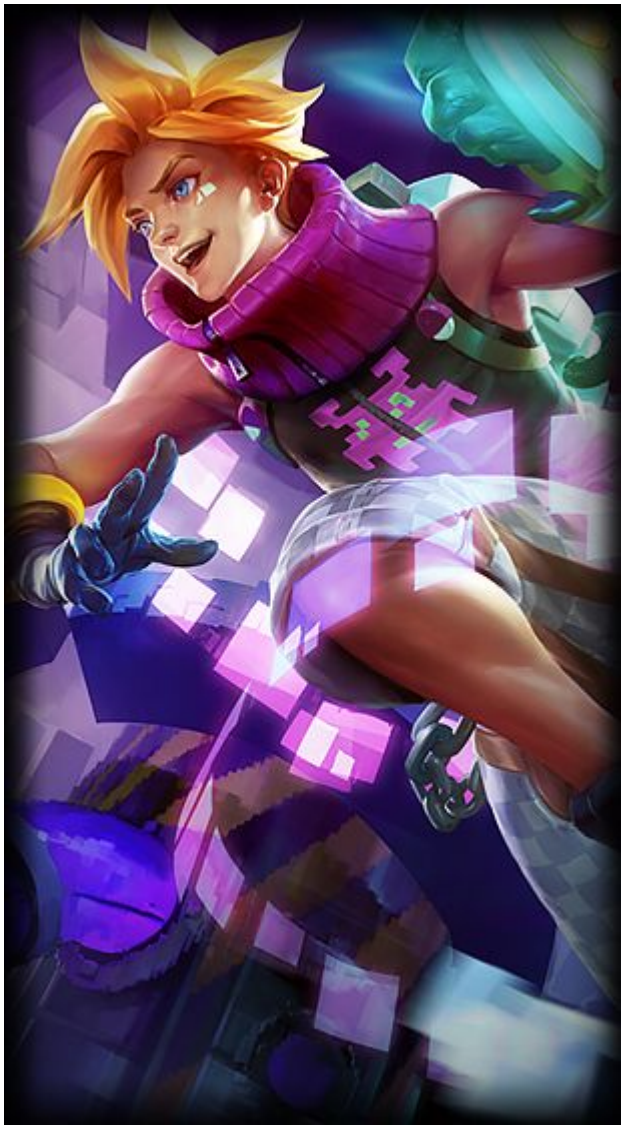
And the two larpers of team Red

Brand

And Xerath

Next the man who never leaves his sword behind and also needs a shrink Garen

And lets not forget our future punching bag Ezreal



And now the two lovely sister.. ahem excuse me STEP-Sisters

Kata the bad girl who we know is wrong but we cant resist

And remember she is still 15 so down boys (yea i know i know... that doesn't look 15 at all but man makeup is magic today) give it up for

Casi

Oh almost forgot actually my all time favorite and another badass to this story our over loving need some personal space aunt Leona

ANd that should be all.... i think.... did i forget someone?..... nah

OK people off to the next chapters ! See ya soon

CHAPTER 43 (We Know What The Cowboy Hat Was For)

Hello and welcome back ! When u turned on my PC about half of hour a PM was waiting for me from a reader asking if i am done since there is no the usual release at noon..... Anyway sorry i was on a job interview (didn't go so well) so i was busy! I also wanted to do the Intro to a new fan fiction i am going to write in the world of *Claymore* so that also took some time . I am planing to use a similar type of MC so maybe somebody will find it interesting. Only this (Y/N) will have MMMMMMMMMMAGIC but with tall sexy ladies around!

Oh and some people have been asking me and some even new readers sent me a message or posted a comment that they don't like the Height.... so lets get something i will NOT change it and i refuse i like tall sexy ladies with abs so fuck it. And for those who find the numbers for height to short or tall ignore them. The point is they are taller simple as that there is a reason i don't mention the height difference to much because i want to leave it more to your imagination.

Now enough rambling lets start Season 2 with some horsepower.

(Y/N) POV:

Ryze: So in the end if i ask you to explain it in one word it will be

(Y/N):... Arousal

Ryze:... *stare*

(Y/N): I thought this was a non judgment safe zone ?

Ryze:It is..... But she was trying to kill you

(Y/N): Yea... you see why i am here now

Ryze:... you know about the Guy rule book #1 rule ?

(Y/N):..... Remind me again why am i paying 200$ a hour for this

Ryze: Because you got horny when you were not supposed to

TIMESKIP

sight I just lighted my cigarette after leaving the shrinks office..... i think i am going to have to get a new one..... this one is to judgy. This session with him just made me feel dirty... not to mention these 4 walking mountains in-front of me were not helping with my mood.

BodyGuard1: Sir please don't look at us like that...

(Y/N): You know you could just go away and get money for doing nothing i wouldn't really mind and nobody has to know...

BodyGuard2: Sir, with all due respect.... I would rather shoot my self in the dick then piss off Lady Evellyn

BodyGuard3: There is no money enough in the world that would make us risk that Bodyguard4: So please cooperate. We have permission to restrain you if you don't

... *sigh* i cant believe this shit is happening again..... we are going to need to have the talk again

Its been 5 weeks since the episode with Sera happened... and it has not been easy... after the girls watched the video it got even worse. They saw what was going on and they saw how she almost raped me... crap Evellyn actually destroyed the TV when Sera jumped on me and started grinding while choking me...

Ahri even threw a dangerous comment how only she is allowed to do that....he he he NO (Y/N)..... And now again i am not allowed to leave the penthouse by myself... Well at least the girls will be back tomorrow!!!

These past few weeks i maybe saw them 3 times and the last time was like 17 days ago

And i am happy that they are willing to listen and not mess around with their works because of me.It was a little touche and grab but in the end the deal was made.Now.... if i could deal with this problem again it would be awesome

Bodyguard1: Where are we going sir?

(Y/N): I want to go to Panths Bakery

Bodyguard1: Understood

And then he took his radio.... fuck

Bodyguard: The princess is on the move! Form up

.....FML

TIMESKIP

(Y/N): Hey Panth i am...

Pantheon: AND SO MARRY ME!!!!

Girl: KYAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA

SLAP

And the girl just ran for the hills... leaving Panth on the floor.... how come every time i come i find him in the same spot...

(Y/N): Another one ?

Panth: Huh ? Ohhh (Y/N) hello there what can i do for you

(Y/N): Just the usual please oh but make it 5 pieces... i need to bribe those guys outside

He just go up and started laughing as he went behind the counter

Panth: So when are you going to tell me why are you constantly protected by bodyguards these past few weeks

(Y/N):..... Lets just say its not my fault

Panth: I kinda don't believe that.... you heard ?

(Y/N): You mean about Demacia and Noxus... nothing new man

Panth: Well apparently this time is extremely bad....

(Y/N): It's always bad man.... you know those two always starting the same shit

Panth: *sigh* yea.... anyway enjoy your day

(Y/N): Thank you

As i left the shop my bodyguards were already in formation keeping everybody out

Bodyguard: Sir ?

(Y/N): Lets just go home

Bodyguard:*nod* The princess is going back to the castle ! Secure the perimeter!!!!

..... FML

TIMESKIP

TV: *And that's all for the weather. And no off to sports! Apparently the famous soccer-player Lucian who has been missing has been finally located. He was found with his genitals...*

click

(Y/N): Yea....better if i don't know

Well nothing good on the TV like usual. I looked all over the apartment and i can say it was spotless. I made extra sure to clean it up and the fridge is completely filled up.... its all ready for tomorrow.

(Y/N): Sill to think their tour got cancelled like that 4 weeks earlier.. LUCKY!... well not really for Noxus and Demacia. Since Demacia got a new ruler it was time for their on going tradition of war... Every time Demacia gets a new ruler or Noxus a new senate they start fighting..... *sigh*

I wonder how long it will last this time... last time it was 4 years ago and it laster for about 8 months... the worst part is they always hold the after war peace talks here since PiltOver is neutral ground. And those few days its chaos in the city I still remember the last time... you couldnt move 20m without somebody stoping you and asking for your ID

RING RING RING

(Y/N): Yes

Kai'Sa: *Hey! Where are you now*

(Y/N): .... you know where i am thanks to those bodyguards

Kai'Sa: *Well its for your own good! Every time we leave something happens to you*

(Y/N):... *sigh* yea yea. So you guys all ready ? Coming back tomorrow right!?

Kai'Sa: *The girls are... i had different plans actually*

oh..... i really wanted to see her....

Kai'Sa: *I am kinda very happy now since the face you making is for me*

(Y/N): Huh!

And then something went over my eyes from the back blocking all my vision

Kai'Sa: Surprise!

When i turned around i saw a happy smiling Kai'Sa

Kai'Sa: Happy to see me ?

(Y/N): You have no idea how much!

But as i looked around for the rest of the girls i noticed nobody else was here. Kai'Sa probably figured out what i was thinking since she just blushed a little and made a naughty smile

Kai'Sa: I kinda ran away and left all the final work to the girls

(Y/N):.... Wow arent you a naughty girl!

Kai'Sa: Hihihihi *gigling* i just couldnt wait untill tomorow

(Y/N): Well i am not complaning thats for sure!

Yea definetly this was so much better! I was not in a mode to do anyhthing else today since i knew they were coming so this just makes it perfect

Kai'Sa: Oh and here! I have present for you

As we sat on the couch Kai'Sa pulled out two big bags that were on the side and presented them to me

(Y/N): Ohhhh what is this!!!

Kai'Sa: Just open it

..... The first one the bigger one when i opened it had a hat... wait is this

(Y/N): Ummm... is this a cowboy hat ? I would kinda look ridiculus in it... but dont get me wrong i still love it

Kai'Sa: Ah dont worry just open the other one! It comes together with this one

So i followed the instructions.... and what...

(Y/N): Kai'Sa.... this looks like....

Kai'sa: Mhm!

(Y/N): So.... on what am i suposed to do with them

Kai'Sa: Those are for me *blush*

.....loading..... procesing information..... complete

"YOU RAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAANG"

Ahri POV:

DING

Ahri: And thanks again for letting us skip! We appreciate it !... mhm.... yea! Thank you

Evellyn: So all is good ?

Ahri: Yea its been taken care off

Akali: Ha! Who would have thought that the good girl Kai'Sa would ditch us

We were now in the elevator going up to the penthouse. Our original plan was to come back tomorrow but this morning when we woke up we found a

note in our hotel saying "*Il go on ahead"* So we all just agreed to leave as well. Luckily i was able to make some calls and the rest of the paperwork has been done by Mundo

Ahri: So what did you girls get him ?

Akali: Oh that! I actually called Yasuo and he gave me instructions on some headphones for his PC you know how he likes to play games on it

Evellyn: Just a simple leather jacket. That old one of his has seen better days.

Akali: What about you ?

Ahri: Hahaha nothing special really just a small gift

I actually found a very nice store that had some lingerie that i believe he would like very much...ohh when i get my hands on him tonight hehehe

Evellyn: Dear... you are dolling

Akali: By the way did Kai'Sa really buy him a cowboy hat ? Whats up with that

DING

Ahri: Ahhh back home finally !!!

thud thud thud smack smack

Akali: Hmm i don't see them anywhere ? And the lights are off its to early for bed Evellyn: Do you hear that ?

Ahri: Sounds like its coming from the kitchen

As we made our way to the kitchen the sound got louder and louder *thud thud smack THUD THUD SMACK SMACK SMACK*

As we opened the door and entered.... we just kinda stood there in shock

Evellyn: Well.... we know what the cowboy hat was for.....

Akali: Wow... is that.... are those horse reins in her mouth

There they were in the middle of the kitchen on the dining table.... (Y/N) with a cowboy hat was standing behind Kai'Sa moving his hips while using one of his hands to hold the reins that were in her mouth and others to smack her ass

(Y/N): WOOOOOAH Horsie!!! Calm down! *SMACK* make sure your thick ass keeps to the rhythm *SMACK* don't want me to fall off *SMACK*

Akali: NEEEEIIIGGHHHHH!

.....

.....

(Y/N): Huh ?

The first one to notice was (Y/N) and then he just froze completely.... Kai'Sa still kept moving without stopping for about 15 seconds until she turned her head and tried to speak

Kai'Sa: Wghy yhou sthop mghobin, shmack hmy tghy asgh hagrehd... HGUH ?(*Why you stop moving, spank my thick ass harder.... HUH?)*

And then she noticed us and stooped as well... both of them were looking at us with frozen expressions

Evellyn:.... *whisper* It's always the quiet ones....

Akali:*whisper* I know right.... and what the hell happened to those cherries over there ?!!!

I could feel my left eye twitching and my power surfacing

Ahri: How....how.....how many time do i have to tell you guys..... NOT TO DO IT IN THE KITCHEN WHERE WE EAT!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

Akali: I actually want to try that *grin*

Evellyn: Me to... but i will be the one in the cowboy hat *licks lips*

Kai'Sa: (Y/N) Digh yogu jhuy ghwtyich (*(Y/N) did your cock just get harder?*)

Ahri: STOP STANDING THERE AND MOVE IT TO THE BEDROOM!!!!!!!

.

CHAPTER 44(You Are Not Alone Anymore)

I actually re read one of my old chapters.... and man do i see mistakes... i think i will re edit them soon.

Ryze (POV)

Ryze: So let me get this straight, you used those pigeons in that way for the Larp and you think its good ?

(Y/N): I do, and i am tired of pretending It's not

Ryze:..... i think we need to increase our sessions to 2 times per week

(Y/N) POV:

Ekko: *NO! NO! NO! THAT IDIOT!!!!!*

Yasuo: *Shit to the left ! GET THE TEMPLAR ON THE LEFT!!!!!!!!*

(Y/N): *LEAVE THE STUPID TEMPLAR AND FOCUS ON THE CLERIC!!!!!!*

Ekko&Yasuo&(Y/N): NOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO..... we lost

Ekko: *What do you mean GG you stupid NOOB!!!!! GO PLAY ON THE ELYOSE SIDE!!!*

Senna: *SHUT THE FUCK UP SOMEONE IS TRYING TO SLEEP!!!!!!!!!!!!!!*

And that's that.... You know when Ekko starts raging and Senna starts screaming for quiet its time to finish

(Y/N): Next time guys, we better stop or Senna is going to kill you

Yasuo: *Yea this is over *sigh* so same time next Abyss battle?*

(Y/N): Yea!

Ekko: *Oh before you go! Qiyana said hi *smirk**

Yasuo: *Oh wow look at the blush!*

And done... i just ended the Skype call! i didn't have any intention of satisfying their teasing of me... Hmm already 9pm o clock which means its 4am for them no wonder Senna was so pissed.

I picked up my PC and started to make my way to the living room from the balcony. I would have played inside but the girls have been home for 3 days already and i cant smoke indoors anymore.... and you cant PvP without smoking its just not possible

As i made my way inside i noticed all the girls were in the living room and Mundo was here

Mundo: Oh (Y/N) Good evening ! Mundo happy to see you

(Y/N): Hello there Mundo is everything fine ?

It was clear everything was not fine.... the atmosphere was cold and the girls were burning with rage... its just one of those moments that all will explode at a moments notice

Evellyn: This does not concern you darling

Ahri: Yea! So you can leave now

..... Oh wow.... OK..... now i have to know...

(Y/N): Are you sure ? I can help maybe

Kai'Sa: NO YOU CAN NOT!!!!!!

OK. Now Kai'Sa is screaming in rage and Akali is playing with her blades.... which can mean only one thing

(Y/N): Is this about Seraphine ?

CRASH And Evellyn just broke the coffee table..... i liked that coffee table... at least its not the TV like last time... *sight*

(Y/N): If it's about Seraphine i believe i have the right to know Ahri: Don't worry about it! We will take care of everything

(Y/N): That's not the point Ahri if its something directly tied to me i have the right to know or do we need to have another talk like the one yesterday

Yesterday morning breakfast i started talking to the girls about my bodyguards. At first they didn't want to hear anything about it and that they are done with leaving me alone... so i decided to do the only possible thing i could do.... i started pouting and ignoring them...

At first they were laughing but by the end of the day thy all broke First was actually Evellyn who i thought will be the hardest. At one moment she just entered my room apparently coming to play with me to help me remove the pout.... so i just said "*OK, do what you want*" which kinda shocked her since i just laid on my bed and spread my arms in defeat.... after about 2 min of her staring she just gave up and said fine.... i did hear something dangerous like *It's no fun if you don't resist*..... this is not rape is it ?

Next was Akali. She was actually the hardest one. At first she was fine and didn't care. And i was afraid i would not brake. So i had to pull out the secret weapon i was saving for a special occasion "*Even if something happens you are my hero and you will save me*" which made her go completely red and she agreed while muttering softly "*I am his hero*"..... i felt a little bad after that... it was clear she was so happy and i used it to get what i want

Then came Kai'Sa... sweet sweet Kai'Sa. No matter how much she wanted to resist no matter how much she wanted to keep me safe... a few fake tears

and puppy dog eyes and done.... i know i am kinda using their weaknesses against them but i need to get some advantage for a even fight.....

Ahri was the easiest in the end. I just ignored her for the whole day not talking to her or paying attention when ever she tried to do something to me. When we went to bed she came to my room wanting to cuddle i just got up and went to the living room. When she came to the living room i went back to my bed. In the end she was begging me to forgive her... out of all of them she is the most needy and possessive so that was the best strategy

So the girls knew that i can fight back now... god just a few months ago i was at their complete mercy it actually feels good to get a fighting chance... i just cant overuse it or even that wont work anymore.... Evellyn already promised me that tonight she is going to get her fun.... YAY

Akali: *sigh*... its not really directly to you...

Evellyn: But Mundo is trying to make it about you *groowl*

Wow... she is mad... and got to say WP to Mundo he is actually standing his ground and just drinking his coffee like its nothing *clank clank clank clank*.... nah his hand is shaking on stop he is scared... but make it about me ?.... i kinda don't want that! The last thing i need is Seraphin in my life again. I guess at one point i was actually holding my throat because Kai'Sa sudenly got up and pulled me into a hug

Kai'Sa: We wont let it!!!

Mundo: Girls.... Mundo thinks this is the best way....

Akali:No Mundo!

Mundo: (Y/N) do you care about the girls and their dreams!

Ahri:MUNDO I TOLD YOU NO!!!!!

Mundo: Then go seduce Seraphine

..... HUH!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!????

Evellyn: I WILL MURDER YOU!!!!!!!!!!!!! .... where is he ! Where did he go!!!!!

Akali: I don't know !!! I just blinked and he was gone

Kai'Sa; FIND HIM!!!!!!

.....The girls started running around the apartment looking for him.But what did he mean by that.... shit i really don't want to do this....but what did he mean by their dream..... guess il call Mundo tomorrow

Ahri: Maybe he is hiding in something!

Akali: You check the bathroom il check the couch

RIP

... NOT THE COUCH DON'T RIP THE COUCH!!!!!!.... oh god.... i liked that couch.....

TIMESKIP

Mundo: Thank you for coming ... (Y/N).... ummm the girls don't know right.....

(Y/N): NO its fine, they think i went to meet up with Garen so its good

You could se he just made a sight of relief. I have no intention of ever getting close to Seraphine again... but those words bugged me so much... So after we all went to sleep i called him and we made a deal to meet up Mundo: Anyway (Y/N) Mundo thanks you for coming...

(Y/N): Yea... listen Mundo i really don't want anything to do with Seraphine.... but if its for the girls....

Mundo: *nods* you are good person (Y/N) and Mundo is happy girls have you.... but this is now work so Mundo has to ask of this.

You could see he really felt bad about this... i heard all managers are usual just thinking about money. But i remember when talking to Yasuo how he said Mundo is the best because he takes care of his workers and their fore they all want to work under him. That's why all the great groups like KD/A, True Damage, Pentakill and so on are under Mundo's control

Mundo: Do you remember their 2nd greatest hit MORE ?

(Y/N): Hmmm.... ah yea i remember it was good but compared to Pop stars and Baddest it was meh for me.... its also the song withe Seraphine right?

Mundo: Good this makes Mundo's job easier. You see when Sera joined Ahri wanted to make her feel welcome and special... Sera was still kinda on guard so she thought this would make her feel more at ease. So even though Mundo was begging her not to do it she gave 60% of the right's to the song instead of distributing it the correct way

(Y/N): Oh boy.... i can see where this is going

Mundo: Since Mundo usual deals with bands and groups his contracts serve that if the majority of rights holders decide something that vote will count

(Y/N): Hmmm.... kinda makes sense actually... if in a group of four one person doesn't want something but three of them want it then it will follow the group

Mundo: Exactly

(Y/N): What about if its a tie

Mundo: Then Mundo is a tie beaker.... do you see where Mundo is going with this...

(Y/N): *sigh*... Ahri fucked up... its always the best intentions that bring the worst outcome

Mundo: Wise words (Y/N), Mundo is happy that you understand

(Y/N): So.... Sera is making trouble?

And then he just sighted... and for the first time he looked very old and tired to me

Mundo: Mundo has no idea what to do anymore.... Since she is imprisoned the rights go to her next of kin.... and they are refusing it to be sold and are even throwing threats about a lawsuit if we don't ban it from our network.... they don't want their daughter to be on the TV like that... already she brought attention and this is apparently a insult for them and their up and standing family... Mundo still has a big headache after talking with them

....He was just now looking at the ceiling in defeat... Yea it was a major scandal with Sera... al the TV shows were calling her Crazy, Mentally unstable and a monster.... they found her ex boyfriend.... it was not a pretty picture. Not to mention her parents were constantly under watch from the paparazzi and some crazy fans who loved her even started stalking their parents blaming them for her behavior... and i remember that actual interview with her fathr who just said without emotion " She was always a problem don't blame us"

Mundo: There is also the problem if she talks.... about her past with the KD/A

(Y/N):... Couldn't you guys just make up a lie or something ? Playing on the crazy card ?

Mundo: We could... but Mundo is sure it would not work... rumors will start and Mundo is sure the KD/A image will take a huge hit..

....sonofabitch

(Y/N): So when you said i should go seduce her....

Mundo: Mundo payed her a visit..... her whole room is full of pictures of you and your name is scratched all over the walls.... there is also apparently a doll made out of your hair....

HOLY SHIT THAT IS SCARY!!!!!!!! AND HOW THE HELL DID SHE GET MY HAIR!!!!!!

(A/n: You don't want to know)

Mundo: So Mundo believes if you go talk to her.... you can convince her to make her parents give us the rights to the song and maybe keep quiet about the past

(Y/N): So let me get this straight.... you want me to go to the crazy Yandera chick who is scratching my name all over her room and probably masturbating to a doll made out of my hair ?....

Mundo: Yes... Mundo is sorry this is the only way

(Y/N): *Sigh*..... what can go wrong right

TIMESKIP

SecurityGuard: Please remove all sharp and metal objects, also your shoe lace please.

.... this is such a bad idea... this is beyond bad idea.... fuck..... i better get a reward from the girls later.

I was now entering the mental ward in the Piltover prison.... i really didn't want to be here and every fiber of my body was screaming not to come here... but there was no other choice... lets do this fast before the girls start wondering why i am gone so long. At least Mundo agreed to wait for me outside until i finish MentalWorker: Ah so your the one ? OK follow me

A huge guy that can rival Braum in size dressed in all white came to pick me up. As he looked upon me and was just about to take me to Seraphine but he frowned after looking at my neck

MentalWorker: Please wait! They didn't put a orichallcum collar on you. We cant let you inside yet

(Y/N): Ummm..... there is no need i am a powerless

MentalWorker: What! Your a gray!... ah sorry

(Y/N): No its ok i understand people still get shocked

Yea when they wanted to put a collar i told them i am a Gray and after some research it was confirms so it was allowed without one. Orichallcum metal actually disrupts powers for some reason. So all prisoners have them around their necks... i even read a rumor that professional assassins use them as ammo just to make sure.

????: LOOK LOOK THE WALL IS TALKING

????: 1 dead sheep, 2 dead sheep, 3 dead children he he h

????: Hey man i am innocent i am innocent!!! It was that Yordle dressed as a boy scout who made me do it! IT WAS HIM!!! HE IS SATAN HIMSELF!!! WITH THAT LAUGH SAVE ME SAVE ME PLEASE!!!

Mental Patient all around me were screaming through the doors and yelling some fucked up stuff.... i can never imagine how it feels to work.... to live here.... fucking hell

MentalWorker: I know you got a pass and all... and i have no idea who's got your back for you to evade procedure like that but i would be careful

Apparently Mundo pulled some huge strings and i will get me alone time with Seraphine.... am i just really going to be in a locked room with that girl all alone.... shit this is a bad idea THIS IS SUCH A BAD IDEA.....

(Y/N): I know she is dangerous....

MentalWorker:.... man you have no idea.... listen you didn't hear this from me but.... one of our previous employees... liked to get intimate with some of the patients ..... Motherfucker....that's fucking sick..... people like that deserve to suffer. I am no saint... but even i would not do something like that. And you bastards are the same for ignoring that

MentalWorker: Well... you know that girls is pretty and all.... so he went to her room... after about 2min he ran out screaming with blood all over his

crotch...

(Y/N): Wait.... holy shit

MentalWorker: Yea she bit it clean off.... saying he was not her true love or some bullshit

OK...OK.....OK OK OK that's scary as fuck.... good for him he deserved it

MentalWorker: Here we are.... if at moment you get in danger press this button and we will rush in

He gave me a small device that looked like a key chain... and then he opened the door and i walked into that.....

Mundo POV:

Mundo: Mundo.... is not proud of himself now

Mundo was not proud of himself at all now.... but there is no other way. The girls have made to many problems last month when they started to tour... constant fighting with VIP's... insulting the talk show hosts... and just walking out the stage in mid show.

Now if they lose the rights to MORE the second selling song on the top list after Pop Stars they are finished... company will start pressing and they will lose their freedom.....

There is no telling if Seraphine's parents are even going to listen to their crazy daughter and all of this might be for nothing.... but this is our only chance

(Y/N)POV

Wow.... can i go home now!

This room was fucked up.. It was a small square room 4mx4m with no windows and a toilet in the corner... the walls were impossible to see because they were filled with pictures of me... most of them are real but some of them is just my head attached to another one.... i wish i had a body like that

All over the floor my name was scratched in various forms and with hearts... and on the bed was what i presume the doll made of my hair... how the fuck did she get so much of my hair

Sera: Hmmmm mmmm mmm

There in the corner Sera was siting happily humming with her back turned towards me... it looked like she was scratching something on the floor..... don't tell me she has something sharp.. OK no i cant i don't want to

Sera: *Sniff sniff* ah this smell.... (Y/N) !!!!!!!

HOLY MOTHER OF MY DWARVEN BEARD! She just sniffed the air and knew who i was before she even looked at me THAT IS SCAR *guah*

Before i could even finish my panic attack she was hugging me

Sera: (Y/N)! You came to visit me !!! I am so happy!!

(Y/N): H-h-h-h-hello Sera

Sera: Huh? Don't be silly its me Sara

..... huh ! She then pulled back and looked at me... god why is she taller then me... why are all the women in my life taller then me!!! But that look... that look was not crazy it was clear and not at all like the one in her apartment... whats going on here

(Y/N): Ummm... what do you mean ? Your Sera right

Sera: NO no no silly! I am Sara *pout* its not funny don't be mean!

OK.... this makes no fucking sense anymore... what the fuck is going on... OK lets try this slowly

(Y/N): Ah.. sorry my bad ha-ha-ha

She then just made a bright smile and pulled me to the bed making me sit next to her Sara: Sooo how you been! Is everything good!

(Y/N): Ummmm yea -ha-ha-ha all is fine.... ummm how are you

Sara: Oh just peachy! The jello here is amazing i love it!!! And i have so much free time!.... but

Now she was looking sadly down to the floor

Sara: I miss the sun you know... but its OK ! I will be out some day and we can go for some Goblin Snots and listen to some AC/DC.... oh how about Pentakill i know they are your second favorite like me *smile*

....What the fuck..... there are no lies in her voice... no deceit... and that smile is not fake... what the hell is going on here.... fuck i cant risk it anymore! Lets just get her to talk to her family and run away (Y/N): Listen... i need a favor

Sara: OH! Anything what are friends for!!!

(Y/N): Ummmm i kinda.... need you to call.... your family and talk about... the rights to your MORE song....

She was just looking at me with a frown and spoke in a careful voice

Sara: What are you talking about ? I don't own MORE it belongs to Sera

..... NANNI???????????? What the fuck is going...wait can it be... i studied this in college... split personalities... but why ?

Sara:So i cant do anything with that only Sera can do it

(Y/N): Ummm can i talk to Sera

Sara: NO!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

Crap... the hell is going on here

(Y/N): Ummm why not Sara?

She was now just looking to the side towards the wall tears forming in her eyes

Sara: *whisper* You hate her..

(Y/N): Sorry?

Sara: You hate here... you don't want to see her... so that's why i am here! We can go for Goblin Snots and talk about games and our favorite series and everything!

..... Ah shit.... she made it because of me.... but.... god i will hate this.... but apparently i need Sera. Every fiber of my being is screaming not to say these next words... but i have to help the girls

(Y/N): I don't hate her....

Sara: Huh ?

(Y/N): I don't hate Seraphine.....

She was just looking down now...

Sara: You don't

That voice sounded different.... and it send chills down my spine

Sera: OH MY LOVEEEEEE!!!! I AM SO HAPPY YOU DON'T HATE ME!!!!!!!!!

And then when she lifted her head i saw those eyes... those eyes were screaming crazy but before i could react she jumped on top of me knocked

me down on the bed!! Shit the keychain its..... on the floor..... it must have fell out

Sera: Oh i am so happy so happy so happy ! You have no idea how happy i am now!!!!! You are my love and you don't hate me i am so happy!!

Shit shit shit !!!! THIS IS BAD THAT LOOK IS THE SAME LIKE THAT NIGHT!!!!! FUCK!!!!!!! OK lets try this

(Y/N): Can you let me go!

Sera: NO!

...Worth a try.... huh deja vu

Sera: If i let you go you will never come back!!! I don't want to be alone anymore!!

..... shit that look... is dangerous fine fine lets try this... if i say the correct words i should be able to get out

(Y/N): I promise i wont... so can you please let me go...

Sera: But... but

(Y/N): Sera... your hurting me my wrists are in pain

At those last words she actually released her grip on my hands. She was still siting on me but at least it was working. OK i need to push fast and get this over with (Y/N): Sera i need a favor!

Sera: Mmmm whats the favor?

(Y/N): I need you to call your family and talk them into selling the right of MORE

I will not tell her to sell to Mundo yet... i kinda want it to be given to the girls not him... i know he is a good guy... but this feels right

Sera: Hmm... is it for them? Those bitches

(Y/N): You will not call them bitches when i am here

Sera: BUT!

(Y/N): Or i will hate you

Sera: NO NO NO!!! Dont hate me i am sorry!!!

I cant believe this is working... fuck what the hell... i am paying with fire and this girl is well above her brain waves...

(Y/N): So will you do it... for me

Sera: *sigh* They will not sell. They want the publicity that would give it to them... they may act like they hate it but its good for my sister... she can play the abused little sister who was wronged by me the big one

(Y/N): What!? What do you mean ?

Sera: My family wanted me in politics but i refused. So they already practically disowned me when i became a singer... when i became popular they made contact again

Sera was now looking very upset... still a crazy look but a upset look.... and sad very sad... shit! NO NO NO SHE TRIED TO MURDER YOU!!!

(Y/N): I see.... so there is no other way....

Sera: Well i am only not allowed to the rights... but they are still technically mine ! So there is a way around it!

(Y/N): Really! How ?

Then she was just looking at me with those crazy eyes

Sera: Kiss me!

(Y/N): What ?

Sera: If you kiss me i will help you !!

..... Never stick your dick in crazy..... but this is ..... fuck..... and its a tongue so technically... and the girls need this

(Y/N): F-f-fine you ca.....

Before i could even finish the sentence her tongue slammed into mine going completely crazy! I thought Akali was the wild one when it comes to kissing buy this is just impossible. It was like she was savoring every part of my mouth like she was hungry for years and this was her food

After about 5min she finally pulled back leaving a saliva bridge between us. That crazy look was still there... it was even worse now... and then her hand went towards my pants Sera: Oh my love... how long have i waited for this

(Y/N): You said only a kiss!

Sera: But!

(Y/N): Sera!

.... she was now looking at me... her emotions were going from happy to rage then to sad... then back to happy and then again to sad.... in the end she just got off me and walked towards the key-chain.

Already i was thinking how i was fucked and that i can maybe overpower her without her powers but she just handed it over to me and said in a very sad tone

Sera: Call the guard and ask for a paper and pen

MUNDO POV:

RING RING RING

Oh finally Mundo was starting to have a panic attack... Mundo doesn't even want to think how he would explain all of this to the girls if something would to happen

Mundo: (Y/N)! This is Mundo are you well

(Y/N): Yea... its done

Mundo: So she will call her parents ?

(Y/N): Actually no.... she gave all the rights of the song MORE to me... and all her other songs and possessions belong to me as well

.....Mundo has to say....

Mundo: GGWP (Y/N)

(Y/N): Yea.... i have to go il see you in a few minutes

..... Mundo has no idea how he was able to do this.... but he is happy he wont get killed by the girls

(Y/N) POV:

It is done... i am standing on the exit to Sera's room holding a paper that states that Sera gives all rights to all of her songs. Not to mention all her worldly possessions and bank account belong to me as well... i should be happy but...

There she was siting on the bed with a sad look bordering on tears... she was just looking down not moving

MentalWorker: OK ready to go ? Lets leave the crazy bitch here

Yea.... she was crazy.... she was more then crazy.... she wanted to take away my happiness.... the happiness of the girls.... but.... she tried to kill me... she would kill the girls..... but... The way she talked the way she made a split personality.... those eyes.... they may be crazy.... but they are sad as well.....

Sera: You can go now (Y/N).... i am happy that i have meet you. Goodbye my love

She didn't even look at me when she said those words.... yea... i am a stupid idiotic motherfucking bastards who just keep playing with fucking fire and poking dragons.... but..... i know i am going to regret this... and i know its wrong.... but... the alternative is just plain cruel

(Y/N): *smooch*

Sera: HUH ?

(Y/N): I will try to visit at least once a weak.... so stay out of trouble... You are not alone anymore

After i kissed her on the cheek and said those words i left her room. Even though the worker closed the door i could hear her crying and wailing the same word over and over again

Sera: *Thank you... thank you... thank you.... i am not alone..... thank you.... thank you.... thank you*

(Y/N):*Sigh*.... the girls are going to kill me

MentalWorker: Man... your not right in the head you know that right ?

(Y/N): Yea.... lets just go

Now some people may hate me... some people may love it... and to tell you the truth even i don't know why i did it like this.... i wanted Seraphin just to be a simple one time villain... but i guess when i thought about her personality and how it got to it... i saw she had allot of potential for the future... plus she hot

CHAPTER 45 (But I Always Wanted A Little Sister)

Wow 7am..... fuck these bird and their singing ! For what the fuck are they happy so early in the morning

Ryze POV:

Ryze: *stare*

(Y/N): Can you stop staring at me like that

Ryze:.... how... i mean.... why ?

(Y/N): You see why i cant eat lemons anymore

Ryze:... Wow.....you two just.....i have no words

(Y/N): There was also that time with the pineapple that we used it in a similar way but...

Ryze: OK STOP! I have pineapple for lunch! I DON'T WANT TO KNOW.... i will never eat lemons again...

(Y/N):.... There was also this one time with cherries...

(Y/N) POV:

Mundo: So that's that..... other then those calls made to Mundo and a few threats i don't think we need to worry about them

(Y/N): Good..... i also got a call from the bank this morning apparently they tried to pick up the money and were making chaos there when they were denied

Mundo:*Sigh* Mundo is sure they did... they are complicated people but they will give up soon. They cant risk their reputation to much...

(Y/N): Shit her parents are fucked up....by the way. Where are you now ?

Mundo: Ohhhh Mundo is in a far far far place... at least some time until Mundo comes back... Mundo almost die two days ago.... so better if Mundo stay away from the girls. Well bye (Y/N) Mundo wishes you luck.... your going to need it

.... *sigh*.... When we came back two days ago from Sera...it just went to hell. At first the girls were happy when they heard MORE is safe.... that lasted about 10 seconds until they asked how.

Then Mundo told them i have full rights to the song and they all connected the dots..... it was not a pretty sight... they were so angry and Mundo was lucky.... extremely lucky... he better have ran away to space.

(Y/N): Wow its getting cold...

As i got back inside and was thinking of what to make for lunch tomorrow i was greeted by the sight of the four girls waiting for me.... great....here it comes

Ahri:(Y/N) we need to talk

Kai'Sa: Can you please join us

.... i knew this was coming.. lets just get this over with!

Evellyn: We are not mad darling

That statement kinda made me just raise my eyebrow.... aren't you the one who was checking the price of cages this morning !

Ahri: You have no idea how grateful we are for what you did

Akali: But you put your life in risk... again !

Kai'Sa: That's right.... so please don't do it again

... OK.... this went better then i expected... wow. Can my luck finally be at a turning point

Evellyn: At least this is over and you never have to see Seraphin again

.....Me and my big mouth

Akali: Why are you looking at us with such a frozen expression

(Y/N): Ha-ha-ha-ha.... i kinda....

Ahri: You kinda what *growling*

(Y/N): Promised to see her once a week... ha-ha-ha-ha And then there was silence... they were just looking at me.... wait holy shit is that a anger vein on Ahri's forehead

Evellyn: *growling* I am buying that cage

And then all hell broke lose of them screaming at me

TIMESKIP

Ahri POV:

Akali: Stupid idiotic moronic fool....

sight I cant blame her... what he did was so STUPID!... but he did it for us and that makes me happy. When Mundo and (Y/N) came a few days ago and told us that (Y/N) is in full control of MORE we figured right away that he went to Sera.

Kai'Sa: He really needs to stop putting himself in such danger.... i know he did all of that for us but....

But why does he have to visit her now once a week... that's the part that makes no sense... and even when we pushed him for answers he would just

say " I am not a monster..... i just cant leave her alone". They way he looked at us... and the sad face he was making just kinda broke us... i really don't know what happened...

Ahri: Lets just see how this goes..... clearly something happened to make him decide that.

Kai'Sa: *sigh* But why cant we with him... i know Sera would hate to see us but i don't want him alone...

Akali: Maybe i should just sneak into the prison... and make a accident happen..... huh ? Who is that

As we were making our way to the penthouse after shopping i noticed Akali looking at a young girl in front of the building. She was very much out of place with that huge backpack not to mention it was clear she was still in high school. It was a pink haired girl dressed in a white leather jacket and black jeans.

She was clearly nervous and was constantly looking towards the building then to the side of the road like she couldn't decide if she wants to go in or away.... Ah... don't tell me she is a fan and found us... this is bad we really don't need fans stalking us in front of our home...

She then looked our way and widened her eyes

????: You you you!!!! Your KD/A!!!

OK, OK lets just play this cool and maybe we can get her to leave without to much problems. Luckily Akali was thinking the same thing

Akali: Hey there sup!

????: H-h-hi! I am a huge fan especially of you Akali

Akali: Hahahah no worries no worries ! You want a autograph

????: YES PLEASE!!!!

She then started rummaging through the big backpack but she accidentally spilled it's contents

????: AH no my stuff!

It was clearly filled with clothes a few seconds ago... and now all those clothes were on the floor and to make it worse it all fell into a puddle that was formed from the melting snow.

????: AH! no..... what i am going to do now

The girl was looking at it so dejected... bordering on crying and rage... and there are so many candy bars and protean bars. I know them since we used those bars when ever we had to much work and no time for food... they taste extremely bad but at least thy are fulfilling.

I was kinda starting to have my suspicions but even before i could say anything Kai'Sa walked to her and started helping her with her scatter clothes

Kai'Sa: How about you come to our place ? We can wash your clothes and maybe grab something to eat ?

????: ... but... i wouldn't feel right.....

Ahri: *sigh*... *smile* Nonsense come! It's no trouble

Usually in these types of situations we would ignore her... but i don't know i just don't feel right leaving her like this... she was so young maybe 17-19... and i guess maybe its the same feeling (Y/N) had when it came to Sera... we keep forgetting he is older then all of us so maybe she just activated something that this girl is now in us

Akali: Yea no worriers kid! Our chef is pretty talented so you will enjoy it

????: But.... i don't have money.....

That made Kai'Sa just grab her hand and start pulling her with us..... Yea i was right... *sigh*...this girl is clearly running away from someone

As we were in the elevator going up to the penthouse

Ahri: We kinda never introduced our selves properly

Kai'Sa: Yea! Whats your name sweetie

????: OH! My name is....

DING

Evellyn: Well well aren't you a bad boy for resisting so much !

(Y/N): Y-y-y-y-you know this is technically rape !!!

Evellyn: *purrs* Not if you like it plus you do have a big grin on your face

(Y/N): That's n-n-not the point! GUAAAAH don't bite there

..... Really.... in the middle of the living room..... There was (Y/N) laid back on the floor with Evellyn on top of him taking of his clothes and biting... how are we going to explain to this ????: GET OFF HIM!!!!!!!!

AAEK & (Y/N): Huh ?

BAM.....*SMASH*

It was not even a second.... what i guess was actually her power. She blinked out from as and appeared next to Evellyn kicking her directly in the face.... wow that wall fell apart....

Kai'Sa: She... she.... she just sent Evellyn flying

Akali: Wow..... i don't think even i could do that so easily.... ...SHIT! Evellyn is getting up !!!

The moment of shock didn't last long. Evellyn just got up... and the sight even sent shivers down my spine

Evellyn: I will kill you now

(Y/N): Kata ?

Kata: YOU WILL NOT RAPE MY BROTHER!!

AAEK: HUH ????

TIMESKIP

(Y/N) POV

Well... today is going strange... At one moment Evellyn is on top of me clearly starting one of her plays and in the next moment i see a leg connecting with her face and sending her flying to the wall.... wow....

Kata: I am sorry ! I didn't meant to destroy your wall

Akali: Haha don't worry kid! Stuff gets destroyed regularly here

.....It's said because its true... i loved that sofa

We were siting in the living room. I was on the new sofa with Kata while the girls were across us... Evellyn was still holding a ice pack over her face

Evellyn: Dear i think the bigger issue is you hitting my face

Kata:... its not!

Evellyn: *growling* Excuse me !

Kata: You were trying to rape him!

Crap she got the wrong picture... i am happy she wanted to save me but she hit Evellyn and that i will not forgive

(Y/N): Kata apologize to her

Kata: BUT!

(Y/N): KATA! You hit Evellyn and i am really not OK with that... i know how it looked but you still need to apologize !

Kata: *whisper* Sorry

(Y/N): EXCUSE ME YOUNG LADY!

Kata: I AM SORRY!

Good... she is a good kid... but she has a problem with authority, especially if she needs to admit if she is wrong... huh why are all the girls looking at me in shock.... oh yea

(Y/N): *ahem* Anyway girls this is Kata, she's my sister They were still clearly shocked a little but soon they went full smiling face

Kai'Sa: No worries sweetie it happens, anyway my name is Kai'Sa its a pleasure to meet you finally

Akali: Yea no worries kid! Evellyn needs to get smacked here and there Evellyn: *growling* I don't..... *sigh* you probably know our names but still my name is Evellyn

Ahri: *snickering* Hahaha very nice kick dear! And i am Ahri

All three of them were kinda laughing now because of the scene with Evellyn. I wasn't... i mean don't get me wrong Evellyn tends to be on a high horse. But she still got hurt because of this. But all of that got removed when i looked towards Evellyn... her eyes were screaming "You will pay for this with your body"

.....oh.....ohhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh..... Yay!

Kata: Your dolling.... but you really do live with them

(Y/N): *sigh* That's right... things just happened

Then i noticed the big backpack that was filled with clothes

(Y/N): Huh ? Why do you have so much clothes with you ?

Ahri: She ran away from home... didn't you dear ?

Kata just looked towards the ground in shame....again this! I mean Kata was always the rebel.... but she loved our family. But i know this is not the first time she ran away

(Y/N): You had a fight with Diana ?

Kata: *nods*... she found me smoking....

Ah shit..... it was bound for it to happen...

(Y/N): Crap.... how mad was she ?

Kata:... you remember when dad bought that chopper during his midlife crisis ?

(Y/N): Crap that bad ?

Kata: Times 3

.... WOW!!! No wonder she ran away.... i would... but still

(Y/N): Kata... i understand you... but you have to go bac....

Akali: You can stay here !

(Y/N): Huh!

Ahri: Yea its fine! You came here looking for your brother didn't you ? So any family of his is family of ours

Oi oi oi! No this is not the point

Kai'Sa: Don't worry sweetie we wont mind

.....

Kata: Really? ..... i mean

She was now looking at Evellyn who just did a sight

Evellyn: *sight* she can stay..... she is darlings family so yea

.... now i am mad... *sigh*

(Y/N): Kata go take a shower first and then we will have lunch

Kata: Umm but

Akali: Hey let her rest first and we can...

(Y/N): Go take a shower! I need to talk to the girl

Kata: Ah..... ok

Huh... i never thought i would be in big brother mode so fast... before we stooped speaking to each other i was the only one who could tell her what to do... if Diana and Dad said one thing and i said a another one she would always listen to me.... i am glad it still works... now to deal with the other kids

Ahri: (Y/N) you look upset....

(Y/N): *sigh*..... because you just made my life much harder

Akali: What do you mean ?

(Y/N): Kata is a rebel... she always gets in trouble and always makes shit... this is just one of her fights with Diana. This is also not the first time she runs away. Its a yearly tradition

Evellyn: So? Whats the problem then darling, if it happened before she will go back like always

(Y/N): Yes but before she didn't have me... She always came back in a day or two because she had nowhere to go... but now she has me here

Kai'Sa: Oh.... we are sorry... we....

(Y/N): No no no ! Its not that i am mad... i am very happy you are willing to help her because of me.... *sigh* i better call Diana...

Evellyn: I am expecting you to pay for the damages... and i am not talking about the wall darling *licks lips*

.....YAY!

TIMESKIP

Well... the phone call was a disaster... first half was spent on making Diana relax and stop crying... second half was spent on me trying to calm her down not to come here and murder her..... aperently Kata has been gone for 4 days already

No we were all siting in the kitchen having lunch. With Kata next to me wolfing down on everything... well i can imagine how hungry she is. I would if i was eating only candy and protean bars for 4 days straight...

Aperently she was to scared to come here directly thinking i would turn her away.... how the hell am i going to deal with this...

Kai'Sa: Easy there sweetie the food will not run away

Kata: Sorry *munch munch* but its so good !

Akali: Your brother is actually better! You should see the pancakes he can make

Kata: Mhm!!!

Evellyn: *sigh* i just cant stay mad at her

Ahri: Oh i know you are impressed. When is the last time somebody was able to hit you like that without being it one of us

And then they all started laughing except Kata who was not paying attention because of the food and me who was just thinking how is that a laughing matter... we really need to talk about their past one of these days

Akali: So how long you planing to stay kid?

Kata: Ummm... i.....

Ahri: You can stay as much as you want dear! We don't mind

..... OK i know Akali didn't think but you Ahri really.... what did i say this morning

Ahri: I always wanted a little sister!!! So this will be perfect

..... Ah.... she remembers... but the way her tails are swaying is telling me this is more important... *SIIIIIIIIGHT****

Kata: Really!!!! Thank you so much!!!!!!

.... how the hell will i fix this

Akali: OK, i am off to the gym!

Kata: OH! You have a gym? Can i join!!!

Akali: Haha no worries kid lets go

After they left the table i was just staring at Ahri Ahri: Sorry..... but i always wanted a little sister...

(Y/N): *smile* Your banned from my room

Ahri: WAIT! WHAT ! NO!

(Y/N): Sorry no more cuddling or sex while Kata is here

Ahri was looking at me in shock at first while Kai'Sa and Evellyn were laughing... but then that look became dangerous

Ahri: *whisper* Fine il just hold you down then and force you

(Y/N): OI!!! That's rape!!!!

Ahri: Not if you scream in pleasure *licks lips*

Evellyn: Hold it dear! First i will get my payment

Kai'Sa: Umm can i get a turn ?

..... oh god..... YaY

Oh good fucking birds so sleepy....

CHAPTER 46 (We Haven't Sang Together In Forever!)

Wow already 46 chapters..... i need to slow down a little

Ryze POV:

Ryze: So lets talk about your smoking today

(Y/N): Oh god.... not this

Ryze: Do you smoke for stress relief ? Or is it something that you think makes you different

(Y/N): Seriously... people i just enjoy it nothing else

Ryze: Hmm very defensive i believe there is something more

(Y/N): ..... oh brother

(Y/N) POV

????: Look at these melons people ! They are very sweet

????: We got some rare Noxus wine here! Get it before the war starts and it all disappears

????: Psssst.... He mister you look like man of culture! How about some magical girl figurines

..... *sigh* These past few days were a disaster... Kata has already been living with us for 3 days and its not getting easier.... Ahri is the worse she is spoiling her to much.... well all of them are.

Akali is letting her ride her bike... which was a big fucking no no from me. But i cant really stop them. The first time i tried they just sneaked out and did it anyway... not to mention the wepons play.... Kata likes dagger which was a big plus for Akali

I pray for Kai'Sa if she ever gets children... Kata didn't want to eat her vegetables and a few puppy dog looks and she was straight up in ice cream no matter what kind of looks i gave. There was even that one time when she her to help with cleaning... and again puppy eyes and again no need....

Evellyn who i hopped will be on my side... turned out to be a disappointment... she would act all dangerous and bad but Kata still got her way with her.... she even let her win in a monopoly game... Evellyn never lets anyone win in monopoly.... she even threatens if it looks like she is going to lose

But then came Ahri.... *SIGH*.... she takes her shopping every day buying everything possible that catches Kata's eye... if Kata wants to go somewhere we go, if Kata wants to watch something we watch it..... i missed a episode of Jo-Jo because of that grrrrrrrrr.... But the worst was last night

FLASHBACK

(Y/N): W-w-w-w-w-what the hell is that

Kata: OMG! I cant believe you got it !!!!!!!!

Ahri: He he! Leave it to your big sister!

Kai'Sa: Is that a gun.....

Evellyn: Hmm more like a Ak47 i think... i know there was that one fan one time who tried to kill himself and me as a act of love.... i made him shoot his dick off

Akali: OH sweet! It's even got a dagger extension

Kata: You are so cool Ahri!!!!

Ahri: He he big sis got connections

(Y/N): *whisper* Take it back

Ahri: Huh ?

(Y/N): TAKE IT THE FUCK BACK!!!!!!! ARE YOU FUCKING CRAZY

END OF FLASHBACK

.... yea.

Apparently Kata said how she likes weapons and guns.... so Ahri went outside and brought a full on automatic riffle..... HOW THE FUCK DID SHE EVEN BUY SOMETHING LIKE THAT! Gun's are banned in Piltover so you cant just walk out and buy it.....

Sigh Lets just go and get some groceries.... fucking hell i am i the only normal one in our house... a riffle.... and the rest of the girl were just like "Ah no biggie" we really need to have a talk one of these days

As i was making my way to my usual fruit stand i noticed Yorick looking at me in displeasure

(Y/N): Hey Yorick whats up ?

Yorick: I got forgotten again

(Y/N): Huh ?

Yorick: I am still not mentioned in the side character bio

(Y/N): Dafuq you talking about

Great... now he is in a bad mode for some reason.... no discount today.... FML

TIMESKIP

DING *CRASH*

Ahri: AH!!!! Our 13 century Vase!

Akali: Ups sorry! Me and Kata were practicing knife throwing

eye twitching

Ahri: IN THE HOUSE !!!!!

Kata: Sorry big sis

Ahri:..... It's OK hehe *whisper* she called me big sis he he he!!!!

eye twitching even more

Kai'Sa: Lunch is almost ready i got some steamed vegetables today

Kata: But... i wanted to some cream *sob*

Kai'Sa: Ahhhh don't be like that! You can have ice cram instead... oh and how about some whip cream with it

both eyes twitching

Evellyn: Whos the one who burned the bathroom drapes ?

Kata: Ah sorry... i kinda lighted my smoke in the bathroom by reflex... my bad Evellyn: *sigh* It's fine dear but be careful next time

twitch twitch twitch twitch twitch

Akali: Oh latter we can go to that shop i told you about and we will get you your own bike

Kata: Seriously Akali ! Your the best

Ahri: HEY! ... How about we get you a car ? *whisper* i want to be the best

3.....2.....1..... *inhales*

(Y/N): ALL OF YOU ARE TO FUCKING MEET ME IN THE FUCKING LIVING ROOM AFTER FUCKING 5 MIN DO YOU ALL FUCKING UNDERSTAND ME OR DO I FUCKING HAVE TO REPEAT MY FUCKING SELF!!!!!!!!!!

After 5 min they were all siting together on one couch in front of me who was standing tapping my foot

tap tap tap

Ahri: *whisper* wow.... 6 f bombs

Kai'Sa: *whisper* He looks mad....

Evellyn:*whisper* Even i am impressed now...

Kata: *whisper* He always did have a temper when he losses it

Akali:*whisper* I kinda find it hot..... i wonder if i can get him to my room after this

Kata: *whisper* eeeewwwwwww

..... OK that one i from Akali i will have to remember.... he he eh NO (Y/N)!!! Back to reality

(Y/N): OK this now needs to stop! You are all spoiling her to much

Ahri: Ah but (Y/N)!

(Y/N): NO BUTS!!!!

Evellyn: But i want your butt *smirk*

Kata: Eeeewwwwwww

... *twitch twitch twitch*

Akali: Or you want my butt *grin*

..... "You Ra....." NOT NOW DICK!!!! "But...." NO BUTS.... and why the fuck am i talking with my dick!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

(Y/N):OK, seriously enough. I am serious here and no more joking around Kai'Sa: Ummm (Y/N) i know we have maybe been a little weak but....

(Y/N): No this is to much Kai'Sa you are letting her walk all over you! Akali knives ? Bikes ? And don't think i didn't notice you sneaking out last night!!!! I don't even want to know where the two of you went!!! Evellyn seriously ? Its OK ? Its fine ? You were supposed to be on my side but are you just as bad as any of them

Ahri:... Yea you guys have been a little to week

(Y/N): YOU ARE THE WORST ONE!!!!!!!!

Ahri: HIIIIIIIII!!!!!!!

(Y/N): A gun ? A FUCKING GUN !!!!! Are you kidding me where did you even get that !!!!

Ahri: Ah well you see there is this alley behind the mall and ...

(Y/N): NO I DON'T WANT TO KNOW!..... *sigh*

And then Kata started to cry with her face hidden by hands

Kata: But but..... they were just nice *sob* and and... i was with you *sob sob* we didint talk for so many years *sob*.... and *sob* i just wanted *sob*....

All the girls were looking at her with pity..... nice try (Y/N): Bitch please! I am the one who teach you how to fake cry and hit the soft spots

Kata:..... *tch* You figured me out

(Y/N): The fun has went on long enough! Tomorrow you are going back home! I don't care anymore for your fight with Diana

Kata: BUT!

(Y/N): NO BUTS *whisper* Except Akali's! You are going back Diana is already having panic attacks !!! So no more messing around

Kata: You..... i hate you !!!

(Y/N): My job is not for you to like me ! But to do the right thing!!!

Kata: BASTARD!!! GO TO HELL!!!

SLAM

And she just ran away to Akali's room where she has been staying and slammed the door

Akali: Hey (Y/N)! There was no need

(Y/N): THERE WAS !!!!! And its all your guys FAULT!... Seriously how can you be so amazing sometimes but such brats in other FFS

Kai'Sa: (Y/N) we are ...

(Y/N): I don't care! I am going to the Dirty Mug il be back latter tonight! See ya then... And i better not see a bike or car in the garage when i come back

TIMESKIP

Bartender: One more snot ?

(Y/N): *sigh* Nah i am good i should be going back

Kata: Is this seat open ?

I was siting the the bar in the Dirty Mug when Kata showed up and sat next to me.

Bartender: What can i fetch ya doll ?

Kata: Oh what is close to whiskey

I just gave her a look which made her change her order to Coke....We were siting for about 5 min having a drink until i decided to brake the silence

(Y/N): So.... did they pass your test ?

Kata: Huh ?

(Y/N): Come on Kata... this is not you. Casi maybe would enjoy all the intention and spoiling but not you

Kata: Was i that obvious ?

(Y/N): Hahaha my little sister who at the age of 12 beat up 3 guys because they were picking on Mike is acting meek and girly ? Please

Kata: Hahahah yea yea you got me.

At first i didn't have idea but the way she was acting it was so unlike her i thought she just simply changed over the years...but it took me a few Goblin Snots to finally figure it out... but what i cant figure is

(Y/N): Why ?

Kata: Because you are happy... and i was scared it will go away

(Y/N): Kata i....

Kata: Let me finish....*sigh*.... You know... i still remember it... the day Diana brought us over to you and Mike... i might have been only 4 year

then but i still remember the face you were making.... you were basically screaming at us " great, more trouble" with your look

(Y/N): Kata... i really didn't want it to be like that.....

Kata: No don't get me wrong.... at first i was so scared and mad... Our dad left us after Casi was born.. he couldn't really handle her being a vastaya you know. We didn't really have a hard life but Mom was so sad during that time... Then we come to you and i was thinking " Oh no they are going to hate Casi"

.... They never talked about this.... Kata or Casi... even Diana never wanted to talk about

Kata: Then you just made one of those sights of yours and took Casi from mom and went and made dinner for us.... Every day when mom and dad would work 12h you would take care of us..If Casi would coil around you, you would just laugh and call her your little snake princes

(Y/N): It was my duty....

Kata: It was not... your duty was to Mike not to us..... but you didn't care.... you would play with Casi, make trouble with me and i still remember that day when I got sick while we were alone and you just picked up and left for the pharmacy even though it was raining.....

Oh yea.... it was a very bad storm that day and our parents were at work... Kata had a huge fever and was not feeling better at all. So i just went to the closest pharmacy in that weather... crap i still remember the beating i got from my dad when i came back..... it scared him out of his mind when i thought i was out in that weather

Kata: And then... it all changed 8 years ago....

Yea.... fourth year of high school after my date with my Ex....

Kata: You were not looking at us like we were your sisters anymore... you were looking at us like we were strangers just waiting for us to attack you

for being a powerless.... Me and Casi thought if we treat you the same you would feel what we feel and we would go back to normal

(Y/N):.... i see... Kata.... I

Kata: But no... it just kept going on and on.... and then you left for college... and we saw that picture of you with such a huge smile... it broke our hearts and we knew we lost you Yea it was when i started.... that was the time i met Prof. Zilean and started hanging out with Ekko and Yasuo... it was the first time i was happy in a couple of years.... but it didn't last

Kata: Then you come visit and you got that same look you always had... the look that was screaming "I give up"....

(Y/N): That was not because of you.... its just when i finally visited my life went to hell again

Kata: So i didn't care anymore... it was clear you hated us. You know every time you would visit and leave... Casi would spend all night crying

(Y/N):.... I..... it was not you....

Kata: Then that day a couple of months ago Diana comes back after visiting you and shows us the picture of you.... you were the happiest i have ever seen... first i was shocked why were you with KD/A....but it was all nothing compared to your face (Y/N): Yea.... i really am happy with the girls

Kata: Mhm.... when you visited for Christmas... i was shocked. There was no dejected look, there was no depression... you were normal..... something was eating at your from inside but you still had hope in your eyes.... and then that shit happened in the store

(Y/N): Oh..... crap i really lost it in there

Kata: Hahahaha! You have no idea how i was shocked! You who has keep his head down his whole life. Who would rather take a beating to get off easy then put up a fight did that.... you were so different then usual

(Y/N): *Sigh* Allot of things changed.... and i guess i grew a little.... so you coming now was ?

Kata: I wanted to meet them... not as a fan but as persons who finally gave me my brother back... and i wanted to make sure that they will not hurt you like her

OK that looks is a little dangerous.... why am i surrounded by dangerous women *sigh*

(Y/N): So.... they pass ?

Kata: *nods* You know i never imagined.... thee KD/A group one of the most popular and badass women in the world will get grounded by my brother for being bad Hahhahahha (Y/N): Oh come on ! It was not like that

Kata: Seriously! When i came out they were still siting on the couch fidgeting like little children caught in a bad act.... i think they will even still be waiting for us at the same place when we return

(Y/N): *sigh* Some times thy are so amazing... you know Ahri knows all of their work by heart.. and she can find even the smallest hidden print on any contract. Her buisnis sense is beyond words and she can take care of any problem no matter what it is... But you ignore her for 5min and she get needy and possessive begging you to pay attention to her

Kata: I kinda noticed when she brought that gun.... seriously... how ?

(Y/N): Don't ask its better if you don't know. And then there is Evellyn... the lady can make death itself piss himself in fear. But throw in a few right compliment's and sweet gestures and she will brake in a moments notice!She would do everything in her power to protect you and keep you safe

Kata: I kinda noticed that... i still remember that look when i kicked her. If i was not your sister i would be dead now *gulp*

(Y/N): Then you of course have Kai'Sa.... even though she likes to act the oldest and composed she is just a big child on the inside who wants somebody to be there with her... and man is she kinky he he he

Kata: OK... ewwwwww TMI..... i actually felt bad on how easy it was to control her

(Y/N): I know right..... and Akali.... haha Akali is Akali..... She acts all Badass and chilled but she is the first one that brakes down and i would do anything you ask of her..... and i do mean anything.. you know she saved my life

Kata: Does it have something to do with you wounds ?.... if you

(Y/N): No Kata... maybe one day... but not today

We were finishing up our drinks now and were just talking about the past and all the things that i missed when i was away. The when somebody started singing the Diggy Diggy song

Kata: You still suck ?

(Y/N): Ha always !!! Its even worse now ! How about you still wining singing competitions ?

Kata: *grin* Of course... so what are we waiting for lets go!! We haven't sang together in forever! Lets make the people suffer with your voice!

Bartender: Oh PLEASE DON'T!!!

BustyWaitress: Oh no.....

(Y/N): Sure !

The whole bar groaned in pain once i got up on the stage with my sister.... heh.... i guess things really are going for the better

Swain POV

Ambassador: As you can see sir these are the terms for the peace

The terms were awful... this would hit our economy and turn us back 10 years into the past...

Swain: And he is not willing to negotiate at all ?

Ambasador: No sir... Prince i mean King Jarvan the IV has made his demands and is not willing to change them

Swain: *sigh* And here i was thinking how i will spend time with my grandchildren this spring

Ambasador: So is the senates answer WAR then ?

Swain: NO not yet..... OK try to ask for a meeting with him we can do it in Piltover like usual i want to talk to him one more time

Ambasador: Very well sir i will try

The man that was chosen as our ambassador just gave a salute and left.... *sigh* every time.... every time a new ruler comes in Demacia this happens... well we were not much different 10 years go. Thats why we changed our ways of ruling to diplomacy and power was given to a group of 10 people. Now at least 70% of the votes need to be positive for something to be done

Maid: High Senator Swain your coffee is ready

Swain: Thank you my child put it there... oh is it the one i requested ?

Maid: Yes sir! We were able to find this brand. Our people brought it in from Piltover yesterday evening

Swain: Good my grandson suggested it so it must be good! He is very specific when it comes to his morning coffee so only chooses the best stuff !

Now if he could stop smoking and use all that energy for something more productive it would be perfect

... I know right what are the odes

CHAPTER 47 (A Man's dream)

I am kinda in a bad mode so maybe il go a little crazy now

Ryze POV:

(Y/N): And that's why you should never show up sweaty in front of her ....

Ryze:..... that sounds like rape...

(Y/N): Apparently its not if you enjoy it.....

Ryze: No... its still rape

(Y/N):.... i know..... can i get the safety pillow back now

(Y/N) POV:

CRASH BAM POW **(i need someone to send me sound effect this is ridiculous even for me... oh and)** PEW PEW PEW*

Assasin1: THERE HE IS GET HIM!!!!

Assasin2: SHOOT HIM GO FOR THE HEAD!!!

Assasin3: Crap.... CRAP CRAP DODGE HE THREW THAT CAR AT US NOOO

CRASH BOOOOOM

(Y/N): How.... *huf huf huf* did i get myself into this

Assasin4: There he is ! Get him!!!

(Y/N): Shit! OK, BYE WOPOPOPOPOPOPO

Assasing5: Give me your radio he is running up on the side of the building

.... HOW DID THIS HAPPEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEENNNNN!!!!!!!!!!

FLASHBACK

(Y/N): Oh god.... i feel so tired

Ahri: *soft breathing* mmm.....hehe.....just like that

And the person responsible for that was laying down on top of me.... Yesterday after my sister left things started going back to normal... i was still pissed on Ahri since she was the worst one. I was able to ignore he for the whole day.... until finally night time came and she just busted into my room....

Ahri;*soft breathing* hehe.... scream... just like that scream hehe.....

OK ! I know she is dreaming but man this is scary!!! In the end i fell asleep at 3 am... but her sleep-talking now woke me up again *sigh* its 6 am anyway no point in going back to sleep i have a meeting today with him early in the morning....

Ahri: He...he....my (Y/N)... my precious (Y/N)

(Y/N): *blush* That is actually very nice

Ahri: you are mine....hehehe.... nobody can touch you but me... or i will make them disappear...he..he..*soft snoring*

The way she said that last one is scary.....

I was able to sneak out of my room and as i was making my way to the bathroom i ran into a very nice view.... that's.... ohohoho *grin* time for payback

There she was on the middle of the corridor Evellyn! She was bending over tying her shoes. Apparently she started to do some morning jogging every day and she was waking up before everybody else. I wanted to ask her why she started doing this.... but every fiber of my body was screaming that question will bring death But now.... seeing her bent over like this.... i couldn't resist

SLAP

Evellyn: Kyaaaaaaaa!

Did she just.....

Evellyn: DARLING! What do you think you are doing *growling*

No she just.... imposible

Evellyn: *growling* Do you want me to punish..... um darling.... whats with that look Yes yes she did she did say that....

Evellyn:.... darling ... your kinda shaking now

That badass Evellyn just screamed in surprise and shame.... the one who always did everything and controlled everything and made ME scream..... just now showed such a feminine and cute side

"YOUUUUUUU RAAAAANNNGGG"

(Y/N): You are not going anywhere!

Evellyn: Wait! WAIT! I was just because it was morning *guah*

CRASH

Kai'Sa POV

Kai'Sa: Yaaawn

Time to make breakfast.... i know (Y/N) said he has a meeting with somebody in the morning so i will at least make him a sandwich before he goes. As i got out of the room the first thing i noticed was the smell.... then i saw it.... wow

Kai'Sa: (Y/N)!!! Are you OK!!!!!!

He was just laying down on the floor looking at the ceiling completely naked.... his cum was all over him and around him... he had those looks i saw in those animated porn comics... i think it was called ahe... ahegao or something

(Y/N): He...he...yea...

Kai'Sa: What happened!

(Y/N): Evellyn.... was kinda.... bent over.... so i slapped her ass... then she made this sound.... and i just lost control

Kai'Sa: Oh no... you didn't.....

(Y/N): Aha.... then after i finished the first time.... i guess the shock left her and i calmed down....Then she grabbed me

Kai'Sa: *gulp*.... how many...

(Y/N): I lost count after 7....she said we will continue tonight.... to teach me a lesson

Kai'Sa: Should.... should i help you up....

(Y/N): Please don't touch me.... i am still sensitive

Wow.... i need to ask what she did.... his face is... wow...

TIMESKIP

...crap it hurts.... and the color.... its not supposed to be that color. First Ahri and then Evellyn in the morning.... I have been going like crazy these past

few weeks... don't get me wrong i like it but it did raise some questions o i actually asked Ahri about this a few days ago and she said that its probably her saliva. Even though she is not in heat us constantly going at it is working as a weak aphrodisiac..... he he he

As i was siting in the coffee shop thinking of the punishment Eve is going to do to me i heard a very familiar voice

Zilean: Well well look at you!

(Y/N): Prof Zilean... its good to see you

There he was. Completely the same as a few years ago. Nothing on him has changed from that grey messy beard to his strange look like he was a hippy in the 70's.

Zilean: Hello (Y/N) it is very good to see you, and thank you for meeting me

(Y/N): No worries prof. I already order for you, they have good coffee here

We shacked hands and he sat across me. His coffee came right away since i knew he liked to drink it black like me. After a few moments he took a sip and made a pleasing sound of enjoying it

Zillean: Mmmmm i like it.... now if i can ask you for a

(Y/N): *sigh* still the same... here take a smoke hahahah

We were enjoying our morning coffee and smoke in silence... this was one of my favorite things to do with the prof. we just sit in silence and enjoy our self... and then he spoke

Zillean: I didn't think you would agree to meet with me....

(Y/N): *sigh*.... you know... if you called me a couple of months ago i would have told you to go fuck off

Zillean was staring at me... and then he made a huge smile

Zillean:Good! I like you eyes !!! Looks like you found your new reason for getting up in the morning

(Y/N): *smile* It was hard... and it took a long time... but yes in the end it all worked out for the better.... even though i almost died a few time

Zillean: Hahah i have a felling your not joking.... but good ! It helped you grow i can see that! You were not stuttering when that waitress came i was very surprised!

(Y/N): Yea that kinda just stooped a few months ago.... i didn't even notice it really

Zillean: Good!

(Y/N): So tell me, its not like i don't want to see you... but why now ?

Zillean just continued drinking his coffee for about another 2 min until he finally spoke again with his musky voice.

Zillean: There is someone i would like you to meet... he is a very old friend of mine (Y/N): Oh? Any specific reason

Zillean: Well he made something and i thought you would appreciate it... i wanted to pay you back for all those years but i see it all went well in the end..

(Y/N): Yea it did... but i still don't mind looking at his creation or what ever it is

Zillean just smiled and after about another 10min we set off.

TIMESKIP

.... Where the fuck am i.... and this was a bad idea i have felling i was not supposed to come here...

I asked a few time Zillean where we were going and he would have just chuckled and told me i wouldn't believe him..... he was right.

We were currently underground in the North Parth of Piltover i still have no idea how exactly we got here. I know we were driving on one of the side roads then Zilean just made a call and at one moment the road actually opened mid street and let us go underground.... where the fuck am i

Zillean: Don't look so alarmed lets go

We left the car and i was following him... I could clearly see we were in some secret laboratory.... people in lab coats were working on different things from machines to plants.... wait.... is that a human body... no no no no n o no... i saw nothing i refuse to see anything !

After about 15 of walking and pass through so many checkpoints we finally got to the final door at the end of the corridor.... it was screaming top secret and i really wanted to leave right away..Then the door just finally opened and we walked in

Zillean: Hey! We are here !!!

????: Yes yes! Just a second... *boom* darn it!!! The calculations were wrong again

Then he came... at first i was shocked it was a yordle... a very very old yordle. He was small and hairy and had a lab clock. Wow i cant remember the last time i saw one... they were rare as the powerless

Zillean: Hey there old friend! How is it going

????: Meh so so... inventing stuff, blowing stuff , surviving assassins and so on

... that last one sounded dangerous... can we leave now!!

????: Hmm ? Who is this boy who looks like he wants to run away

(Y/N): *gulp* Hello sir... my name is (Y/N)

????: Mmmm good good i am Heimerdinger but people call me Heime

..... huh... wait !

(Y/N); Wait! WAIT WAIT!!! AS IN HEIME"s COFFEE ?

Heime: Ummm boy you are to close

(Y/N): OMG! Your my hero!!!!

I just grabbed his hand and started shaking it like crazy.... the funny part was that because he was so small just up to my knees he was kinda going up and down with his whole body

Zillean: Oi! Easy (Y/N) hahaha! What did i tell you old friend !

After about 10 more seconds i finally let go... man i can be such a fan-girl sometime but this guys.... this guy is a legend. Heime just arranged his cloak that got messed up during our mishap and he just looked towards me with wonder

Heime: Ummm let me get this straight... i am you hero for making a brand of coffee ?

(Y/N): YES SIR!

Heime: OK TO CLOSE !!! .... Kid are you messing with me

(Y/N): ON SIR! Before your coffee came i was suffering

Heime: Why is he doing a dramatic pose....

Zillean: He likes his coffee

(Y/N): But then... but then one morning i accidentally buy your brand.... and it was my guiding light!

Heime: Is he right in the head ?

Zillean: Probably not

(Y/N): .... Ahem sorry

I was kinda full red now... i always loved coffee. And Heime's coffee was just that good for me

(Y/N): It used to take me 2-3 hours every morning to wake up... after i started drinking your coffee it takes me about one hour

Heime: Oh! That was actually the point! I am the same so that's why i made this coffee with just the right amount pf punch to work in one hour

(Y/N): You sir! Are a genius and this worlds hero!

Zillean: Why are u saluting him.....

OH god i did it again.... i just couldn't control my self.... crap he is going to think that i am a idiot...but contrary to my fears Heime just started laughing in a positive way

Heime: Hahah you were right my old friend! I like him

Zillean: Haha told you

Heime: Come boy! The reason this old goat brought you is because i made another brand. When he said he knew somebody who would call me a hero for a cup of coffee i didn't believe him! But i guess even i was wrong

Zillean: Oh you admitting you are wrong that's...

(Y/N): YOU MADE ANOTHER BRAND!!!!!!!!! KYAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA Heime:Did he just kyaaa.....

Yea i was complete fan-girl.... but i don't give a fuck this person is a saint

After about 10min we were siting in the corner drinking his new brand and smoking..

(Y/N): This is amazing! Its perfect for the afternoons

Heime: You have good taste my boy! Yes its for those afternoon when you need to stay up late. Its not as strong as the morning one

Zillean: Told you would like to meet him

(Y/N): You were not wrong Prof. this is fantastic !

Heime: (Y/N) may i ask you a question... if i am not mistaken you are a powerless right ?

(Y/N):.... yes i am

Heime: So how would you feel if you suddenly got a chance to be strong

.... That question was strange.... i thought about it so many times.... i cursed the gods so many times for making me powerless.... and now... he is just asking me that

Heime: I know its a strange question... but can you do a old man a favor and answer him

(Y/N):.... i would love to.... You have no idea how it feels.... to be powerless... to never belong anywhere..... to lose your dream

At those last words Zillean just lowered his head in shame.... i guess he still feels bad from all those years ago

Heime: I see.... i am sorry boy... there is no cure

(Y/N): Huh ?

Heime: My focus on research was to cure the powerless affliction... to try to figure out how it works why some people don have power while most of them do

(Y/N): And.....

Heime; There is nothing.... we have everything the same! The same bloodline the same genetics the same brain structure... there is nothing its

just simply as that

Zillean: Kinda confirms the concept of magic if you ask me

Heime: Oh please don't start with that hokus pokus bullshit again

I see..... i always wondered if there was something.... but i guess.... nothing.... *sigh*

Heime: Sorry boy..... i tried but its no use

(Y/N): *sigh* Its OK Heime.... i learned to live with it a long time ago... i hate it... and i still cant accept it.... but i am living with it

Heime: Good now if you boys don't mind i

BEEEP BEEEP BEEEP

YELLOW ALERT YELLOW ALERT WE HAVE BEEN INFILTRATED! THE LABORATORY IS UNDER ATTACK

Heime: Oh my this hasn't happened in a long time

..... Why am i not surprised it happened today... FML

Zillean: Should we be worried ?

Heime: Nah ! It needs to go to red alert and that hasn't happen in forever hahah what are the chances

..... sigh... he just jinx it..... 3.....2.....1..... huh? Oh maybe my luck is not so

RED ALERT RED ALERT THE DEFENSES HAVE FAILED

.....I don't even..... fuck this

Heim: Oy boy... now we are in trouble

(Y/N): Don't you have a secret exit or something ?!!!

Heime: Of course not! Every evil lair always falls because of a secret exit!!

..... i am going to ignore the Evil Lair part .....

Heime: Crap it must be Veigar!!! He wants to take my creation (Y/N): I know the coffee is great and all !!! But really to make a full on attack

Heime: NO no no! This is something else i made a dimensional space

Zillean: Wait SERIOUSLY! You were able to make that !

Heime:Mhm! Boy i don't know buy are you familiar with the concept of DnD ... and why are your eyes sparkling again

(Y/N): YOU MADE A BAG OF HOLDING!!!!!!!!! YOU SIR ARE A GENIUS AND TRUE MAN!!!!

Heime was looking at me in shock while Zillean was panicking... and then he just started laughing like crazy

Heime: BOY! I like you!!!! So that's why i will give you a chance to save my creation

Nani?????.... i was wrong this guy is crazy !

Heime: Oh don't look at me like that!!! My creation will change the world. For now its small it can only hold 1x1m but can you imagine after it grows!

(Y/N):... you can smuggle what ever you want anywhere....

Heime: Exactly! That's why i was making it for that warlord! Anyway you now will save it !!!

(Y/N): Yea that's impossible.... i have no powers and i am weak as hell.....

Heime: Oh i would worry about that.... i think you will appreciate this *grins*

OK! Ignoring that dangerous part about a Warlord.... Heime just pressed a button and a wall behind me opened... when i turned i couldn't speak how shocked i am

Heime: What do you think boy? Do you think you can use this

(Y/N): Is.... is that..... is that a fucking.....

Heime: Yes yes it is!.... Oi... why are you crying suddenly!!!.....

(Y/N): Sir.... you are a true believer in the dream's of men!

Zillean: Both of you are fucking crazy

Shamira POV:

Assasin: Mam this is the last door!

Shamira: Good! Open it up and lets get what we came for

... When Veigar hired us for this mission i thought he was crazy.... infiltrating this facility was impossible.... until he told me he had a mole... i should have known it would be Neko in disguise

Neko: Wow so much security. This should have went much faster!

Shamira: Well if you went as someone with more clearance !

Neko: Well that was impossible! Anybody higher requers a daily blood test. And that i can not change

If she says it would have been impossible i have to agree. This girl is the best when it comes to stuff like this

Assasin: OK! The charges are set get ready to blow

Shamira: On my mark 3.....2.....1

But before i could press the button suddenly the speaker that was throwing its alarm stooped.... in 5 seconds it started playing music

https://youtu.be/sS6RvWE8KdY

And he door opened then by itself

Assasin1: What the.....

Assasin2: The fuck is...

Neko: Is that a

And in front of us standing about 2m tall was

Shamira: What the fuck is that

Assasin3: Is that a mecha...

Neko: No dud that is power armor

Shamira: Why are your eyes sparkling!

????: *CHU CHU MOTHERFUCKA*

CRASH BAM BOOM

The thing just ran through us in full speed knocking all of us to the wall! When i lifted my head i saw a yordel

????: You dimensional pocket is running away

..... this job just got harder

Shamire: AFTER THE ROBOT!

Neko: Its power armor

Shamira: I don't care what its called after it!!!!

Heime POV:

Heime: Sooo... why did we have to put that song on ?

Zillean: Something about a man's dream....

Heime: Your student needs to see a shrink

END OF FLASHBACK

.... HOW DID THIS HAPPEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEENNNNN!!!!!!!!!!

BECAUSE- ITS FUCKING AWESOME!!!!!!!

(Y/N): YIHAAAAAAAAA!!!!!!!!!!

smash

Holy shit i just jumped like 10 meters!!!

Assasin1: *He is on running atop the buildings!!!*

Assasin1: *Commander Shamira we cant catch him*

Shamira: *DID I ASK FOR EXCUSES OR RESULTS!!!!!!!*

Hahahha god thing this suit taps into enemy frequency!!! Now lets see lets see what can i try next

Heime: *Boy! You still alive*

(Y/N): Have i told you how you are my hero

PEW PEW PEW PEW

Crap they are shooting at me.... but man all the bullets are just falling off FUCKING AWESOME!!!!!!!!!!

Heime: *About 10 times since you put on that suit.... but did you have to go through the walls when you were going outside the lab ?*

(Y/N): One does not simply put on Power Armor and not go through walls!

Assain3: STOP RIGHT THERE !!!!

One of the Assassins suddenly showed up in front of me spreading his arms to stop me... *GRIN*

(Y/N): SPEAR!!!!!!!!!!

Assassin: Whaaaaa *GUAAAAAAH* *CRACK*

.... holy shit did i just brake his spine in half..... this is suit is awesome.... he is probably alive... i think Heime: *Boy !!! Your running out of buildings and big group of them are waiting for you down!!!*

(Y/N): No worries!!! I have a plan!!!

Heime: *Whats your plan!!*

(Y/N): Jumping!

Shamira POV:

SHIT!!! How the hell is this happening. This job was supposed to be easy!!! But suddenly that fucking thing shows up and it goes to hell!! It broke out of the laboratory going through the walls! Then we come to the surface and it runs up the building!!!

Assasin21: Mam target is approaching! There is no way to pass behind us is a clearing so he has to get down fro the building

Shamira: GOOD! Prepare the perimeter and..... huh.... whats that sound And then i looked up and saw him falling down

(Y/N): *SUPEEEER HEROOOO LANDIIIING!!!!!!!!*

.... motherfucker

CRASH BOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOM

(Y/N) POV

Wow.... i just made a huge shock-wave sending all of them flying back.... fucking AWESOME!!!... huh one of them is still standing... holy crap that sword is big. Then the lady just looked towards me.... OK i have to admit she was hot! She had Dark Skin with Raven black hair.... and the abs man... those abs... a little to much but i can go with it !

Shamira: You have cost me allot of money!

(Y/N): *Ummm... i am sorry ?*

Shamira: Oh it's fine then

(Y/N): *Really ?*

Shamira: OF COURSE NOT!!!! YOU WILL DIE NOW!

HOLY SHIT SHE IS ANGRY I NEED TO..... wait.... ohoho lets dance! Lets see, lets see

(Y/N): Heime do i have a sword ?

Zillean: *Why would your power armor have...*

Heime: *Press the gray button on your hand! Of course it will have a sword*

Once i pressed it a blade extended from my arm....

(Y/N): Sir... you are my hero

Zillean: *Both of you are fucking crazy*

Shamira: I don't care anymore you will die!!!

She then just jumped on me doing a overhead slice but i blocked it and kicked her in the gut sending her back! I didn't give her a chance to retaliate so i charged right into her with a thrust... but she expected it and just used my momentum to her advantage to push me to the side with a parry

Shamire: Nice TRY!!

I was able to stop my self and used my hand to grab one of the cars and throw it at her .... holy shit this armor gives amazing strengths... maybe i can finally beat Akali in arm wrestling... But this lady just jumped over it and started shooting at me with her guns... even though it was not penetrating the armor i could still feel the impact like paintball

(Y/N): *Ow ow owow!!! Don't bring guns to a sword fight!!!!!!*

Shamira: DON'T BRING POWER ARMOR TO ANY FIGHT!!!!!

(Y/N): *Touche !*

We kept going for a few more min... this suit was very strong and it gave me a good amount of strength and speed.... but her skill was just godly....

Shamira: Hahah not bad ! Where did you learn how to fight? Ionia's Balance Guild, or was it maybe the Crimson Assassins from Noxus!!?

(Y/N): *Ummm.... video games*

That made her just stop and look at me wide eyed....

Shamira: You are not joking.....

(Y/N): *Ummm no....my job is technically a housekeeper.....*

Shamira: Then... how ? I mean why... what ?

(Y/N): *Would you believe me if i told you this all started with a cup of coffee ....*

The laddie was just looking in complete shock at me.....

(Y/N): *Should we continue or....*

Shamira: AH yea yea... sure..... i am not getting payed enough for this shit I actually had an idea and i was sure it was going to work! I just needed to

POWER DEPLETED SHUTTING DOWN

.....motherfucker

Heime: *Ummm... you kinda overused it.... its power was already very small maybe 30min.... you made it last only 12... i am impressed actually*

Then Shamira was suddenly in front of me and she kicked me sending me flying across the air and crashing on the floor...

Shamira: Oy why did you stop! Lets continue

(Y/N): *Umm... do you mind if we go to a coffee shop first so that i can plug in the battery is dead.....*

She was looking at me again wide eyed.....

Shamira: Are you joking.....

(Y/N): *No.....*

Shamira: Can i get the dimensional space now.....

(Y/N): *Its actually called bag of holding... and its not on me.... it was still with Heime....*

Shamira:..... and he is not there is he...

(Y/N): *Nop.... long gone.....*

Shamira:.....

(Y/N):.....

Shamira: I am done.... good bye

(Y/N): *Um... your not going to ?*

Shamira: I don't care anymore... i am going for vacation

(Y/N): *AH i see..... ummm good bye and i hear the alps are good this time of year*

The girl just left with a complete look of defeat and dejection.... i kinda feel bad.... that look was just showing her dead eyes.... this lady will probably not smile in a long time

Heime: *Ummm boy i kinda forgot to mention one little detail*

(Y/N): What ?

Heime: *The suit will explode in 10 seconds*

(Y/N):..... MOTHERFUCKER!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

BOOOOOOM

TIMESKIP

I was in the elevator as i was going up into the penthouse.... god..... i am so tired..... I was able to get out of the armor before it exploded and that is good... of course when Zillean came to pick me up i made him call Heime and i was having a rage attack... but after promising me a years supply of his coffee i calmed down.... the worst.... the worst part of it..... that was the only one Apparently that was his pet project that he has been working for the past 30 years.... so there were no files or documents... if he wanted to rebuild it, it would take another 20-30 for sure....GOD YOU GIVE A MAN CHOCOLATE AND YOU EXPECT HIM TO STOP EATING IT THEN..... god.... but that armor.... that armor was so cool

DING

I walked into the living room penthouse and i found the girls siting on and just relaxing

Kai'Sa: Oh (Y/N) your back how was it!!!

Akali: Yea you were gone a long time did you have fun

(Y/N): *sob*... *sob* .....

Ahri; (Y/N)! Why are you crying !

Evellyn: Darling! What happened who hurt you!!!

(Y/N): I got a taste of pure happiness today *sob* and now its gone *sob*

AAEK: HUH?

I then fell into Evellyn's lap holding her and crying

(Y/N): *sob* so beautiful it was so beautiful *waaaaaaaah*

Evellyn:Um darling..... i wont punish you for this morning but... what ?

AkalI: What just happend....

TVFemaleAnnouncer: And more on the news for the chaos that was happening this noon! Apparently you can see a picture of something that looks like a robot running through and fighting people in the North side

TVManAnnouncer: DON'T BE RIDICULOUS!!! THAT'S CLEARLY POWER ARMOR

TVFemaleAnnouncer:.... men

(Y/N):
WAAAAAAAAAAAAAAHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHH

Kai'Sa: CALL THE DOCTOR SOMETHING IS CLEARLY WRONG WITH HIM! DON'T WORRY (Y/N) WE WILL HELP YOU!!!!!!!!

Ahri: Are you hurt!!! Why are you crying even more NOW!!!! Where does it hurt!!!

My dream... was forever lost that night!

(Y/N):Goodbye Power Armor you will be missed

PowerArmor: Good bye (Y/N) ! It was a pleasure

Evellyn: He is making no sense!!!! Maybe he hit the head!!! AKALI DID THE DOCTOR ANSWER!!!

Akali: I am going on my bike IL BRING HIM IN 5 MIN!!!!!!

.... i kinda overdid it... didn't i

CHAPTER 48 (Blood Rage)

Wow people got horny because of Swain lol

Ryze POV:

Ryze: So why do you keep calling your friend those names ?

(Y/N): What names ?

Ryze: You know what i mean

(Y/N): Ah you mean Gaysuo, Suckyuo, Lameyuo, Smaldickyuo

Ryze: Umm....

(Y/N): Ah wait wait i have a list on my phone its 239 entries! So next is Fuckyuo and then.....

Ryze: This is going to be a long session.....

Evellyn:

Evellyn: So darling still refusing to leave his room.....

Kai'Sa: Yea... he barely eats.... i had to force him to eat half a bowl of soup... girls i am starting to worry....

It's been three days since darling came back from his meeting.... And its not good. After that night of crying he just refuses to leave his room and if we try to get him out he just yells "A man's dream" and start crying again....

Akali: What do we do.... i have no ideas anymore we tried anything...

Evellyn: How about we try another doctor...

Kai'Sa: Evellyn none of them want to come anymore.... especially after what you did to the last two...

Evellyn: And what did you expect! They keep saying he is fine!!!

We had already 10 doctors come.... after the eight one told me he is fine and its probably just depression i started to lose my temper... its clear he is suffering and we cant help him... i don't know how to help him

Kai'Sa: Did you try Yasuo ? What did he say

Akali: Aperently he has no idea... he tried to call him but (Y/N) just screamed 'leave me alone while i suffer....."

No no no this cant continue like this.... who.... who do i ask .....

DING

Ahri: Girls i am back!!!

Evellyn: And !

Ahri: Well i went to the coffee shop... but the worker there sad he was with some old man..... is he still Evellyn: Yes dear...

Ahri: Oh no....what do we do

Mundo: Sounds like depression to Mundo

AAEK:WHERE DID YOU COME FROM!!!!

Mundo: Mundo has maste... *guaaah*

Evellyn: I will murder you!

Mundo: NO NO NO WAIT EVELLYN WAIT DON'T MURDER MUNDO

Kai'Sa: Yes don't murder Mundo... let me get a turn

This bastard took darling to see Seraphine... i will make sure he dies a slow and painful death! BUt first... first

Ahri: Let me get his family first..... he should watch them all die

Akali: You can take my bike

Mundo: WAIT WAIT WAIT!!!! Mundo can help with (Y/N)!!!!

.....

Evellyn: *growl* How

Mundo: Well to Mundo knows how to help

Ahri: *growl* speak

(Y/N) POV

Ahhhhh my dream.... the Man's dream.... how can you leave me *sob sob*..... oh god....

Knock knock

Evellyn: Darling...

(Y/N): *sob* go away.....

Ahri: Ah... ummm... we have a present for you....

(Y/N): Unless its my about my partner then i don't care *sob sob*

Akali: P-p-partner.....

Kai'Sa: Ummm its tickets to... Pentakill

twitch

Ahri: Did his ear just twitch..... that is actually very cute

Evellyn: Um yea.... Mundo has some tickets to Pentakill if you *guah*

I just suddenly jumped and hugged Evellyn who was right next to me

(Y/N): PENTAKILL!!! SERIOUSLY!!! They are like the coolest band after Distrubed !!!! I LOVE YOU GIRLS!!!!!!!!

Akali: Seriously.... 10 doctors and all he needed was tickets to a concert....

TIMESKIP

(Y/N): Sorry girls... i really don't know what came over me

Evellyn: Its fine darling... its all fine now.... you are fine *sigh*

We were siting for lunch in the kitchen.... well i was trying to have lunch. Since i was actually siting on Evellyns lap... after that initial hug she refused to let me go... and no matter how much i tried to move she would not allow me

Kai'Sa: But why were you so depressed

(Y/N): Because my partner has fallen.... rest in peace my friend our dream will forever live in our hearts

Akali: Why are you doing a military salute while staring into the distance.....

Crap... i really lost it those few days... cant remember the last time i was that depressed... but more importantly... i am going to Pentakill!!!!!!!!!!!!

Kai'Sa: Hihihi i can see by your face you are looking forward to this!

(Y/N): Yea... i really like them.. but i could never go since i didn't have enough money to buy

Ahri: Well no worries we are going to get VIP seats and you will get to meet them after the show (Y/N): WAIT SERIOUSLY!!!!

Akali: You can be such a fan girl sometimes

(Y/N): Hey! Its Pentakill i don't care!! Wait.....we ?

Evellyn: Of course we are all going

(Y/N):.... um guys i would like nothing more then for you to come with me... but are you sure your OK with that ?

Ahri: Oh common we listen to Metal.... sometimes..... like once a decade.....

Akali: And you want to go so we are fine with it!

(Y/N): OK! Awesome i cant wait! I love you girls so much for this!!!!

Ahri: L-l-l-l-l-l-l-l-l-ll--l-l-l-l-l-l-l-l-l-l-l-l-l-love!!!!!!

(Y/N): Did i just brake Ahri...

Kai'Sa: *whisper* hihihi he loves us... he loves us.... hihihihi (Y/N): Ummmm Kai'Sa....

Akali: *blush* i.... well..... i.....i am going to the gym *blush*

..... wait... I tried to turn towards Evellyn but she just hugged me harder and was stooping me with her head to get a look at her face

Evellyn:.....

...When i think about it.... i never told the girls that i love them did i..... *blush* oh god i am going full red now

TIMESKIP

OK all is ready! I got my rocker clothes on! I got enough smokes! My phone is charged! And i have my favorite jacket for them to sign !!!! Now

just to wait for the girls

And then they all showed up..... holy shit!!!!

(Y/N): Ummm girls..... wow

Ahri: Like what you see (Y/N) *purr* maybe you would "love" to take it off latter

First came Ahri... She had a Black leather jacket with white ripped jeans and knee high black boots. Under the jacket was a pink shirt that was going fantastically with all of that

Evellyn: Darling your drooling all over me

Then came Evellyn... She had a mini red leather jacket that barely went under her chest and a mini black skirt on the bottom... Over her chest she was just wearing a bra that left her whole waist exposed.... and those fishnets.... man.... wow ..... holy

Kai'Sa: Hihi i can already see what i should wear after the Amazon costume

On the top she was just wearing a ripped shirt that exposed half of her stomach. She also had some chains around her neck and down she was wearing some tight leather jeans.... OMG .... how is she keeping her thick ass inside of them....

Akali: Well if you play nice il let you rip it off later *grin*

And man Akali... she was a pure biker chick like this! A small jacket like Evellyn only spikes on the shoulders. On the bottom she had skin tight jeans and man.... that shirt is covering just enough to show her abs and waist... these girls know what like

Ahri: *lick pis* I think your little friend there is awake

Huh.... i looked down and i saw i was having a major Bonner..... Wait ? where is the usual you rang ? " I was enjoying the view! So since we are

finished now YOUUUU RAAAANGGGGG" ah OK cool got me worried there ..... did i just talk to my... again .... fuck this

(Y/N): GOD!!! I cant believe we are going to Pentakill!!! i was never exited for a concert this much

Ahri: Seriously you can be such a child sometimes

(Y/N): You have no right to say that to me

Ahri: Well... i would "love" for you to explain that just "love" it

....OK.... i am getting dangerous vibes here.... and not the usual ones... something is wrong with Ahri. And i was not apparently the only one who thought that since Evellyn gave her a look as well.....

(Y/N): Ahri you OK ?

Ahri: Oh i am lovely! I just lovely! *smile* I "love" that you worry about me

....I don't know why... but i am feeling a chill go down my spine.... and not the good one

TIMESKIP

(Y/N): Wow these seats are amazing.... its like when i came to your concert!

Ahri: I am so glad you "love" them!

.... again..... what is going on here... and now even Akali is looking towards Ahri with a frown

Kai'Sa: Well it should start in a few minutes, so whose your favorite!

(Y/N): Oh i cant decide !!! But defiantly between Karthus and Sona !

Evellyn: Sona really ?

(Y/N): Yea! She is amazing piano player so she really brings that classic sound to their music

Akali: Ohhhh really are you sure its not her boobs that bring amazing sound

(Y/N): Ummm... i.... *blush* never noticed

crack SHIT!!!! My hand

I suddenly felt a huge spike of pain coming down from my wrist when i looked i saw Ahri holding it... shit shit !!!!

(Y/N): Ahri.... that.... hurts

Ahri: Huh.... oh sorry

She let it go... but its actually going a little blue now.... what hell is going on with her. The rest of the girls didn't notice anything yet... fuck is it broken....whats happening

And then before i could think about this more the lights went out and there he was.. .

Karthus: LADIES AND GENTLEMEN!!!!!!! ARE YOU READY TO FUCKING ROCK!!!!!!!!

Fans: YEA!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

Karthus: ROCK ON!!!!!!!

Unlike KD/A they always start their music like this. And then members gradual come onto the stage as the music goes!!! OH there is Borick....man.....i could swear he looks like... no... common... seriously.... you cant be...

Then came Mordekaiser and Olaf!!! Shit so awesome!!! Olaf was really going that epic Viking Style with that beard. And man Mordekaiser is HUGE!!!! The guy is like 210 !!!! And then the piano was heard and Sona came.... fuck man still beautiful as the first time i saw her 5 years ago...

TIMESKIP

Evellyn: You are pretty calm darling, i was expecting you to jump around like a little kid right about now

(Y/N): Hey! I am 27 years old i believe i can control my emotions if i chose to

And then we walked into the Pentakill dressing room.... i can honestly say i lost all my pride there (Y/N): OMG!!!!! YOU GUYS ARE AWESOME!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

Akali: Can control his emotions a ?

Kai'Sa:I find it very cute actually

And i went red right away.... god so embarrassing. But before i could suffer Karthus was in front of me with a smile

Karthus: All good my man! Fans screaming how much they love us is never a bad thing! The name is Karthus pleasure to finally meet you (Y/N)

(Y/N): Y-y-y-y-y-y-you know my name!

Olaf: Of course we know! We heard about you from Mundo and we just had to meet the guy who can survive the KD/A

Kai'Sa: Oh come on Olaf we are not that hard

Then suddenly Mordekaiser was in front of me and he just put a arm on my shoulder. The guy was famous for almost never talking and being very quiet. Then he looked towards Evellyn who just made amused smirk and then back to me

Mordekaise; You are very brave little man

Evellyn: HEY!!!!

Which just made me start laughing with all of them. Then i noticed Borick.... he actually pulled his hat down to hide his face.... which made me stare even more

Olaf: Oy Borick don't be like that ! Say hello

He just grunted as a hello.... yea not going to work

(Y/N): Next time i am paying 3 dollars

Borick: You snot nose brat! You should be happy i let you even pay 40 !!!!

Which made everyone just stare at us in shock and then the laughter started in full again

(Y/N): Seriously man Borick.... couldn't you go with something more i don't know... better

Yorick: Oh shut up... For a huge fan its amazing you cant recognize a member even though you buy fruits from him every day

Olaf: Hahahah you got figured out!!!

We all started laughing again and then i saw her.... Sona was just siting there smiling and then she looked my way which made me go full crimson

(Y/N): H-h-h-h-hello miss Sona im a huge fan!

Karthus: Oh my! Long time since i saw someone stutter in Sona's presence like that

She just made a smile and started tapping on your phone.... yea she was mute. Which made her even more amazing being able to play like that

Sona: *" Its a pleasure to meet you (Y/N)! But are you sure you should be going that much red with the girls behind you"*

Akali: Oh its fine !

Kai'Sa: Because he is still ours!

Evellyn: Although i will have to punish you latter

Which made me go even more red and all of them were laughing even harder

CRACK When i turned around i saw Ahri holding a broken doorknob.... that look.... what the hell is going on.... i am starting to sweet

Karthus: Well you need to join us for some drink after this! How about it fine with all of you

Evellyn: Umm... yea no worries...

Evellyn was also looking towards Ahri....

(Y/N): Yea... sure.. Ah sorry where is the bathroom

Morde: Down the hall and to the right

(Y/N): Thanks il be back in the moment

I found the bathroom pretty easily... I just needed to wash my face and chill. Not am i only meeting my favorite band... Ahri is acting very strange. As i finished washing my face and raised my head looking at the mirror... all breath went out of me (Y/N): AHRI!

She was right behind of me but before i could even react she just grabbed me and pushed me to the wall. *crash*

(Y/N): *guah* Ahri it hurts *cough cough*

All breath out of me was kicked out.... i couldn't breath and she was pushing so hard i could feel my bones straining on the places she was touching

Ahri: You love me right.... so why.... why are you looking at Sona like that

(Y/N): Ahri.... i cant .....breath *cough*

Ahri: NO no its not your fault... its her... yes il take care of her latter

Those eyes... her irises are narrowed... what going on the last time she was like this was during heat.... but this..... this just feels wrong

Ahri: *snif* oh you just smell so delicious...

And then she bit me... ripping out a piece of my shoulder when she pulled back

(Y/N): AHhhhhhhhhhhh! Ahri what are you... this hurts... STOP!!!

Ahri: Ah you are so delicious....

This is not normal i am seriously scared here... this is not even the biting she was giving me during that night she seriously ripped out a piece of my flesh now.... shit shit shit.... Then i saw her teeth.... they were not human anymore her canines were extended as she was looking at me with those eyes even her tails were out.... this was not some play.... this was not her in heat.... she was going to kill me

Ahri: Don't struggle *snif*.... ah i cant control myself..... ah i just want you

(Y/N): No! Stop!! Stop it!!!

I was able to somehow free one of my hands and i started pushing it away.... but then she just smirked and with one fluid motion... broke it

CRACK

(Y/N): AHHHHHHHHHH!!!!!!!!!

Ahri: AHahah yes yes scream for me my prey!

I was on the floor trying to crawl away... not only was i bleeding from my neck my arm was bent in a wrong way.... but it was no use she just grabbed my legs and pulled me back. Then i felt her breath on my ear and she spoke

slowly Ahri: AHhhh... your blood smells so good.... he he he.... i will eat you tonight we will become one!

...I am dead.... i knew at this moment that i would die.... there was just no other way to survive this. I was turned to face her... and that face... this was not Ahri... i only saw lust and hunger.... i guess i really am going to

SMASH

Suddenly Akali was above me doing a droop kick and sending Ahri flying to the wall

Kai'Sa: (Y/N)!!! OMG NOOOOOOO!

Evellyn: He is bleeding!!! Get him to the hospital NOW!

Akali: Girls!!! SHE IS GETTING BACK UP

Kai'Sa: Oh no.... blood rage.... why!!! You will need me

Evellyn: GO! He will bleed out if you don't hurry !!!

Kai'Sa: FINE! Don't hold back!!!

The last thing i saw... was Ahri standing up with her eyes completely red and screaming

Ahri: GIVE ME BACK MY (Y/N) !!!!!!

... after that it all went dark

Evellyn POV:

Akali: This is bad.....

That's a understatement... Ahri is going blood rage on use.....

Ahri: GIVE HIM BACK GIVE HIM BACK!!!!!!!!

The last time this happened.... Akali almost died... I was in the hospital for 2 weeks and Kai'Sa was in a coma for 3 days..... Her nails were already growing out and her eyes were shining the red color... not to mention the power... is breaking everything around the aura alone is just enough to knock a normal person out cold

Evellyn: Akali..... we cant hold back...

Akali: You are telling me... i still remember last time... we tried to hold back and we almost died

Evellyn: She still hasn't awaken fully so we have a chance ....

Akali: I saw what she did to (Y/N).... i have no problem kicking her ass now

Evellyn: Me to

After she heard (Y/N) name she just screamed and charged at us..... we will be lucky if only the Concert Hall gets destroyed

CHAPTER49 (I will never leave you)

Still in a pissed of mode today so i have no idea what i am going to write now

Ryze POV:

Ryze: So your telling me.... your penis can talk

(Y/N): Yes.... i know it sounds strange... ok let me show you... now where is that special folder of Evellyn on my phone

"YOU RAAAAAAAANG"

Ryze:.....

(Y/N): You heard it didn't you

Ryze: I-i have no idea what you are talking about

(Y/N): Then why did your eye's go wide

Ryze: Today's session is over!!

Camille POV:

Mundo:Like Mundo says Mundo has no idea what you are talking about

Camille: Mr. Mundo lets not play any game

I was sitting in the office of Mundo the manager of KD/A. I wanted to question him about the incident that happened last night... but he was playing crazy

Camille: Sir! Several witnesses confirm that a vastaya that looked like a fox was involved with a incident last night! Not to mention a few of them have also described two members of the same KD/A group fighting her

Mundo: Well if Mundo understands correctly these are all speculation... Mundo see's you have no proof only vague descriptions

Cammile: MR. MUNDO! The whole area plus the concert hall have been destroyed last night! There are over 79 people injured and 4 dead! Lets stop the games!!!

Mundo: Like Mundo said! You have no solid evidence. So Mundo will now say good bye he is very busy. You can show yourself out !

After that his assistant showed me to the front of the building.... this is not going as planed. Not only can i not do a open investigation because of a certain someone! I cant even use my full resources because it will draw attention to me.... and after what happened to Officer Vi nobody wants to even smell this case anymore....

I hate my job!

Evellyn POV:

Dr. Shen: OK say 'Ahhhh' one more time

Ahri: Ahhh

Dr. Shen: Good.... everything is fine! And the bruises and marks will disappear by tomorrow thanks to your healing.

Dr. Shen was just finishing up with checking on Ahri... i am glad to hear that no permanent damage will be done. Still seeing her siting on the bed in all of those bandages was hurting me.... but we didn't have a choice last night.

Dr.Shen: Miss Evellyn are you sure you don't want a check up

Evellyn: No i am fine i just have a few scratches and burn marks nothing serious... Dr. can you wait for me outside i want to talk to Ahri.

He just nodded in understanding and left the two of us siting..... She looked so dejected, ever since she woke up this morning she hasn't said a single thing and has only be staring at the floor with her ears down

Evellyn: (Y/N) woke up half a hour ago.

That actually made her ears twitch and she looked towards me finally.... that look was full of fear

Ahri: Is....is he

Evellyn: He is alive.... his hand is broken and his shoulder is going to neen some time to recover the skin but he is fine dear

Ahri: I.....i am.

Evellyn: No! I don't need your sorry dear..... why ? Why did it happen....

Ahri: I don't know..... i really don't know *sob*

Ahri was now crying while holding her face in her hands..... and i cant do anything now. She knows what she has done.... and only darling can fix this..... but the way he looked at her last night.

I don't know if darling will ever be able to stand next to Ahri again.... i love Ahri.... but darling ever since he came to our lives.... my life... it changed all. I am actually now looking forward to something every day when i wake up instead of just going day to day..... how will this play out in the end i have no idea..... and if he find out about our past.... will he still stay with us

Akali:

CRASH* *BAM

... Another building fell down.... we really went crazy last night.

I was walking through the area from last night.... the building's were either destroyed or burned down and the road was so damaged it would be impossible to fix it before breaking it down completely....

Apparently Mundo has some connections and he said we can skip everything if we pay for all the damages... that's not so bad we have more money than we could ever spend... So its better to waste that then our time in courts and hearings

Random1: Holy... look at the wall... looks like

Random2: It wend through a army of scissors

..... I know she wasn't not in control.... but if we were even a second late (Y/N) would have died.... At least this time we were ready... is still remember the last time she lost control... i almost died.. the only reason i was alive in the end was because of Evellyn...She also went into blood rage and those 2 duked it out..... i hear that city is still repairing damages and its already been 2 years since then

But why did she go now.... i mean i have been feeling more to violent tendencies but nothing special..... or is it just a prelude... telling us its just a question of time before we all lose control

Garen POV:

Garen: Mam! Chief Office Camille is looking into the incident from last night

Leona: *Tch*

Xin Zhao: Should we take care of her ?

I am still amazed how Xin can say that with a straight face.... i know he always tried to be the teachers pet.... but bro come on

Leona: No..... at least not for now

Garen: Mam!..... Should we really ignore this....

Xin Zhao:I have to agree with him mam.....

Yea when we came last night to the scene..... fuck.... so much destruction... and apparently this was not bad. I don't want to imagine how it would be if they went full power

Leona: For now yes....lets give it some time. If it happens again. You know what to do

Garen & Xin: MAM! Yes mam

Leona... the guardian of Piltover who can stop a tank by herself. Is famous for having a soft spot for her sisters children.... i just hope this soft spot doesn't bite her.... or (Y/N) later in the ass

(Y/N):

(Y/N): I can cut my own apples Kai'Sa....

Kai'Sa: Its OK just relax and il feed you

I woke up about a hour ago in the hospital... according to doctor my hand is broken and a good chunk of my shoulder and neck have been bitten off. He said they are using some extra expensive potions that would speed up my recovery but its going to take at least a week for my arm to get fixed.

What... what the hell happened last night.... that was not Ahri.... the way she acted the way she treated me.... it was scary.... she was going to kill me

Kai'Sa: Are you OK ?

(Y/N): Huh.... yea fine !

Kai'Sa: You were just kinda staring to the wall

Before i could answer Evellyn walked in... my whole stomach just turned when i saw those bandages all over her arms....

(Y/N): Evellyn are you....

Evellyn: I am fine darling just a few scratches. Same with Akali nothing to worry about... listen darling we need to

Kai'Sa: NO!!!!!!!!!!

Then Kai'Sa screamed in hysterical rage... tears were going out from her eyes and her look was begging Evellyn to stop talking

Kai'Sa: NO! YOU CAN NOT!!! DON'T TELL HIM!!!!!

Evellyn:... sweetie I have to... me and Akali talked and its

Kai'Sa: NO!!! (Y/N) don't listen to hear!!! She isn't talking straight

Kai'Sa was so scared... She was looking at me with such pleading eyes... begging me to refuse Evellyn.... but i knew..... i had to know this. So i just used one of my good hands to pull her in for a kiss

(Y/N): It's OK Kai'Sa..... will never hate you

Kai'Sa: But.... but.!!

(Y/N):It's OK.... hey can you go and buy me some smokes ? I am really want to have one

At first she didn't want to go... but after a few moments she just nodded and left... still looking at Evellyn begging her not to speak... and Evellyn... she looked so broken... so scared of what she was about to talk to me about

(Y/N): Is this about your past....

Evellyn: Yes.....

She then came and sat next to me.... just looking down to the floor. I was going to give her time... this is something that can not be rushed

Evellyn: Darling.... what do you.... do you know about the Rift

And all thought left my mind then... as i was repeating that name

(Y/N): The..... yea

Evellyn: Can you tell me what you know...

No no come on... that's impossible....but the scared look she was having..... was telling me it is

(Y/N): The Rift...its said.... its said that it was a dimension....right a different dimension... a

Evellyn: A prison....

(Y/N): Evellyn.... the rift has been gone for.... 18 years already... it has

Evellyn: It was destroyed by a person called Aurelion sol... he was the strongest person there... nobody could fight against him... he was a god basically...

(Y/N): Evellyn how do you....

It all started to make sense... the way they act... the reason how strong they are... how talks of murder and torture come so easy to them... while a simple gesture of kindness effects them so greatly ....

(Y/N): You... all of you... have been trapped inside....

She just nodded

(Y/N): But... your age

Evellyn: I stooped counting after a few Millennium...

(Y/N):But....

Evellyn: Me and Ahri know each other for over three Millennium... we have been some of the first trapped inside there.... i first saw Kai'Sa a few century's ago... and Akali has been with us for only 70 years... she is the youngest one... still not a full century old

This is a joke right.... this is a freaking joke

Evellyn: The Rift... is a battleground. It was made by people unknown and there were no rules in getting trapped inside. I got imprisoned in as punishment... same with Ahri.... Kai'Sa found herself inside after escaping from the Void....And Akali.... the first time we meet Akali she was 17 years old... Apparently it was during the war of Ionia that she stumbled inside by accident...

(Y/N): Wait wait... but but you don't even age... I mean you look like

Evellyn: I know..... It's because we stayed inside for to long... Only Akali showed some little difference in these past 18 years.... and it looks like she aged only 1 year... nothing more... so the ages that are written on our contracts are the ones who work the best for our looks

(Y/N): You....

Evellyn: It was a battleground. Every day we would fight and murder each other. Every day your soul purpose... your only entertainment was to fight and kill. I don't know how many times i killed Ahri and she killed me. Kai'Sa was not any different... i found her cold attitude very annoying then.

Wait killed... what... what is he

Evellyn: And then the next day.... you would be alive and well... to fight again. It was our life... it was our purpose... until that annoying brat came *smiles*

(Y/N):..... Akali

Evellyn: Me, Ahri and Kai'Sa were having a free for all in the middle of the plains, it was i have no idea what battle in the row we were not counting.... Until Akali just shows up out of the blue in front of us. She got transported there. It was nothing strange for children to show up. And i was ready to kill her... to satisfy my need for blood. But then i noticed that smell. She had food! I haven't tasted food in ever since i got trapped.

No food.... no water.... just murder and fighting

Evellyn: That was the first moment we all just stooped... and Akali the slow child that she always was not understand where she was just offered to share.....

(Y/N): You stooped fighting then..... didn't you

Evellyn: Yea.... its like we remembered there was something more then killing. After that every time we would revive we would meet up.... we weren't really getting along at first... but we gradually learned to like each other... And after 70 years after that day... The rift got broken... and we were all kicked out

(Y/N): Evellyn....

She was crying now.... tears were going down her checks.... those beautiful eyes that looked like they never cried were doing a full waterfall

Evellyn: Finally we were free... So we went our separate ways... And it was so awfully, the world changed so much... everything changed so much... But after a couple of years i calmed down. I wanted to go back to the rift.... i didn't know this world. But then hahaha i saw Ahri on the TV as a pop star.... Can you imagine... The "Red Eyed Beast" the lady who killed over millions of times was singing pop songs?.... i had to try it

Yea.... i actually did some research on the girls a couple of months ago... Ahri showed up about 10 years ago on the network and Evellyn fast right behind her

Evellyn: But there was still emptiness... so 7 years ago Ahri finds me... and Tell's me "Lets find those two brats and make a group like in there" and after that.... you can read on the net....thats when KD/A became. A name that will always remind us of our origin... Kill, Death., Assist

(Y/N): That name..... but wait... Ahri last night she...

Then all light left Evellyns eyes... and she was scared again... no this was worse i know this look... this was a look that meant everything to her.... this was the part she was afraid to tell the most

Evellyn: We.....we still.... we still have urges darling..... to kill.... to murder..... it was our way of life.... We stayed in contact with a few people.... some of them just lost it.... and got killed or killed them self... we call this "Blood Rage". We just lose all control and go back to like we were in the Rift.... For Kai'Sa it happened about 10 years ago... apparently she found a father figure and he was killed by some organization.... so she lost it and took her revenge. For me it was 2 years ago when Ahri went to blood rage again... i saw that Akali was about to die and i lost it

(Y/N): Wait! 2 years ago.... you mean the earthquake in Bundle city was....

Evellyn: It was us.... now it happens again with Ahri... i don't know why and... i am sorry.... i am sorry.... please don't hate her we cant control it when it happens..... *whisper* don't leave us

Yea... this was done. She was not going to say anything anymore.... she was now just looking down the floor and not moving. My strong Evellyn.... the lady he would do anything for her family with pride on her face was begging me... As i turned i also saw that Kai'Sa and Akali were there... Kai'Sa just had this dead emotionless look... like she gave up.... like she knew i was just going to pick up and leave... While Akali was turned to the wall with her fists clenching, even thought she seems calm at first, i can tell she was shaking.... they were waiting for my answer

The Rift.... yea.... i know about it..... a dimension that used to trap people... At first it was used as a prison next to the Void banishment.... but apparently they lost control of it about 300 years ago and it was just grabbing people at

random. And then it just all stooped 18 years ago. A couple of people came out admitting they were from the Rift... and i didn't really pay any attention to them so i don't know where they are now... but these girls... they..... *sigh*..... i really need to see a shrink more for these next words

(Y/N): You know.... i always liked my women older

They were all looking at me in shock.... well more like are you crazy but *guaah* Evellyn just suddenly jumped on me and was hugging me not letting me go... Kai'Sa just fell to her knees and started to cry. And Akali had a huge smile on her face full of tears

Ahri: You... you don't .... hate us

And then i saw Ahri standing one the door... she was full in bandages and bruises... it was clear Evellyn and Akali did a number on her... her eyes were full of fear and tears. And she was doing anything not to brake

(Y/N): Well i have to say, i know how violent you like to get... but last night was a little much... so lets just stick to the usual love biting ans spanking... no more ripping and breaking please

.....Really a joke... a joke at this moment.... fuck. But i don't know what else to say.... there is nothing else that i can say.

Ahri: I AM SORRY!!!! *sob*

thud

Evellyn was able to move out at the last moment just as Ahri fell down on me screaming with her head into my chest

Ahri: I am sorry i am sorry i am sorry i am sorry i am sorry i am sorry

(Y/N): Ahri.... its fine. I don't hate you

Ahri: *sob*I will never hurt you again *sob* i promise *sob* just don't leave me please

Some people may say i am selfish.... but i don't care. They even may call me a monster for ignoring their murders and killings. They can call me what ever the fuck they want because i will never leave these girls. These girls have helped me... have helped me grow and have given me a place... me a powerless without a spot in this world. These girls who are so strong... are actually so weak and fragile in their hearts.... so i will do anything that i can for them...

Then i just hugged Ahri tighter and looked towards the rest of them

(Y/N): Don't worry....I will never leave you... any of you. You are my everything

Then all of them rushed into us.

(Y/N): Oi!!!! WAIT!!! MY ARM IS STILL.....

But they didn't care

thud

(Y/N): OH GOD! Not all at once..... nuuuurseee

CHAPTER 50 (And What If She Is)

Chapter 50... wow so many already

Ryze POV:

(Y/N): And that why you should never and i mean never do that! Its disgusting!!!!

Ryze: I... i just added cream and sugar to my coffee

(Y/N): EXACTLY! ITS BLASPHEMY!!!!

Ryze: ..... *sigh*

(Y/N) POV:

Ekko: *Man every time some shit happens with you*

(Y/N): Yea.... sorry i just cant play today

Yasuo: *Its OK bro we understand... we will talk latter, bye* Ekko:*Bye*

Well i feel bad for not being able to play with them tonight... but i cant do nothing about it my arm was still fucked up... We came back from the hospital two days ago and even thought the situation was mostly back to normal i can still feel the tension is the air....

But seriously the Rift..... i don't even want to imagine what they went through... I don't know who is more crazy... them for coming from a place like that or me ignoring all of that.... *sigh*

It came time for dinner. Which meant it was a time of blushing for me. Since one of my arms was fucked up Ahri took it upon herself as the one

responsible to cut all my food and feed me.... it didn't help that she was teasing me non top

Ahri: Awww was that to hot for you! Let me blow on it

(Y/N): How come you guys all already healed.... but i have to suffer here

They were just giggling... sight.. i had enough of this. But as i raised my arm to take the fork away from Ahri she just suddenly widened her eyes and backed off drooping the fork on the table

Ahri: Ah..... sorry it just slipped hehe

....Yea... she didn't touch me even once since we came back. I noticed it yesterday, so i wanted to try to grab her hand but she just snapped it away and power walked making a excuse she needs to go to the bathroom.... i need to fix this somehow Akali: So i was thinking! The next three days we are free so how about we go somewhere

Kai'Sa: Oh how about we spend it just here relaxing

Ahri: Oh oh !!! Better yet lets go to a hotel and do nothing just be pampered all day!

Evellyn: Then you are already in hotel dear

..... crap..... Lets hope i am wrong

(Y/N): I actually need to leave tomorrow

..... No i was not wrong... sight. They were just looking at me now... that look... it was the same when they told me about the Rift like they were afraid i will just go and never come back

(Y/N): Girls i will be back! Its just my sisters birthday and i have allot of making up to do! Don't worry just 2 or 3 days tops

Yea it was not helping..... wait Kai'Sa don't get your eyes all teary..... fuck i really didn't want to do this....

(Y/N): Do you want to come with me ?

AAEK: YES!

..... God..... no..... I am not hating the girls coming with me... its just i know i am going to get so much embarrassment for those few days of them together with my family..... sigh

(Y/N): Il call them latter and tell to them to prepare the guest room... *sigh*

Kai'Sa;Oh ! But if its your sisters birthday we need to buy something!!!

Akali: Oh! I got a general idea of last time, but what do you think

(Y/N): Ah no its not Kata its the younger one Casi

Ahri: Then ? What does she like?

Evellyn: Maybe some elegant designer clothes

(Y/N): AH ! Just be careful she is a snake vastaya. So she doesn't have legs just her tail

They were now looking at me in shock... oh yea i never really explained it

(Y/N): Well you know Diana is my Step-mom. Kata and Casi are from before her marriage with dad. And her previous husband apparently had vastaya blood and it just manifested in her

Kai'Sa: That's good to know.... wait the are your step-sister ?

(Y/N): Umm yea?

..... why do i suddenly feel this will be much worse.... yea those looks are telling me everything..... SERIOUSLY!!!! How sick in the head do they think i am!!!

TIMESKIP

(Y/N): OK! So lets go over the rules again !!!

As we were pulling up to the driveway and getting out i wanted to go thorought the basic stuff one more time with them Akali: *sigh* No talking about Jhin

Evellyn: No talking about our bedroom plays

Ahri: No talking about Seraphine

Kai'Sa: And no baby pictures...

AAEK: We refuse the last one

.....motherfucker....these are going to be very very three long days

DING DONG DING DOOOOOOOOOONNGGGGGG DI

....And this useless handyman! I thought we had the talk last time

Diana: Coming!

The door just opened with Diana standing... she was full housewife mode with her favorite blue overalls and baking powder all over her face

(Y/N): Don't you dare woman! We will act like adults now lets just.....

Diana: My little pterodactyl !!!!!

Yep no choice she just jumped on me and started kissing me on the cheek and hugging me... while the girls were just laughing behind me non stop... oh god... wait shit my arm (Y/N): Ow ow ow Diana!! Watch the arm

Diana: Oh my what happened ! Did you get on that monster machine again

(Y/N): Umm... i slipped in the bathroom

Yea that look was screaming suspicion... but luckily little bro to the rescue came running and hugging me

Mike: BIG BROOOO!!!!

(Y/N): Crap MIKE!!! Easy with the hugs

Kai'Sa: WOW! He is so much alike you!!!

Akali: Yea its you just taller

Which made them all start snickering. Mike then just looked towards them with a frown, and then just turned and left Ahri: Ummm.... did we maybe...

(Y/N): No no don't worry girls

Diana: That's right he is autistic your just strange to him

Evellyn: Oh.... we forgot.... sorry darling he probably felt bad when we started laughing

(Y/N): No worries its not yo that's just how he is with new people.

Diana: Come!!! come inside lets get you all something to drink! OHHHH I AM SO HAPPY!!!! So many people are here hihihi

As we sat down in the living room my father came inside

Dad: Well hello everyone and is that my son there! Wow 2 times visits in a year that's a shock

(Y/N): Very funny you old bastard.... when you going to fix the bell

Dad: When you grow another 3 inches

The next moment Evellyn was holding me while i was yelling some obscene stuff to my Dad.... he always knew how to push my buttons

Dad: Hahah ignoring the short-stack pleasure to finally meet you ! I hope my idiot son is not to much trouble

Ahri: Pleasure is all our Mr. (L/N) and he is no trouble at all

Akali: Except when he doesn't call after disappearing for a whole day Kai'Sa; Or constantly gets in trouble blaming bad luck

Dad: Does he still make you drink coffee black without anything

Evellyn: Yes.... and i liked whipped cream on it

And then they all started laughing..... god.... they are going to pick one me all of this time aren't they.... why did i have to come here

(Y/N): Where are the girls ?

Diana: Oh still in school! They will be back soon

Ahri: Anyway we have some presents for all of you

Diana: Oh dear's you shouldn't have

Yea the girls bought something for all of them once they heard my explanations. Diana was just saying no no no but relenting in the end. And Dad was just accepting it like a gentlemen. Even Mike came and it was clear Akali was his favorite pick with the game-pad she got him.

Dad: And no presents from you son ?

(Y/N): Me being here is a present enough and *fake cough* not telling Diana *fake cough* you have been giving Kata money for you know *fake cough* what

Dad: And you being here is the best possible thing a father can get

Oh wow... i got his eye to twitch...heheh

(Y/N): The student has become the master !

Dad: True on that

Diana: Just ignore them girls. They are in their own world

Kata: Yo im back !.... HEY!!!!!

Akali: Sup Kid! Whats up

Kata: Akali! So cool to see you, all of you

Kai'Sa: Happy to see you to sweetie

Kata just came in and without even giving her brother a hello she just ran into Akali..... sight am i that low on priority list.... Well Casi was always the one who would be the most happy to se me.... wait where.....

Casi: BROTHER!!! YOU CAME!!!!!

(Y/N): wait waIT WAIT!!! DON'T JUMP! DON'T JUUUUUU *GUAAAAAAAAAH*

Yep.... no use. We were already on the floor and she was coiled around me

(Y/N): Casi! My.....arm.....stop.....cant breathe.....help Ahri: (Y/N) are you OK!

Kai'Sa: She really is a....

Then Casi just lifted her head from me and was looking around the room.... you could see she was not processing what was going on until her eyes fell on Evellyn

Casi: KYAAAAAAAAA! Your Evellyn!!! I am such a FAN!!!!!!!

And i was let go in a violent way..... While Casi just got of me and was now holding Evellyns hands who just had a amused smile

Casi: I have been watching you since you made your appearance i even have a same pair of glasses like you were using before KDA!!!!!!

Evellyn: Well that is nice dear. If you want i could sign them for you

Casi: REALLYYY!!!!!!!!!! Don't go anywhere il be back in a moment Kata and Akali were crouching next to me while Akali was poking me in the face

Akali: Oi..... (Y/N) you ok

(Y/N):..... Fml

Daina: Language !!!!

And then they were all laughing.... well except me.... oh god i think my spine is broken now...

TIMESKIP

Well contrary to my complaining i was happy. The girls fit in right away. There was a little awkwardness when we sat but Kata was able to brake it. Now i was just siting on my usual spot... completely red because Ahri was back to her old tricks

Ahri: Say aaaaa

(Y/N):.....aaaa

Kata: Ewwwwwwwwwwwwwwwww

But then i noticed Casi was looking at me and Ahri.... oh crap she is processing now.... crap crap don't say it

Casi: Wait! Is she your girlfriend!!!!!!!!!

(Y/N): *cough* Well umm

All the girls were looking at me with amused expressions now..... oh god i really don't like doing stuff like this but i have a feeling if i don't i will pay for it later

(Y/N): *blush* *ahem* Yes

Akali: I didn't see him go that red in a long time hahahhaha Dad: Son the point is to eat a tomato not become one

Kata: Haha what a dork!!!

..... OK time to fight back!

(Y/N): Oh yea Kata *smile* i forgot

She just twitched... yea she know my smile

(Y/N): Akali saw that bike that she wanted to buy for you again soo...

Akali: Huh ?

Kata: You TRAITOR!!!

slam

Diana: WHAT BIKE!!!!!!!!!! DON'T YOU EVEN THINK ABOUT IT YOUNG LADY!!!! AND YOU!!!!!!!

Wow she was pointing now at Akali.... oh god i love this

Diana: I DON'T KNOW IF YOU THINK BIKES ARE COOL OR WHAT EVER!!!!! BUT ONE MORE TIME I HEAR THIS AND I WILL SPANK YOUR BOTTOM NOW EAT YOUR VEGETABLES

Akali: YES MAM!!!!

Akali was now full red eating the cabbage on her plate while the rest of us were laughing like crazy.... yea i think i will have fun here

After we all finished up dinner. Kai'Sa insisted with helping with the dishes so me as a hurt patient just went for a smoke soon even Kata joined me

(Y/N): Are you sure about this? Diana is still up

Kata: Yea *sigh* she knows now... she doesn't like it but she accepted it... of course if she finds out dad is buying them for me she will murder him

(Y/N): Hahaha your right....

Casi: Dad is buying them for you!!!!

Kata: Oh FFS can you go get a life you little brat

Casi:..... i want to talk to brother

Me and Kata just looked at each other with wonder but then she just walked away with a shrug leaving me and Casi alone

Casi: Ummmmmm

(Y/N): Tell me

Casi: Is she really your girlfriend...

(Y/N): Huh? Why do you ask

Casi: Well... why is she in the room with Evellyn then....and not you

.... Crap.... smart kid... Both of them are

(Y/N): *sigh* its complicated Casi

Casi: It has something to do with your arm ? I can see how she is constantly looking at it with sadness

Very smart kid... i just threw my cigarette and ruffled her hair

Casi: HEY!

(Y/N): Some times you are to smart for you own good! Il see you tomorrow and happy birthday again

After a few moments i was going up the stairs and in just the perfect moment i saw Evellyn coming out of the bathroom

(Y/N): Evellyn can you go to my room tonight.... i want to talk with Ahri

At first she was just looking at me, then she was looking at the door...

(Y/N): Evellyn.... i dont hate her i just want to talk to her

Evellyn:... its not her that i am worried about darling.... what if she.... no never mind i will be next door...

Yea... i saw how she has been looking at us. Even though Evellyn looked the most calm she was constantly watching us... constantly watching Ahri... waiting for just the simplest of signs that she is loosing control

As i entered the room Ahri was turned with her back towards me. She was arranging the bed

Ahri: Hey! I think i will actually sleep on the couch there. Better that then to push each other in

(Y/N): But i would love to cuddle with you

In just a second all her tails were standing straight and she was looking at me with fear Ahri: (Y/N).... no.... i will..... its OK i

(Y/N): Nop!

I just walked towards her. She tried to run away but i was able to grab one of her tails

(Y/N): We are going to sit and we are going to talk!

Ahri: But but...

(Y/N): No buts !!!!

We just finally sat down on the bed next to each other

(Y/N): So ? Why don't you want to touch me anymore.....

Ahri: Because..... because i am afraid... what if i lose control again...

(Y/N): Ahri.... that was....

Ahri: I know why i lost it.... why i entered blood rage Ok now this is new.... the girls told be she had no idea... i guess she did

Ahri: When you told us... you loved us i was so happy. I was so so happy.... but then i started thinking. What if you stop loving us, what if at one moment you don't love me anymore. Then when you meet Sona and you were going so red and blushing so much... something just screamed in my head that you don't love me anymore

(Y/N): Ahri that is.... how did you come to that conclusion

Ahri: It was a very stressful week with work... and then the thing with Seraphine, and then you being depressed those 3 days.... it was just piling up. And during the concert the gate just broke. I remember everything...

(Y/N): Ahri that was not...

Ahri: *sob* Everything (Y/N).... from the way i slammed you to the wall... to the way i ripped out a piece of your neck... to me braking your arm to you resisting and trying to run away with such fear in your eyes.... but i didn't care i just wanted us to be one... even if it meant this... that's what blood rage is. You just lose self control. Its not like Heat..... when i am in heat i can still control myself... make sure i don't really hurt you

(Y/N): Ahri you don't have to explain

Ahri:I do... In blood rage i didn't care... i could stop my self... but i just didn't want to... i wanted you and i didn't care if i hurt you

Shit.... that is messed up.... and now she is afraid it will happen again if she stay close to me...

(Y/N): *sigh* Ahri.... i don't care

Ahri:Huh

(Y/N): it happened.... it was bad... and i was scared... but out of all of you i trust you the most. I know this sounds strange now after all of this. But i know you will never hurt me willingly... and fuck blood rage! In worst case scenario the girl will save me Then i just pulled her in for a kiss. At first she was resisting a little but after a few moment i was laying down on the bed with her on top of me going out of control in my mouth

AHri: You have no idea... how hard it was... not to touch you, to feel you, to kiss you....

(Y/N): i do... i missed your touch

And before i could even say anything else she was already taking off her clothes and pulling down my pants next

Ahri: Then let me make up for it

oh.....ohhhhhhhhhh..... Yay!!!

Akali POV:

Good! I was able to close their door without them noticing me.... When i saw Evellyn entering (Y/N) room i knew what was going on... these past few days we have been keep close watch... but i guess there was nothing to worry about... now i would love to spy on them and get of myself.... but

Akali: Now do you mind telling me why are you peeping on them kid

Kata: You kinda have no right to say that

And there was Kata standing in the shadows next to me... with two giant blades in her hands

Akali: Noxus Crimsons Assasins i presume by the design

Kata:..... is she the one who hurt my brother

Kai'Sa: And what if she is....

Kai'Sa was now standing on our right... i guess she had the same idea like me... and that look... i didn't see that look in her eyes in a very long time

Kata: *sigh* Nothing... its clear he doesn't mind

And then she just relaxed her posture... but there was still edge in the air

Akali: So.... how did a young kid like you become a part of such a dangerous group Kata: My grandfather is overprotective

Kai'Sa: That doesn't answer anything

Shit. Kai'Sa is still on edge... and the kid to.... i need to make them relax somehow are we are going to be like this whole night

(Y/N): *Wait!!! *moan* Ahri not *moans* oh myyy!!!*

Kata: OMG EEWWWWWW!!!!!!

Akali: AHahahahhahah

Kai'Sa: Oh dear.... he knows where we are ! He should at least try to keep quiet

And just like that... all the edge was gone and the atmosphere was relaxed

Kata: Oh Akali how about we go for some drinks!!!

Akali: Ah cool! But don't let your mother! I don't want to be grounded hahahhaha

Kai'Sa: Don't stay up to late girl's

CHAPTER 51 (Me And My Big Mouth)

I have no idea what to do.... lets just start

Ryze POV:

Ryze:.....

(Y/N):.....

Ryze:.....

(Y/N): Why do i have a feeling you don't agree with me

Ryze:..... no actually you should go through the walls with power armor.... i am just having a hard time accepting the rest of this story

(Y/N) POV:

Sera: OMG!!! It's so delicious!!!

(Y/N): Haha i am glad you like it

Sera: What is there not to like! This cake is amazing! And your mother is the one who made it ?

(Y/N): Yep she prides herself in her cake skills

I was siting in Seraphines cell while she was enjoying a piece of cake i brought from back home. We came back yesterday after spending three days there. The girls were actually enjoying them self and i was glad my family liked them.... although i could feel some tension between Kata and Kai'Sa.... but who knows Now it was time for my weekly visit to Seraphine. This was about the 3rd time i see her. The second time she was still pretty much crazy. But today she was completely normal. Apparently she finally

accepted that i will keep my promise and visit every week so she is calm now.

THUD THUD

MentalWorker: *Time is up! You have 5 min*

(Y/N): Yea sorry Sera time to go

Sera: Ah... to bad.....

(Y/N): Come on don't be like that! Just behave yourself and all will be good! You didn't start any trouble did you ?

Sera: No! I kept my promise to you! I personally didn't start any trouble !

.....Oh brother

(Y/N): *sight* What happened....

Sera: *blush* Well this one girl was being mean to me during free time! But i was good i didn't do anything ! I only ignored her!

(Y/N): And ?

Sera: Well she go even more mad! So when she grabbed my shirt i bite off her nose and pulled out one of her eyes with a spoon *smile*

..... HOLY SHIT SCARY!!! And wtf is up with her and biting..... *sigh*

(Y/N): Be good Sera.... il see you next week

Sera: K! See yaaa!!!!

The door behind me closed and the usual security guard was escorting me

MentalWorker: Man you got guts for coming to see her..... it was not a spoon

(Y/N): Huh ?

MentalWorker: She used her fingers.....and it was both eyes

(Y/N):..... HOLY SHIT!!!!!!!!

TIMESKIP

I got out of the taxi at the Dirty Mug. Last time i got driven by Evellyn to Sera but it took me 15 min when we arrived to make sure she wouldn't follow me so its just easier like this. Now finally today after such a long time i can just relax with some DnD....

With all of this chaos these past few days i really didn't have even a moment to my self! At least the girls are back to normal so i don't have to worry about that anymore. It was really touch and grab but for now lets not knock on the wood.

Now after so much stress!!!! Time to finally do something good!!! Ah nothing can go wrong now

thud

(Y/N): Shit! Sorry mam i didn't want to bump into you..... oi.... is that a

As i was thinking in my own little world i bumped into same strangely dressed girl at the entrance to the Dirty Mug. Now i would just apologize and leave.... but she drooped a giant bag and weapons spilled out of it..... is that a freaking bazooka.....and why does it look like a shark....

????: You saw that didn't ya

(Y/N):..... i have no idea what you are talking about ????: *stare*

(Y/N): He-he-he..... can i go now

????: Mmmmm NOP!!! You coming with me!!!!

(Y/N): OH COME ON!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

..... How does this bullshit keep happening to me

TIMESKIP

Braum POV:

Strange (Y/N) should have been here like 2 hours ago....

Garen: Where the fuck is our DM! This is one of those rare days when i am free

Sofia: Come on Garen maybe he just got held up

Marko: Possible chill man! Braum do you have any idea ?

Kai'Sa: Nah brother.... let me check the phone maybe... ah there is a message from him

Sorry flat tire! I wont be able to make it i need to wait for triple AAA

Garen:.... motherfucker and on my free day

Braum: *sigh*.... Wait since when can he drive.....good for him!

(Y/N) POV:

Sarah: And done!

For some reason..... i really want to face palm.... i bet Braum didn't get my message.... and how the fuck did i get myself into this situation

Felix: So tell me again..... why you brought him here

Jinx: He saw my guns!

Graves: ... So you just brought him here

Jinx: Well i couldn't shoot him in the middle of the street

Sarah: Lets just deal with this....

..... This is a dream this must be a dream.... how the fuck did i end up in this kind of situation. Here i was siting in a warehouse on docks tied up to a chair... god i just don't care anymore *sigh*

Sarah: Hey cutie why you sighting so much. Just be good and all will pass without worries. Oh by the way the name is Sarah but people call me Miss Fortune

The girl who introduced her self first was a beautiful red head with freckles..... crap i cant even be mad at her i have a soft spot for redheads

Felix: You know you could have just..... even Graves is not that stupid. Anyway the name is Tobias Felix partner! You can call me Twisted Fate

.....Seriously... do all of these guys have some crazy nicknames.... And this guy looks like he read to much X-men comics and Gambit was clearly his favorite one.... and now he is holding a deck of cards this a joke right ?

Graves: OI!!! I am not dumb! I just have dumb luck! And the name is Graves and tis is Betsy! My gun

.....Nah this people are crazy.... and can you be more of a cowboy! With that beard and naming your big gun.... And how about you give me some of that dumb luck

Jinx: UH UH UH UH UH!!!!!!!

The girl who bumped into me now just raised her hand and looked like she was asking for permission to speak

(Y/N): Um.... yes you the blue haired one....

Jinx: The name is JINX!!! I like to blow things up! I like to blow buildings up oh and i like to blow people up! And this is Fish-bones!!!

Gares: OI! Don't steal my idea of naming a gun

Jinx: UH UH!!!! I DID IT FIRST!!!

Graves: NO I DID !!!

Jinx: NO I DID x2 !!!!

Graves: NO I DID x3!!!!

Sarah: CAN THE BOTH OF YOU SHUT THE FUCK UP!!!!!!!!!!! god.....

(Y/N): You have it hard..... don't you

Sarah: *sigh* You have no idea

The most crazy girl... the one i bumped into had blue hair in very long braided twin tails. Not to mention it was clear she was crazy..... very crazy..... and not the fun bed crazy just crazy

Felix: I have to say partner... your dealing with this pretty well

(Y/N): *sigh* if this append a few months ago i would probably pee myself.... but now.... i am kinda not surprised anymore

Sarah: I can see you have it hard as well....

(Y/N): You have no idea...

sigh I think after this i am just going to stay in my room for the next 2 months.

Graves: Anyway lets go back to the plan!

Felix: Should we really talk to about it in front of our hostage...

Graves: Oh you are right! We better not tell him we are robing the bank

..... The guy named Felix and Sarah just facepalmed. I am starting to feel bad for these two

Jinx: OHHHH RIGHT! Especially not the East Piltover one!

.... Now i want to facepalm. And then suddenly there was a gun on my temple

Sarah: Sorry cutie... no hard feelings but we cant let you go anymore

Motherfucker really..... shit shit shit! OK think just think

Jinx: WAIT!!!!

OK good! That girl will help me its her fault anyway! So lets just hope they will listen to her

Jinx: I brought him here so i get to shoot him *pout*

..... Lets go for DnD i said... what can go wrong i said... Shit i need to do this now!!! THINK! OK i got it

(Y/N): Ummmmm! Can i ask a question

Graves: Shoot!

Jinx: SHOOT!

(Y/N): NO! He meant for me to ask not for you too shoot me! So move that bazooka from my face

Jinx: Awwwww..... i wanted to shot him

Graves: I meant you to shoot him

Jinx: OH.... OK!

I just looked towards Felix who actually looked the most normal one... and i was right since he just sighted.

Felix: *sigh* Let him ask...

(Y/N): That wouldn't be the Piltover East Main bank would it ?

Sarah: Yea why ?

(Y/N): You know its like 2 blocks from the police station.....

SFGJ:..... *stare*

(Y/N): You guys did know that..... right

And then they all looked at Graves... who was starting to sweet

Graves: But! But there is nothing on the Map!!!!

He then lifted the map of the table showing the whole Piltover.... but i guess none of them checked the date in the upper corner

(Y/N):Ummm that Map is from 20 years ago

Sarah; GRAVES!!!! YOU HAD ONE JOB!

Felix: You just needed to buy the MAP! Nothing else to help us prepare

Jinx: Ha ha! Graves is a idiot!!!!

Graves: I bought this one because it was cheaper!!!!!!

Sarah: YES !!!! BECAUSE ITS 20 YEARS OLD!!!!!!!!!!!!!

Jinx: Ha ha!!!!!

(Y/N): Ummm... does that mean you will not shoot me ?

Jinx: Awwww but i wanted to shoot you!!!

(Y/N): Please don't !

Felix: *sigh* Just let him go.... there is no point anymore

Jinx: So no blowing things up tomorrow ! *sob*

Sarah: No.... *sigh*.. our whole plan ruined

Then Sarah just came behind me and untied me... oh god i cant belive i survived this shit.... seriosly for the next 6 months i am not leaving te Penthous. As i was geting readdy to leave i noticed how everyone was down...

Well i gues thats what happens when your plans go down the drain... lets just get out of here. As i started walking outside Jinx was just crouching there crying

Jinx: *sob* no blowing up stuff *sob*

(Y/N): Ummm don't feel bad it happens.... You can probably use it for the south bank next time! Its pretty similar and there is no police station there *smiles* now if you will excuse me i am going

I was walking towards the entrance.... but even though i was walking i was not moving. Then i turned my head and saw that Jinx was holding the back of my jacket... with a crazy happy smile.... oh no

Jinx: YOUR A GENIUS!!!!!

Felix: Oh! If its like that !!!! We can then hit it tomorrow!!!

Sarah: OK all is not lost! We need that money

.....Me and my big fucking mouth.... And then Graves was in front of me with Betsy pointed in my face

Graves: Sorry man! The plan is back on!

(Y/N): Is that a double barrel cannon....

Graves: *Grins* Yes it is!

.....motherfucker

(Y/N): Can i at least get some coffee and a smoke.....

Felix: I think we can arrange that

....sonofabitch... maybe the girls will notice that i am gone for to long and come looking for me.... wait... ah shit out of all of the days.....

Kai'Sa POV:

Akali: So (Y/N) is in the Dirty Mug ?

Kai'Sa: Yea he said that he will probably not come back tonight! He is going to stay over at Garen's they want to try some new game

Akali: Oh cool

TIMESKIP

(Y/N) POV:

I have been trapped here for about 2 hours already. The group of robbers were going over the plan to hit the bank tomorrow and were adjusting their plans.... well Sarah and Felix were. Graves was polishing his gun and Jinx was next to me annoying me..... really really annoying me

Jinx: SO so so !!! Whats your favorite color! Mine is blue! Oh whats your favorite food mine is candy! Oh whats your favorite gun mine is Fishbones but don't tell my other guns!

(Y/N):..... Your crazy you know that

Jinx: HEY! I am not crazy my mother had me tested!

(Y/N): And what did he say

Jinx: He said i was crazy so i blew him up! But you should see my sister! She is the crazy one ..... OH FUCKING GOD JUST SHOOT ME SHOOT ME NOW!!!!!!

Felix: And then we get into the car and that's that

Sarah: Hmmm it will work but this bank is a little bigger.... i don't think 4 people is enough

Graves: What if we shoot some of them

Felix: We should skip the killing if we can

Jinx: OH OH OH!!!! And there was this one time i used duck-tape on a nuclear fusion core !!!! And and and .....

.....I was now looking at Sarah BEGGING HER! To get this girl away from me... and bless her heart she understood

Sarah: Jinx, is the bomb ready ?

Jinx: Aha ! It will go BOOOOOOOOOOM!!!!!!!

Sarah: Double check it just in case

Jinx: OK!

..... thank god!

(Y/N): Thank you.....

Felix: Hehe no worries partner! I do feel kinda bad about all of this you are clearly not a bad guy!

(Y/N): *sigh*.... if i can get out of this alive i wont hold it against you... worst things have happened to me

Sarah: I am kinda having a hard time.... wait a second.... are (Y/N)!!!!!!!!!

(Y/N): Ummm yea.... how do you know that

Then Sarah just came and gave me a huge hug and a kiss on my cheek

(Y/N): Wait wait! Why are you...

Sarah: I saw you against Jhin.... you are my hero

(Y/N): Huh ?

OK now i was confused but her eyes... she was not lying. But then she just got sad

Sarah: My mother was a powerless.. she got hit by Jhin....

(Y/N):... i am sorry....

Sarah: Its OK... it was a long time ago! But when i saw you on that stream against him! I was never impressed more in my life

(Y/N): *blush* Well... it was nothing special he he he

Felix: Well partner why you going red! And Missy Fortune here is looking for a boyfriend

Sara: Felix! *growl*

(Y/N): Ummm sorry but i already have someone in my life

Four of them actually but not going to mention that part

Sarah: Nah i can respect that. Loyalty is a rare breed today! OK we are letting you go

Graves: Wait WHAT!

Seriously! Sarah just nodded and even Graves who wanted to protest just sighted after a couple of moments... yea these people were not bad.

(Y/N): Thank you.... well anyway i should be going

Felix: No hard feelings partner. Now better run before Jinx comes back

(Y/N): Yea! Thanks for letting me go and good luck tomorrow! I would love to help you if i could but i guess its out of my hands

And then i started to walk away again..... but again i was not moving. I turned and saw Sarah who was holding me.... her eyes are sparkling..

Sarah: I think we found our 5th one !

..... Me and my big fucking mouth!!!!!!

(Y/N): No no no !!!! Come on guys i...

And again Betsy was kissing my face

Graves: Welcome aboard!

Jinx: Oh whats going on???

And Jinx came back.... is that a bomb..... and WHY IS IT DONE WITH DUCK-TAPE!!!!!!!!!!

Felix: (Y/N) here just joined us!

Jinx: REALLY!!!! YAY !

SFG & (Y/N): DON'T JUMP AROUND WITH A BOMB IN YOUR HAND!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

.... Me... and my.... big mouth.... can this get any worse

Camille POV:

Camille: So this bandit group is in town ?

It Officer: Yes mam! According to the intelligence we have they should hit a bank tomorrow... we just don't know which one!

Camille: Have all personal on high alert tomorrow! We will be ready at a moments notice! As soon as they hit the bank move out!

.... Yea... i know right.....

Chapter 52 (Now Listen Here Thuts)

Probably going to do another side character bio soon. Allot of them have been introduced and i owe it to the fruit seller.

Ryze POV

Ryze: Your joking right.....

(Y/N):Mmmmm no not really

Ryze:She let you do that to her.....i mean each to their own but....

(Y/N): When she called me professor i just lost all control...

Ryze: So what else does she call you

(Y/N): Yea nice try

Kai'Sa POV:

So if i hit the market first and then go to the perfume store i should still have time to make lunch. And since (Y/N) is probably going to be back bye then he can even help me... good i want to spend some time with him. These past few days i just couldn't get my turn.... and maybe we can try that Rocker outfit

Clerk: Mam!

Kai'Sa: Ah sorry! I got lost in thought

Clerk: No no its OK mam! So this is the amount you want to withdraw right ?

Kai'Sa: Exactly! Thank you very much

As i was picking up the money from the bank clerk i suddenly heard a crash... and is that gunshots

CRASH PEW PEW PEW

????: THIS IS A ROBBERY!!!!

As i turned around i saw five people standing on the entrance. They were all dressed like 80's robbers and were wearing black masks over their faces. Then one of them which looks like a girl just raised a boombox and music started . While the other shoot from his gun again

https://youtu.be/LnSp9rgfel8

????: Everyone stay cool and you wont say hello to Betsy!

....I am really not in a mode for this.... but i better keep it cool for now. We don't need the attention... maybe i should just sneak out when i they are not looking.... huh that one on the right..... his build is very similar to (Y/N)'s..... no that's impossible *Camille POV:*

Officer: MAM! The silent alarm in the Main Piltover South Bank just went off!

Camille: *Grin* Perfect! ALL UNITS MOVE OUT!!!!!!!!!

Officer x200: YES MAM!!!!!!!!

(Y/N) POV:

Sarah: *whisper* So why did we have to put on music again.....

(Y/N): *whisper* Because everything is better with a music theme

Jinx: I don't care this is FUN!!!!!

Felix: *whisper* For someone who dosn't want to do this... you are thinking allot about it to force a music theme.

..... God... he is right.... i really need to increase my sessions with the shrink.

And here we are. We just busted into the bank and Sarah was the first one to shoot in the air....i still cant believe i am doing this.... but man.... for some reason i find the Adrenalin rush enjoyable

Felix: Ladies and Gentlemen please just sit on the floor with your hands above your heads!

Sarah: Nobody move and nobody gets hurt! Simple as that !

Jinx: BUT PLEASE MOVE!!! PLEASE PLEASE!!! Hey you!!!!!

RandomPerson: Hiiiiiii

Jinx: Can you move!!! I want to blow somebody up

The guy just started crying..... sight.... Already my team was moving around. I was in charge of locking up the door and as i did that i picked up my gun and was keeping watch with Graves over the people.

Sarah:Now be a dear and drop your wallet here... oh and i love that necklace

Woman: H-h-h-h-h-h-here just don't shoot me

Sarah started going through the bank customers making them empty their wallets in the bag.

Felix: Why hello there darling! How about you just drop that whole little pile in this here bag maybe with your number as well *wink*

Clerk: Hihihi

Felix was now at the cash clerk desk making them give him their cash..... did that girl just giggle... seriously he needs to teach me that

Jinx: Hop skip... we are going to make thing go BOOOM!!!!!!!

While Jinx went to the back skipping like a little child.... she was finally going to blow something up which made her very happy.

Graves: So me and my partner here are on watch of all of you! If somebody even tries to be a hero your going to say hello to Betsy!

(Y/N): And Grozdana!!! NOW STICK'EM UP!!!

Graves just looked at me... even though he had a mask i could tell he was with a open mouth

Graves: *whisper* What kind of name is Grozdana.....and aren't you enjoying this a little to much

(Y/N): *whisper* What kind of name is Betsy!.... and to tell you the truth... it kinda grew on me

Yea.... definitely increasing sessions with my shrink. But then... i looked over the hostages.... and my blood froze. There she was staring with me wide eyed.. Kai'Sa ARE YOU FUCKING KIDDING ME!!!!!!! No no come on why is she here!!! She never goes to the bank! Oh crap probably wants to go the the Market.... OK! Its all going to be fine ! She just needs to stay quiet and she will be fine! Now if she only doesn't recognize me... but i have my mask on so i should be OK

Kai'Sa POV

That was definitely (Y/N).... he maybe had a mask on.... but i just knew it was him no questions asked..... He is really going to have to explain himself latter... i better make sure he is OK and doesn't get hurt for now..... how did he even get into this situation

(Y/N) POV

Sarah: OK all the hostages are cleared of their possessions

I was paying all my attention on Kai'Sa now.... i had to make sure se was OK. Then Sarah came and Felix joined us as well

Felix: Same with me... and i got three phone numbers so i win

(Y/N):.... you need to teach me how you do that

Felix: *chuckels* Its in the accent my friend in the accent

BOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOM *BOOOOOOOOM*

The whole bank just shoke which made some of the hostages start screaming. But graves just shoot in the air again

Graves: QUIET!!!!

(Y/N): AND STICK'EM UP!!!

Sarah: *whisper* Really ?

(Y/N): *whisper*Kinda always wanted to say that

And then the back door opened and Jinx walked out... completely black from all the smoke

Jinx: ITS DONE!!! I blew it up!!!

Sarah: The door right!

Jinx: Ummmmm..... i want to say yes....

.... Why am i not fucking surprised

Felix: OMG WHAT DID YOU DO!!!!!

Jinx: Wellllllllllll! I blew up the door....but i t was not satisfying so i blew up the safe as well

SFG & (Y/N): WHY!!!!!

Jinx: Because it was not satisfying the first time!

(Y/N): Can i shoot her.....

Graves: Me first

Felix: OK OK !!!! Lets calm down.... is anything left

Jinx: Ummmm about half!

OK that's at least something we didn't lose our whole load....wait..... and why the fuck do i care i don't even need that money!!!!! OH god they are infecting me!

Sarah: OK! Me, Fate and Lonny will go down! Husband and DM stay and watch the perimeter

Then the three of them left for the vault and me and Graves started patrolling... i don't really want to pass by Kai'Sa... but i have to check up on her. As i was passing some people who were just shaking in fear and turning away i finally came upon her..... crap..... She was staring directly at me with a frown on her face

Kai'Sa: Excuse me Mr. DM..... *whisper* really DM....

(Y/N): Yes lady that i see for the first time

Kai'Sa: I need to use the toilet

Yea her look was screaming your coming with me.... *sigh* i can get her to leave at least

(Y/N): Oy! Husband i am taking this thuts to the toilet

Kai'Sa: THUTS ?

Graves: Yea yea go! OY DID YOU JUST MOVE!!! YOU WANT TO KISS BETSY!

RandomGuy; NO SIR!!!

Graves: What! My Betsy is no good for you!!!!

RandomGuy: Hiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiii!!!

I used this chance to grab Kai'Sa and brought her to the toilet. As soon as the door was closed she started screaming and ripped the mask of my face !

Kai'Sa: (Y/N) WHAT ARE YOU DOING!!!!!

(Y/N): Ummm robing a bank *smile*

Kai'Sa:..... *stare*.....

(Y/N): Have i told you how beautiful you look today

Kai'Sa:....*stare*.....

(Y/N): Would you believe me if i told you it all started with a cup of coffee ?

Nop... that stare was getting dangerous.... I spent the next 5 min explaining to her what happened. How i ran into Jinx. Then how i actually gave them advice.... then how my big mouth got me in trouble again.... and again then... She was just looking at me with her mouth open

(Y/N): Ummm Kai'Sa..... can you say something

Kai'Sa: You are simply amazing....

(Y/N): Well thank you

Kai'Sa: THAT WAS NOT A COMPLIMENT!!!!!!!

(Y/N): Umm sorry

Kai'Sa: This cant be happening every time! Every time we lave you alone you get into some shit!

(Y/N): Umm language

Kai'Sa: I THINK I CAN SWEAR AS MUCH AS I WANT TODAY!!! F-f-f-f-f-f-fuck

..... OK Kai'Sa swearing during sex is normal and extremely hot.... but her swearing like this just makes her look so

(Y/N): You are very cute when you try to be bad.... i like it

Kai'Sa: Oh *blush* well maybe we can i don't know go F-f-f-fuck when we.... hey! DON'T CHANGE THE SUBJECT!!!!

Worth a try....OK enough messing around

(Y/N): You need to get out now!!!

Kai'Sa: What i am not leaving you here!!! You are coming with me !

(Y/N): Ummm.... i cant really

Kai'Sa: WHAT ! Why not!

(Y/N): Well they know my full name so if i run away they may come to punish me later. When we are done here they will let me go

Kai'Sa: *stare*... you are also enjoying this aren't you....

(Y/N):.... yes.... yes i am

And then she just sighted.... but made a resolved face.... oh no

Kai'Sa: Fine! I will help you then

(Y/N): Sorry.....

Kai'Sa: I will be your hostage! What better then a famous pop-star!

(Y/N):Kai'Sa....

Kai'Sa: Its OK!!! *blush* You will use me... and and force me to do thing*blush* i will be at your complete mercy hehehe

(Y/N): Are you sure i am the only one enjoying this.....

BAM BAM BAM

Sarah: OY DM! Are you done there!

(Y/N): Ah sorry Fortune in just a minute.... *whisper* OK fine, but please don't do anything stupid... i don't want you to get hurt

As we came back to the main hall. I noticed that all of them are there ready to go. And they were panicking.Panicking is not good !.... And in a few moment i heard why

Camille: *I repeat you are all surrounded ! Come with your hands UP! And nobody will get hurt!*

Shit that is Camille i recognize that voice! Crap this is very bad now!!!!! Think think think

Sarah: SHIT!!! How did they react so fast.... Never mind! We need to think of something

Felix: Oy DM whoa the broad ?

(Y/N): Ummm she is a pop star so she will make a high priority hostage... you know for negotiating and stuff

Jinx: OHHHHHHHH!!!! Good thinking ! Lets blow her UP!!!

(Y/N): WHAT FUCK NO!!!!!!! AND IF YOU EVEN THINK ABOUT IT I WILL BLOW YOU UP!

Now they were looking in shock at me.... shit i know Jinx always say that but i just lost it... but i could actually see Kai'Sa going a little red and happy

Graves: Oi oi... is there something going on here

(Y/N): No.... just your imagination

Graves:... Are you a caawp !

(Y/N): I am not a caawp !

Graves: ARE YOU CAAAAAAAWP!

(Y/N): I AM NOT A CAAAAAAAAWP!

Sarah: Omg both of you shut up... fine DM take her and go negotiate outside

.....huh..... ah shit

Ahri POV:

TV: *Ladies and gentleman one of the robbers just walked outside with a hostage! The hostage has been identified as the Pop sensation Kai'Sa from KDA*

Ahri: What is going on here!!!!!

Akali: Its really is Kai'Sa!!! But why is she still there!!!

Ahri: She could run away right away !!!! Even beat them all !

Evellyn: Ummm dears.... is it me.... or does it look like she is enjoying herself....

Ahri: She is acting all composed... but yea... you are right... wait that guy behind her. Even though he has a mask i kinda feel like its (Y/N)

Akali: Oh come on impossible ! What are the chances .....wait

Evellyn: Yes exactly that would just be strange and.....seriously

Ahri:.... for some reason.... i am not that surprised

Evellyn: Girls.... i am ordering the cage....

(Y/N) POV:

Sight... i am standing in front of the bank with Kai'Sa in front of me at gun point.... and the worst thing is.... i could tell she was enjoying this. Good so many guns are pointed in my way.... seriously for one year i am not leaving the Penthous....

After a few moments Camille was approaching and at about 2m distance she finally stooped

Camille: Miss Kai'Sa are you fine

Kai'Sa: Oh i am amazin *cough* i am so scared... so very very scared

Camille: Don't worry mam we wont anything happen to you

Yea she was enjoying herself... the past few days the least amount of time i spent with was her. I will need to make it up to her....wait why am i thinking about this now.....what the fuck is wrong with my life i can just accept this situation like. I would have probably continued to think but Camille then turned her attention to me

Camille: You are surrounded completely! You have no chance of escape! So drop your guns release the hostages and maybe you will survive this!

(Y/N): I am here t-t-to negotiate....

Camille: We don't negotiate with criminal scum! So how about you stop stuttering scum and you do what i told you ! Before i get forceful

You know what... i am mad now. This bitch.... this bitch pissed me off! Especially after i found out she was the one who gave Sera my files. Garen wanted to keep quiet first but after a few drinks he lost his composure and spilled the beans.

Not only that she was doing that to take out my girls! She doesn't even now give a fuck about Kai'Sa i am sure she will even give a order to shoot her

and then play it as accident.....She probably knows about the Rift and sees them as a danger.....

Fine... fine.... i had allot of stress anyway! Time to play the piper. You want to dance ! Lets dance!

Camille: Hey what are you!

Kai'Sa: *moans*

The hand that was holding my gun was now on pointing at Kai'Sa's head while my other one went down her pants. And if that wasn't enough i even moved my mask a little and licked her neck which made Camille widened her eyes in shock.

Kai'Sa was good she was making a disgusted face... but by the moans and the way she suddenly grinned her ass on me i was sure she enjoyed this..... always the quiet ones....

(Y/N): Now listen here thuts

Camille: Thuts.....

(Y/N): Is that anyway to negotiate ? So if i blow these people brains out now how are you going to react ?

Camille: You wouldn't dare!

Then i just made a evil grin while licking Kai'Sa's neck one more time... i even moved my fingers a little which she was of course enjoying by the way she was pushing her self on my friend. Don't you dare wake up now ! *_Don't worry i understand, latter_!* thank you dick *_My pleasure_*

(Y/N): Oh really? YOU JUST SAD WE WILL MAYBE SURVIVE IF WE LET THEM ALL GO! SO WHY SHOULD WE THEN ? WHAT DO WE HAVE TO LOSE IF WE KILL THEM ALL ! I MEAN WE ARE SCUM LIKE YOU CALL US!!!!

I decided to yell this on purpose.... and it was a good choice i did. I could see the media was having a field day since the number flashes from the pictures was going crazier now. It was also working on Camilla because she was just standing with a open mouth

(Y/N): So when you decide to negotiate properly! Call us. You have 10min and then we start killing.

Camille: Y..you.... wo

(Y/N): Huh ? Why are you stuttering PIG? Now go talk to your superiors!!!! Oink oink! Faster

Then i just took out my hand and slapped Kai'Sa's ass

(Y/N): Lets go inside baby! Move your thick ass. If you are good i will reward you

She was very red now.... but i knew she was enjoying this..... OH GOD WHAT HAVE I DONE

Ahri POV:

TV Announcer: *Ladies and gentleman did you just see that!!!! The criminal just molested the pop star in front of everybody after the officer tried to threaten them! But what kind of deviant would molest a defenseless woman on TV HOW DARE HE*!

Ahri: Ummmmmm

Evellyn: what is going on here.....

Akali: Do you think its some kind of their new play.... i mean she was enjoying herself.....

Ahri:.... You know... when i said not to do it in the kitchen....i didn't mean this

Chapter 53(Please With Sugar)

Hey don't look at me.... every good book needs a bank heist

Ryze POV:

Ryze: Lets look at your childhood. If i say 'mother' whats the first thing that comes to mind

(Y/N):Bitch

Ryze: OK, next

(Y/N): Whore

Ryze:I am noticing a pattern here

(Y/N): Slut who needs to be raped by centaurs

Ryze:..... that was to detailed

(Y/N): Who have flaming dicks with those little spikes and yell "Your resistance only make my penis harder"

Ryze:..... OK! Moving on!

(Y/N) POV:

As we got back inside the bank, i was doing everything i cant to keep Kai'Sa away from me... she was constantly trying to press into me as we were walking to the rest of the group... i guess i really haven't payed that much attention to her...

As we were finally now in front of my partners in crime... i can tell that by their eyes that all except Jinx were in complete frozen shock

Sarah: What did you just do!

Felix: Darn it partner! This just got more complicated

Jinx: AHAHAHHAHAHA!!! I LOVE IT! LETS BLOW THEM ALL UP

Graves: I actually agree with little miss loney tunes! And Betsy is cranky

(Y/N)": Ummmm in my defense.... yea i got nothing she just pissed me off

Sarah: Oh god..... and there is clearly something going on between you and this girl ! So spill it

Graves: Yea you are acting all comfortable now

(Y/N): Well... umm you se.... she is

Kai'Sa: I am his

(Y/N): Kai'Sa!

Kai'Sa: If Ahri can say it so can i !

Oh god.... i mean i am happy she is not embarrassed but not in front of the group of thief and murderers FFS!!!!!!

Graves: *whistels* Well darn and here i wanted to make a move

(Y/N): GO SUCK ON BETSY!

Felix: You know.... you could have just told us your Gf was trapped here

I was not just looking at him with a deadpan face while pointing at Jinx... after a few moments he just kinda nodded his head understanding what i meant

Jinx: HEY! Why me!

(Y/N): Because you tried to blow me up!

Jinx: That was in the past..

(Y/N): YOU TRIED THIS MORNING WHEN I WENT TO WAKE YOU UP!!!!

Jinx: Then don't wake me up !

(Y/N): You are crazy....

Jinx: HEY! I am not crazy i am mentally unstable and dangerous

(Y/N): SAME SHIT!!!!!!!!!!

Sarah: Umm Kai'Sa right?... Aren't you like... not fazed by all of this

Kai'Sa: It's (Y/N)..... this stuff happens

Sarah: You have it hard....

Kai'Sa: *sigh* You have no idea

Graves: Hey i will not suck on Betsy!!!

..... Oh god! WHAT AM I DOING!!! These people are infecting me with the idiocy!!!..... pfffff hahah and its fun. Good i really need to go visit the hospital for a cat scan

Camilla: *We would like to negotiate now*

And here is my Que! As we were all going crazy Camilla started speaking over the megaphone again.... now time for some payback.

(Y/N): SAY PLEASE!

Camilla:.....

(Y/N): I CANT HEAR YOU!

Camilla: *Please*

(Y/N): WITH SUGAR ON TOP !

Camilla: *Motherfuc..... Please with sugar on top*

Felix: Partner.... you are enjoying this to much.....

Hehe i don't care! Now time for some roleplay

(Y/N): Miss hostage do you mind!

Kai'Sa: Oh...ohhhhh!!! Coming!!

Sarah: She is also enjoying this....

Jinx:And i am the crazy one !

SFG & (Y/N) &Kai'Sa: YES YOU ARE !

As me and Kai'Sa made our way outside.... wow it was chaos. The police we were trying to do everything they can to keep a mass of people away... They were all screaming " Let go of Kai'Sa" or "Monster leave our KD/A Princess alone".... yea bad idea to do this on live TV.

And there was Camille pissed of like there is no tomorrow..... yea i am going to enjoy this. So we did the same thing we got a little closer and stooped. But i was not doing anything to Kai'Sa which clearly disappointed her by the way she was scratching my hand and trying to pull it without anybody seeing..... its always the quiet ones

(Y/N): Oh i smell bacon

Camille: Grrrrrr

(Y/N): You are supposed to go Oink Oink

Camille: Mister..... how should i call you

(Y/N): Your Highness!

Camille: What!

(Y/N): Call me Your Highness

Oh god she is mad!..... I love it! Don't mess with my family again bitch

Camille: Very well Your Highness what are your demands.....

(Y/N): Hmmmm OK very simple i want a Helicopter! With only one pilot on the roof! Now before you even think of anything funny we have a bomb expert inside! She will set up the charges on the hostages! And as we leave and get safe she will give you the deactivation code

Camille: How do we know that...

(Y/N): You don't! And that you can blame yourself and your attitude now this is not negotiation these are our demands very simple. IF you were nicer and added extra cream on that please it will be a different story

Camillee: We don't negotiate with terrorist...

(Y/N): And we are not terrorists we are thief's! Simple as that so there is no message to send here we get out and bye bye no need to see us or anyone to die.... now even though you are a dumb bimbo i you at least have some intelligence so tell me what is more important. The money or your departments reputation Chief Officer Camille

Camille: How do you know my....

(Y/N): It's amazing what you can find on the dark web. Especially about your little exploits on using civilians as bait ....OK this is now dangerous... there is no info on the dark web but if i can make her think this it will give me a edge to win... now lets just hope she buys it... AND DAMMIT KAI'SA STOP GRINDING ON ME !!!

Camille was just looking at me, not moving not speaking. Just a frozen dead expression calculating the risks and gains. After about 2 mins she just sighted

Camille: Fine..... give us 15min

(Y/N): You have 9.... no wait 8 just because its you! Oh and don't try to enter the bank or defuse the bomb..... it will be very bad

Camille: Fine.... 8 min..... i don't know who you are... but i will find you... and il make sure that i personally banish you to the void to suffer all eternity..... miss Kai'Sa ?

The way that Kai'Sa was looking at her was screaming murder..... oh shit she was trapped in the void until she was in the Rift... this is bad. If she doesn't chill out everything will be for nothing and fucked up... think think think..... fuck it. I just took my hand and grabbed her boob pulling her back

Kai'Sa: *moans*

(Y/N): Move it piggy you have 7 min now

I was able to pull her back inside somehow... good thing i have the mask... those fans are going to murder somebody today.. As we finally walked inside Kai'Sa got back to normal

Kai'Sa: I am sorry... i almost lost it... but when she threatened you.... and with the void

(Y/N): Its OK.... listen you are not going to like this. But you need to go back to the hostages. You need to stay here

Kai'Sa: BUT!

(Y/N): It's OK! Once we run away il be back i promise

It took a few more moments but she finally accepted it.....i really need to spend some time with her tomorrow.... hmm we can go there

Graves: Well... i am impressed

Sarah: I have to say cutie are you sure you don't want to join us permanently

Jinx: UH UH UH!!! WE CAN BLOW SOMETHING UP AND GOOO KABOOOOOOOM

I just *sighted*.... how did me being dragged into this turn into me leading all of this.... god my luck is awful

Felix: You think she will comply partner ?

(Y/N): Probably... i pissed her off pretty bad which means she will not think straight. And the info i gave her was all a bluff but just enough vague to make her sweet

Graves: Brother.... where you learn all of this...

(Y/N): Video Games...

Jinx: EXPLODING VIDEO GAME!?

(Y/N): Yes Jinxy exploding video games... now i need you to do something for me

Jinx: OK! And i got a pet name!! YAY!

For the next 5 min we spent transporting all the bags to the top while Jinx was setting up the bomb. I made sure to tell her 20times that it must not explode on random and that to make sure there was a defusing mechanism.... i kinda had to promise her something.... but i also want to do that. And then we could hear Camille again

Camille: .... *Your..... Your Highness*

Felix: HOLY MOLY! She is really saying it!

Sarah: HAHAhAHAHAHAHAHHAHAHAHAH!

Oh i love this!

(Y/N): YEEESSS PIGGY!?

And then we hard he helicopter. It just landed on the roof in front of us and there really was only the pilot. He was quickly kicked out since apparently Graves can drive..... i don't even want to ask what he meant by "drive"

Jinx: SO we done ! CAN I DO IT CAN I DO IT!!!!!

I just smiled!

Ahri POV:

TV Announcer: And there you see it people... the helicopter is getting up and the criminals will get away... they have won

Ahri: He has so much explaining to do latter !!!!

Evellyn: Both of them do....

Akali: Wait the piggy i mean the cop is speaking over the megaphone

Camille: *You highness how do i deactivate the BOMB!!!!!!*

And there was (Y/N) on the door of the chopper speaking over his Megaphone

(Y/N): *What do we say first ?*

Camille: *P-p-please with sugar and cream on top*

.....Wow.... he can really push buttons if he chooses to...

(Y/N): *Just cut the duck-tape*

And everyone was quiet..... there was no sound on the TV or from us Camille: *Excuse me.....*

Then some girl that was next to him just took it and started yelling

Jinx: *YEA YEA!!! Just cut the PINK duck-tape !! But not the blue one!!! The blue one is pretty!!! HAHAHAHAHHA*

Camille:.... *SHOT THE M DOWN NOW!!! I WANT THEM DEAD!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!*

Jinx: *OH SHIT!!!! BITCH BE CRAZY*

And then they all started shooting at the Helicopter which made me freeze in fear.... no Ahri: Evellyn! WE NEED TO GET THERE NOW!!!!!!!!!

Evellyn: I don't know how! My car cant move so

But before Eve could finish Akali spoke

Akali: Wait..... what are (Y/N) and that girls holding.....

Evellyn: Kinda looks like..... no.....

Ahri: Is that a.....

TV Announcer: *The two criminals just brought out something that look like a bazooka !!!!*

And then they just yelled

(Y/N) & Jinx: *YIPPIE KAY YAY MADAFAKA!!!!!!!!!*

swooooooooshhhhhh BOOOOOOOOOOOM

Evelln:.....

Akali:.....

Ahri:.....

Yea.... we were not talking... just watching in silence

TIMESKIP

We were now on the edge of town. Graves "landed" the helicopter.... both me and Sarah were barfing on the side...

Sarah: WHO GAVE YOU A LICENSE!!!!!!

Grave: I don't have one

Jinx: HA AHAHHAHAH that was fun!! Hey... i think Felix is unconscious

Oh god... this day... i just want to go back to bed and sleep

Sarah: I have to say (Y/N).... it was a pleasure!

Sarah just came and gave me a friend hug!

Jinx: AHAHHAHAHA!!! Yea it was very fun!

Jinx was a little crazier involving her jumping on my face... but what can i say crazy girl grew on me

Graves: Me and Betsy will never forget you

Graves gave me a salute from the cockpit . While Felix came to shake me hand.

Felix: If you ever need assistance... call this number and we will help

And he gave me one of his cards with a number on it

(Y/N): Thanks.... and you know i actually had fun

Felix just smilled and then i watched the lave towards the sunset....

(Y/N): Well... i am out of the city.... i dont have any money.... or my phone...

Sigh Time to walk and hope somebody is willing to borrow me their..... god i hate my luck

Swain POV:

Swain: So he accepted ?

Ambasador: Yes sir! We are to meet in Piltover in one week!

Swain: Good..... make the preparations!

Lets hope we can evade the war this time...

Next publish will be side character bio

Side characters and wtf was that

Well hello there. So first i would like to say..... yea i have nothing to explain. The power armor and bank heist just game out of nowhere even the Rift was supposed to be introduce later but i just used this chance. At one moment i am writing Heime's chapter which was just there to do some character build up about him having no powers.... But then i looked to the side and saw my brother playing Saints Row 3 and i started laughing remembering the power armor scene in 4..... the next sentence i was writing was of course YELLOW ALERT YELLOW ALERT YELLOW ALERT.

Yea that's how my brain works..... a good example of that was when i started the bank chapter. Same story.... i was just writing when No Rest for the wicked started to play on my you tube list. And i started laughing thinking would it be funny if he gets dragged into a bank heist.... ofc we just had to bump into Graves but after about 5 min..... you cant have crime without Jinx. So that kinda went that way XD

I really hope you guys like those two arcs because i love how they turned out. I know some of you actually sent me a message " Man i don't want to read this! Stick to KDA" and my answer to that is **yea i don't care i like it.** Yea i kinda agree that the girls didn't have such a big roll in these two arcs. But we this is also a good example that (Y/N) has his own life and is independent and just how much the girls influenced him for him to grow..... can you imagine the (Y/N) in the very beginning of this story doing anything of this ? Plus there are so many side characters from the lol universe that can be used and i am enjoying it massively

One guy even asked me " How the hell does this happen to us" well.... i can only say plot armor. Lets be honest nobody likes to read "MC went to the store while shit happens around him and he dodges it, MC goes to sleep while shit happens down the hall out of his hands, MC goes for a coffee while the princess is rescued by the other knight. Yea nobody wants to read that. There is a reason i called this story JustMyLuck. Now its just up to you

guys to decide if its bad or good luck... i would Actually like to see that so lets vote Bad or Good luck

BAD

GOOD

Now i was writing this story to much.... and i am starting to find it straining now. Don't get me wrong i have no intention of stooping this and i still have so many ideas! But i need to take a little brake. So i will probably not post anything for today or tomorrow. I will actually try to post the prologue and at least one chapter or 2 for my other book"A Wizards Promise (Claymore x Male reader)" i think its going to be a nice fresh perspective.

Now off to side characters .

First we got the man who will never be the same! At first it was just a job for him! But now its suffering!

Ryze

Now off to the amazing band and their music (not to mention they kick temmo in their music video so ROCK ON!) PENTAKILL

From left to right Ollaf, Sona, Morde, Karthus, Yorick

And a special mention for out fruit seller who got forgoten so many times..... (yea it was accident this last time but in the end it turned out OK)

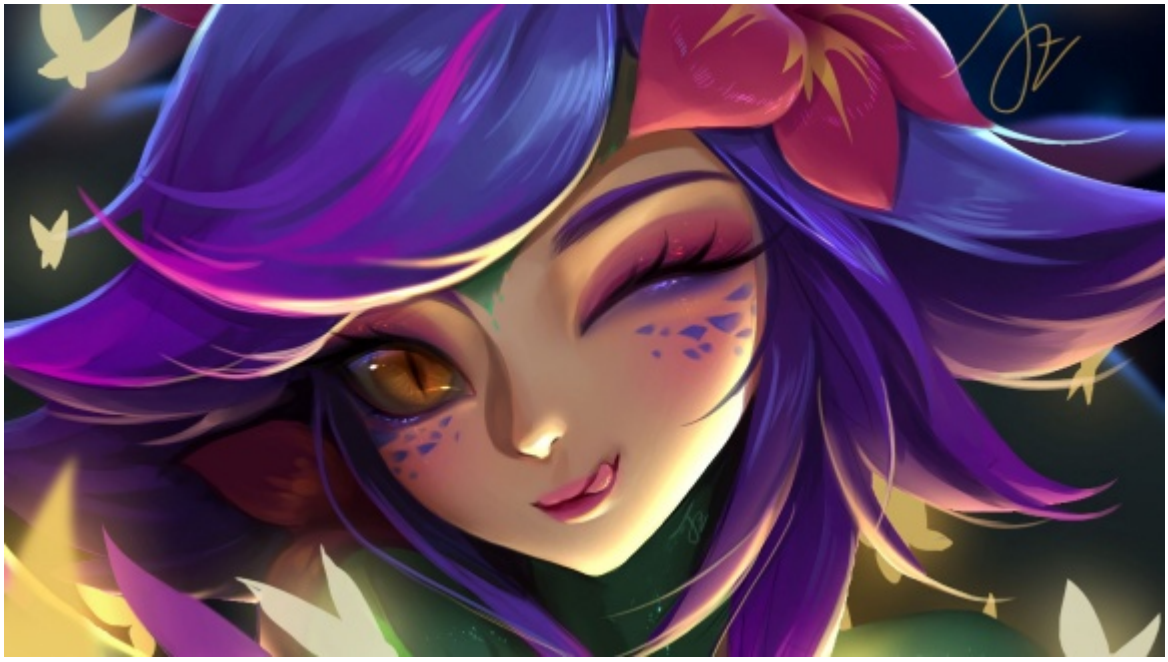
Yorick or Borick

And defintly my all time favorite of the bunch Sona! Not to mention Sona was my first crush next to Katarina when started playing this game in season 2 . I am definetly planing to use more of her... and yes i have a thing for redheads! So if any single out there call me

Sona

Then we got our dream team of mercenaries.... you know Ekko was a accident... i was planing for that really to be Mundo who told all that stuff to (Y/N).... but at one moment... meh lets just put Neko since he walked away instead of disapearing (.... yea this is now my mind works). A lady of culture who can tell a difrenece betwen a Robbot and Power armor give it up for

Neko



Plus her partner that will never be the same!(and she will be back) The lady they say has to much abs but i say its enough !

Shamira

Now our favorite group of friends... at first they were suposed to come in with clown masks.... but i always wanted to cal someon Thuts so lets go 60-80's

Another Red head going for my heart

Sarah-Miss Fortune

The man who's favorite character is Gambit and can get any ladies phone number... just never play cards with him

Felix-Twisted Faith

And now the favorite duo !

Graves and Betsy

And lets not forget the person who finaly helped use a bazooka... scracth that off the bucket list. Her mother had her tested but she just blew the Doctor up

Jinx!

And now the two leaders who will make a big impact on a future story i know we havent meet them yet! But i think we know who am i talking about.

Big Daddy Swain (Yes.... i just decided now we will call him Big Daddy)

And i am not going to spoil anything but somebody we will all hate very much

King Jarvan the IV

OH and just as a bonus from me! Since we didn't see any pics from introduction. I think they look very nice! It was 'hard' not to put them here.

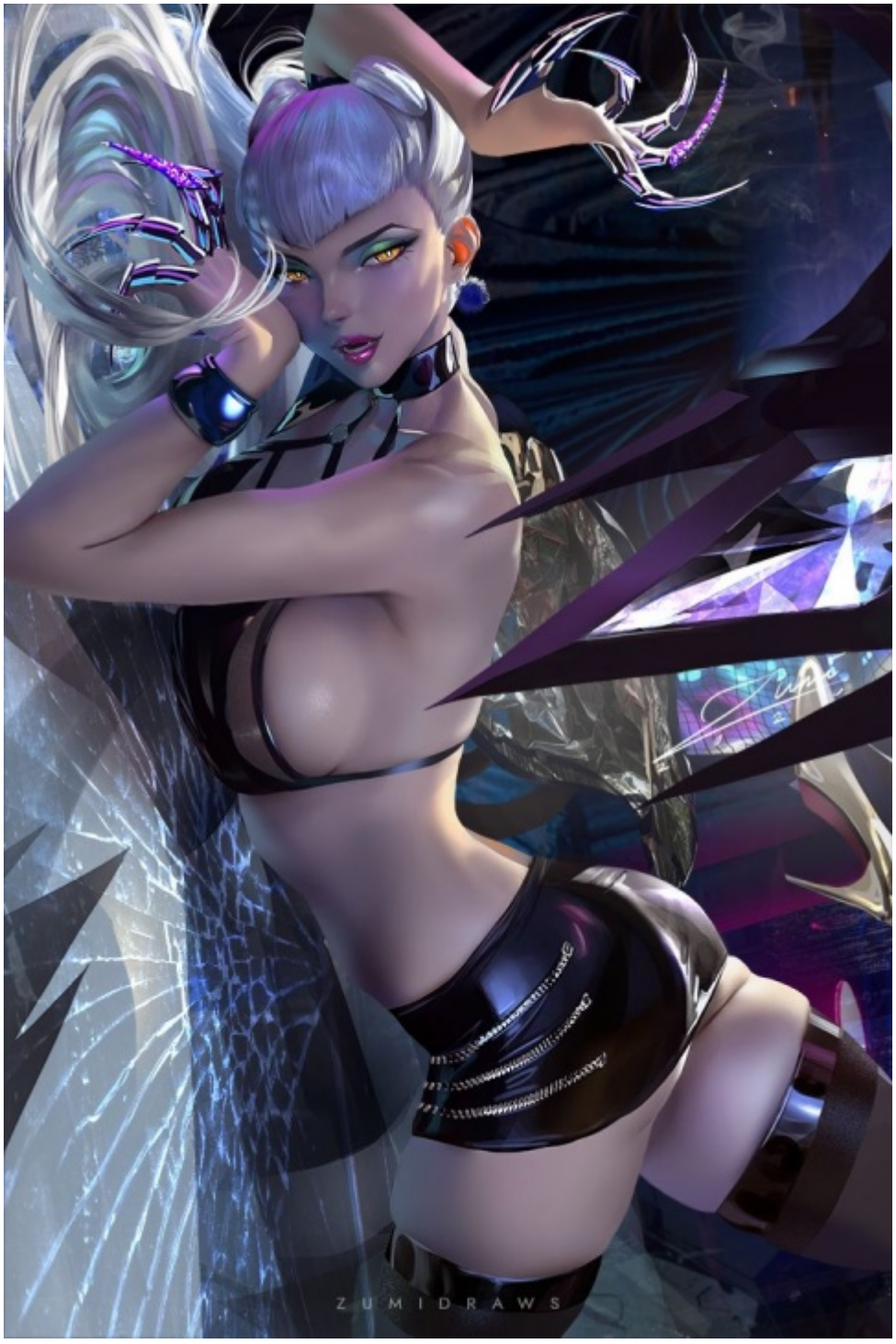
And i don't own any of these pics! Especially the next ones i just found them on google so all appreciation should go to their original artist and i really hope they wont mind me borrowing them since my drawing is shit!. If anybody knows the artists in person please tell them thanks from me! And i would love to say it even myself they are masters of their craft

First is the lady who cant stand us not spoiling her and giving her attention

Ahri

The big sister of the group who takes care of everyone and would destroy the world for us

Evellyn



... Its always the quiet ones.... but you and me love her even more for it (and dont ask about the Cowboy hat..... my mind is just fucked up)

Kai'Sa

And lets not forget our favorite driver.... The lady who just knows how to poke us with her Dirty talk.... man those abd... *cough*

Akali

And that's it folks! Il see you on this story in a day or two! Maybe il even notice you on the other story! Peace and have fun! And one more time thank you to all of these amazing artist... these pics are fantastic

CHAPTER 54 (Just Stay Calm And Professional)

I know i said i was not going to post anything today... but this idea came at one moment and i just decided to write it up

Ryze POV

Ryze:If i show you this picture what do you see

(Y/N): Power armor

Ryze: This

(Y/N): Power armor sword

Ryze: This

(Y/N): Power armor cannon

Ryze: Ummmm this.....

(Y/N): Hmm..... coffer cup. That's being held by power armor

Ryze:..... let it go already

(Y/N): NEVER!!!!!!!!!!

(Y/N) POV

Ahri: Oh darn it! Again one of our concert is cancelled !!!

Kai'Sa: Well there is nothing we can do...

Evellyn: Yes, they are expecting war so they cant really host us

We were siting in the living room enjoying our-self and relaxing. I was going through my phone while the girls were going through some email and paperwork. This was their 6 concert that has been canceled in the past 3 weeks. And you can see the stress was hitting them

(Y/N): Ummm guys i know you said no to worry but is this fine ?

Evellyn: It should be OK darling our fan base will not fall because of this

Akali: It will bring even more when we make a comeback finally!

(Y/N): Well that is all good and fine but.....

I was looking in the corner which now hosted about 20 bags of designer clothes, yea Ahri went shopping today i was actually surprised usually its at least 30.

Kai'Sa: You mean because of money ?

Ahri: Oh you don't have to worry about that! I mean KD/A is like on of our low income businesses (Y/N): Wait... say what ?

Akali: Oh we never did explain you ?

Now i was kinda shocked.... i mean i saw one day how much money they actually make. One concert alone is 6 digits..

(Y/N): OK... explain

Ahri: Well all of us have income on the side. For me its the fashion world and stock brokering

(Y/N):..... Seriously

Ahri: Mhm! I have so many contract's set up that we are set without any problems and the stock brokering shares i have generate income every day that are worth about 2 concerts

.....OK holy shit! I mean i knew Ahri had business sense... she can be such a spoiled child sometimes but when ever it came to their carers she would be merciless... Kinda makes sense she has so many back up plans and good deals

Kai'Sa: I also have a business... well i got it from my adoptive father after he died. So now all income that his business generates comes partly to me

(Y/N): Oh cool! What was he into ? Electronics, agriculture ....

Kai'Sa: Yakuza

(Y/N):..... Sorry what.....

Kai'Sa: Oh he was the boss of a Yakuza family in japan! We have about 12000 members now so since i am his adopted daughter i have a inheritance that comes every month for all the money they make during that time

.....I.....i..... yea i am just going to let this go....

Akali: I am also fine. I have contract from both KD/A and True Damage plus people tend to pay me when ever i draw around the city

OK... that sounds normal

Akali: There was also those 3 years i was a treasure hunter and some museums and countries are still paying me off the artifacts i sold them

..... Why am i not surprised.... I was kinda scared... but i looked towards Evellyn she just smiled and said one word

Evellyn: Blackmail

Of course... But when i think about it. All the money that is coming is from the girls. I am not even paying attention to how much i have since i just use the credit card Kai'Sa gave me.... OK let me check.

I go to this site here..... and type this number here... and.....no no no wait wait! Must be my

imagination..... OK maybe bug in the system..... lets try it slowly.... 1 number.....2.....3.....4.....5.....6.....7.....8..... OK NO I AM NOT COUNTING ANYMORE!!!!! I don't care how many digits there are

Ahri: Um (Y/N) are you OK.....

(Y/N): W-w-w-w-why is there such a amount of money..... on my account

Akali: Why is there something wrong ?

Then Akali took my phone and was checking the site

Akali: Hmmm yea you are right its less then its supposed to be

(Y/N): ..... LESS!!!!!!!!!!!!

Akali: Ummm yea. Wow relax il just call them and we will fix this

(Y/N): That's not the POINT AKALI!!!!!!!!

All the girls were looking at me in wonder. It was clear they were not understand what i was saying.... i mean this amount... is it even legal to have so much!!! I can probably buy whole south Piltover and still have enough!

But then Evellyn just made a "Aha" face which was followed by a smirk and her siting next to me starting her teasing by scratching my cheek

Evellyn: Girl what i think darling finally understands is how amazing we are.

(Y/N): T-t-t-thats ....

Evellyn: You know if you want you can call me sugar mama.

After that they all understood why i was so flustered and they started laughing like crazy.... i mean its not that i hate it. But that small voice in the

back of my head again just keeps poking his words out " Are you worthy of them".

I know the girls love me.... and i love them. But.... i really need to do something for them. They are always doing everything for me.....hmmm i think i just got an idea and it might work.

Evellyn: You know! I think i know how you can earn that money *licks lips*

Oh.....ohhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh..... Yay!

TIMESKIP

(Y/N): Please! You are my only hope!

Kayle: NO!

I was now in Order & Chaos. Begging Kayle to let me bring in the girls for dinner. It was not going as planned

(Y/N): Kayle.... i am asking for a favor please. I need to do something for them

Kayle: I know. But do you have any idea how busy we are ! I am sorry but no Yea definitely not going as planned.... OK i didn't want to use this one but time to play dirty

(Y/N): I see.... It's OK i understand....

Kayle: Good! I am sorry (Y/N) but i am just to full

(Y/N): No no... i just wanted to make them feel special you know. Because you remember last time it was disaster because i got *fake cough* abducted *fake cough* by Jhin here

.....Wow... here eye is twitching hard... and is that a anger blood vessel on her forehead

Kayle: *growling* You really do deserve you nickname from the Larp

(Y/N): Sorry Kayle.... but this is important. You know i wouldn't come otherwise

Kayle: *sigh* OK... fine the day after tomorrow

RING RING

Kayle: One second... hello ?

OK all is good! I can get the girls to come day after tomorrow! And this time i can even buy proper presents

Kayle: WHAT DO YOU MEAN YOU CANT WORK TOMORROW!

..... Deja vu

Kayle: I UNDERSTAND ITS YOUR DAUGHTER WEDDING! JUST TELL THEM TO TAKE A VIDEO AND YOU CAN WATCH!..... he hang up OK ! Time to run away before she...

Kayle: (Y/N) how are you as a waiter ? !

.....MOTHERFUCKER!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

TIMESKIP

DING

Sigh..... i cant believe i have to work in that military camp again. But at least i will not be in the kitchen. I don't even want to imagine what Morgana will do to me since the last time she was apparently going easy on me..... huh ? Is that laughter from the living room

As i entered the living room. All the girls were laughing while some guy was standing and apparently telling some kind of story ????: And then! This guy comes to Evellyn hahaha and goes all " Excuse me miss, would you like a hiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiii noooo thank you" ahahhahahahahah he was running like crazy!!!

Akali: Haha! I cant believe you remember !!!!

Ahri: Hahah it was so funny especially the scream!

Evellyn: Well his fault for annoying me hahah

Kai'Sa: Hiihihihi

And then they finally noticed me

Ahri: Oh welcome back (Y/N)! Our old friend came to visit

????: Hey there! The name is Jayce!

..... The guy was.... i mean i like girls but man what the fuck. Its like somebody took a statue and brought it to life... wait Jayce !

(Y/N): Wait as in the Jayce !

Jayce: I prefer just Jayce! *grin*

And then he shook my hand... making me almost whimper, wow what a strong grip. Yea i know the guy... and i recognize him now. He was on the top of every male model magazine and not to mention he was the 1# on every single most desired bachelors..... fuck Casi why you make me read that bullshit with you

Akali: He was just reminding us of something that append a few years ago

(Y/N): Oh... you know each other from before

Ahri: Yea! We were always all hanging out together before!

Jayce: OH! You tell him about the time we entered the dancing competition!

Kai'Sa: What no its embarrassing hihihi

Jacye: Come on you were amazing! The only reason we won was because of you

Kai'Sa: Hihihi *blush* you were also amazing

..... Why is she giggling like that with him.... and why is she blushing so much!!!! Kai'Sa never blushes like that with anybody.....

Ahri: Or when you and Evellyn started singing on that one party

Jayce: Oh come on i was not that good

Evellyn: Don't price your self to low darling you were amazing

Darling..... DARLING! I AM HER DARLING.... no calm down.... calm down he is just a friend just a friend. No need to be jealous....

Jayce: By the way Ahri how is your modeling going i saw you with Ashe in the winter magazine! Beautiful as always

Ahri: *blush* Oh nothing special! I still miss you though! How many evenings did we have to stay late in the night just to adjust some clothes

Jayce: Oh yea! That one time we were finished in like 6 am ahahha

.....I wonder if Jinx and the gang are close... i suddenly want to shoot that bazooka again... They were just giggling here an talking about the past for the next few min until Jayce finally remembered i was here and asked me a question i didn't want him to ask

Jayce: So (Y/N) what do you do ?

(Y/N): Umm.... i am....

Evellyn: He is our maid

Jayce: Seriously AHAHHAHAHAHHAHAHAHAHAHHA! That's so like you Evellyn at least call him a butler i feel bad for the little guy....

.... I WILL MURDER YOU AND MOUNT YOUR SKULL WHERE MY TAILS USED TO BE !!! WHO YOU CALLING LITTLE!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!..... breathe... breather.... just breathe

Evellyn: (Y/N) are you OK? You look very flustered ?

Kai'Sa: Are you maybe sick ?

..... now she called me (Y/N).....fuck this. Oh yea i almost forgot

(Y/N): Hey girls don't plan anything for day after tomorrow i have a surprise

Ahri: Sure, sure, oh Jayce remember that time....

....Why do i have a feeling she didn't even care.... *sigh*

TIMESKIP

I was siting on the balcony having a smoke waiting for the other side to answer my call. The girls and Jayce have been talking for the past 1 hour until they decided they should go to the club. He invited me as well but i said i was not in the mood....

Ekko: **Yaaawn* Man you know what time it is*

(Y/N): Yea sorry... i wanted to ask you something

Yasuo: I*s that (Y/N) put him on speaker. Sup man*

(Y/N): Hey Littyuo.... listen what do you know about Jayce

Ekko: *OH MAN!!! HE is the coolest!!! There is nothing that guy cant do!!!!*

Yasuo: *I have to agree! The guy is very high in my book of respect*

Ekko: *Why do you ask ?*

(Y/N): Well.... he is here.... and he and girls know each other

Ekko: *Yea ofc they do! A few years ago he and the girls were always seen together! Man i still remember when AKali was in True Damage with us! When ever he would come she would run away to spend time with him..... *SLAP* owww Yasuo why you hit me*

Yasuo: *Hey man.... don't worry about it*

(Y/N): No....no man i am just wondering

Ekko: **Yaaawn* Well anyway we are going to sleep. Cya man*

(Y/N): Yea..... bye

sight Why am i worrying about this... they are just friends..... right

TIMESKIP

.....Yea bazooka.... no no Betsy... yes Betsy would be better. This morning when i woke up i wanted to make breakfast. But Jayce was already there with Kai'Sa.... so there was no need for me to interfere.

Then i wanted to go to the Flea Market.... but apparently Jayce and Akali will go with their bikes and will pick everything up since mister oh perfect Jayce knew the flea market because he is so fucking perfect!

Silvia: Ummm (Y/N) are you listening to me

(Y/N): Ah sorry Silvia continue please

Silvia: So if a customer asks for recommendation just push the Barolo. We have to much of it so we need to get rid of some.

(Y/N): Sure thanks

I was now currently in Law&Chaos learning the tips and ropes of tonight job. They were expecting a busy night so the head waitress Silvia decided to give me some advice. Just as we were doing some final talk Kayle came to me

Kayle: OK tomorrow come at 9pm il have the VIP table ready for you

(Y/N):.... Kayle there really was no need for that. I just want to bring them for dinner nothing else

Morgana: Don't worry (Y/N)

Morgana the showed up in her work uniform. I would say she looks sweet and homely with that big hat of hers but i know what kind of hell will be released after 6pm

Morgana: You are first and foremost our friend. It's the least we can do!

(Y/N): Thanks

As i started talking to Morgana about what she recommends Kayles voice was heard

Kayle: OK people SHOWTIME in 10 seconds

And there just like on cue.... Morgana went completely evil and started already yelling on everybody... while Kayle looked like a sweet angel.... god i will never understand these two. Well anyway lets survive this today and tomorrow i can bring the girls here !

(Y/N): He he he lets see you do that Jayce

TIMESKIP

.....MOTHERFUCKER!!!!!!!!!!

Me and my big mouth! Seriously is there some higher power there that is doing this for thir amusement or what **(A/n:..... oh look over there, bye)**

There they were.... They were just now being seated by Kayle at one of the tables Jayce and all the girls... They looked freaking amazing in those dresses and they were just giggling and laughing with him..... Before i could even start calling Felix for the bazooka Silvia came to me

Silvia: Hey (Y/N). Kayle asked me to check with you if you want me to take that table

(Y/N): Huh ? Why

Silvia: Well she said you know them and you know you will maybe fell embarrassed...

True... the worst thing i want to do is go to their table... but no! I will take this with pride they are just friends!

(Y/N): No worries i got this !

Silvie: Why are you holding that stake knife

(Y/N): To cut Jayce's neck

I was approaching the table now... sweating like crazy.... shit bad idea bad idea.... is she touching his hand... OK calm down calm down! Be professional

(Y/N): *ahem* Good evening welcome to Law&Chaos

Akali: WAIT! (Y/N)!

Ahri: Why are you here????

Evellyn: And what is that ridiculous outfit hahaha

.....Just stay calm and professional

(Y/N): I am kinda doing a favor for Kayle.... so i am working here tonight

Jayce: That's so cool man! To think you have friends here! Tell me next time i had to make this reservation 9months in advance

And just by CHANCE you made it for the 5 of you..... motherfucker if i only had my Power Armor.... OK calm down just calm down!

(Y/N): *ahem* Anyway i recommend the Barolo tonight.... umm Kai'Sa why are you taking a picture

Kai'Sa: Oh come on! You look cute like a little penguin

.....OK now i am mad.

Akali: You are right ! AHahahhahah

Ahri: Seriously! Jayce didn't you have a similar suit! It was such a big difference !

Akali: Well with Jayces build of course it is hahaha. Man we need to hit the gym tomorrow !

Jayce: SURE! I am always up for a workout

.....Calm down.... just stay calm. They are friends and the girls are doing their regular teasing nothing new Evellyn: *sigh* Seriously darling... why do you let people walk all over you like that... for what reason can you possible work here even though it is a favor

Akali: Yea (Y/N), you should be more like Jayce

..... OK.... fuck you all

Kai'Sa: (Y/N) you OK ? You look a little

(Y/N): I AM FINE!

Ahri: Hey no need to get upset we were just teasing

Jayce: Yea bro why you like that!

(Y/N): I am not your bro!

Kai'Sa: Hey! Don't be so rude

....Yea.... fuck this

(Y/N): Sorry my boss is calling me i apologize

I just left.... fuck this. Where is Silvia

(Y/N): Silvia can you take over that table....

Silvia: Yea sure... are you fine

(Y/N): Amazing

And then just as i turned around i crashed into one of the waiters spilling the whole tray of wine glasses on me.... Then everyone started to laugh..... ... yea just fucking amazing

CHAPTER 55 (Goodbye)

Lets continue

Ryze:

Ryze: So can we talk about this seriously now

(Y/N): We are serious... Krillin wins over Tien

Ryze: YOU TAKE THAT BACK! Tien has Ki ko ho

(Y/N): I REFUSE!!!!!!!!!!! And Krillin fucked a Android!

(Y/N) POV:

...Fuck.... Tonight was a disaster. Every since i saw them there it all went to hell. Then that bullshit happens at the table which just fucks me up. Then the situation with the wine and everything else was just going bad... in the end they just sent me to the kitchen to help Morgana. I will only give her she wasn't yelling at me or anything i guess she could feel my mode.

Morgana: Ah there you are

And speak of the hell instructor here she is. The night was finally over so i was just enjoying a cigarette while waiting for the Taxi

Morgana: (Y/N) are you OK ? You were fine at the beginning but then you started making mistakes and everything.... even in the kitchen

(Y/N): *sigh*.... you know i really don't know what i am doing here

Morgana: What do you mean ?

(Y/N): Do you ever wonder.... if you are just not worthy of somebody. That somebody is so much more then you and you constantly feel like you are just trying to keep up with them....

Morgana:(Y/N) i don't know what to...

(Y/N): It's OK... Il see you tomorrow! And thank you again for answering my request

Morgana: Yea no worries ! .... but are you sure you are OK

Morgana really was looking at me with concern in her face... yea these two sisters are amazing people... and i am so lucky i meet them..... yea... lucky

TIMESKIP

As i left the elevator i was greeted by the laughter of girls.... and Jayce coming from the living room. I really didn't have any intention of getting in a conversation so i just passed quickly saying hi and going directly to my room.

OK i just need to calm down now. Tomorrow we will go for dinner and i will apologize. I am hating that idea... but i don't want to fight with them so i will just swallow my rage and go over it. Plus the present are ready and this time i made sure to pick something that they would like! Not the bullshit like last time

As i was about to take off my clothes i heard a knock and Ahri came in with Evellyn.... yea their expressions were not the fun ones. OK just calm down and go through this

Ahri: (Y/N) what was that this night!

Evellyn: I have to agree darling it was very rude

..... Oh now i am darling.... OK, OK just calm down. Don't start a fight its not worth it.. just apologize

(Y/N): Yea.... sorry. Just in a bad mode today

Ahri: Well its not us who you should apologize but to Jayce!

Evellyn: Exactly he has been nothing but nice to you

Their looks were saying that they will not budge. And to tell you the truth i didn't want as well. Yea Jayce was acting all nice and maybe just maybe he didn't mean those words the way he said them, but it still pissed me of. But i guess the most thing i was mad at was at the girls. How after he showed up i became nothing

(Y/N): Sorry... but i will not

Yea i may be petty with this but i don't give a fuck... i will not go and growel in front of mister perfect. Ever since he came its like i don't exist anymore. Ahri just frowned and Evellyn gave a sigh while leaving me with a look of disappointment

Ahri: Seriously i have no words.... fine be like that. Tomorrow afternoon we are leaving with Jayce going for a party at his friends. We will be back late in night

(Y/N): WAIT! Tomorrow ! But tomorrow is....

Ahri: Yes tomorrow. I wanted to invite you but clearly you have some problem with him... goodnight (Y/N) and try to think about someone else other then yourself you are acting like a child.

(Y/N): Ha... hahaha.....hahahahahahahha

I just started laughing..... yea.... go figure. The one time i want to make things special.... the one time i am actually so openly selfish..... the one time i am asking for something like this.... and i get this reaction from them..... yea i may be acting like a child now..... but i am human..... fuck this i am done

TIMESKIP

All day the girls refused to talk to me. When i came for breakfast they just ignored me. Even at one moment Kai'Sa came and asked me if i was ready

to apologize.... and since i am such a child my answer was a "NO" which just made her mad.

At about lunch time Jayce joined us. He even started talking to me but i was not really paying attention to him. After a few moments i just left for the balcony and i spent my whole none there until the girls left at about 5pm.

Now i was just still siting there looking at the sunset when my phone rang

Kata: *Hey (Y/N) did you hear grandpa is coming to Piltover*

Which just made me groan in pain and throw a few curses

Kata: *Seriously whats you problem with him ?*

(Y/N): Oh really ? Where should i start

Kata:..... *Seriously bro you two always fight and then every time when he is about to leave both of you get drunk and make up*

(Y/N): Meh... he just likes to push my buttons.

Kata: *Well you are the oldest. And don't act all innocent you like to push his as well*

(Y/N): And i don't call him Big Daddy like the rest of you which lets be honest its fucked up and i reffuse

Kata: *Well telling him " Oh High and Mighty All powerful Senator do you want a glass of water" doesn't really help*

(Y/N): *sigh* just what i needed on top of all this bullshit, FUCKING HELL!!!

Kata: *Hey.... you OK. I don't like the way you sound*

(Y/N): *sigh* Nothing.... just a fight with the girls

Kata: *Are you going to chicken out and back off*

(Y/N):.... i wont call it chickening out.... but yea probably.... i don't want to...

Kata: *Don't!... That's the worst mistake you can make. If its something that you really believe in then don't give up or you will regret it later and this will happen again*

(Y/N):Even if that something may be wrong

Kata: *Doesn't matter if its wrong.... the matter is that you think its right so until you change your mind don't give up*

(Y/N):.... Oi! Brat! Who the hell are you give me back my sister who punches people

Kata: *Ha-ha very fumy! Maybe we will visit both me and Casi, she is complaining every day how i got to visit you.... oh crap mom is coming and if she sees me with a smoke i am dead!!!*

Diana: *ARE YOU SMOKING IN THE KITCHEN!!!!!!!!!!*

Kata: *SHIT! Bye!!!!!!!!*

Hahaha.... stupid brat... when she get so responsible.... yea she is right. I will not give up... not for this.

So what do i do about dinner..... i could just call Kayle but its past 6pm so she must be busy. You know what... fuck the food was amazing i will go by myself. Yea.... i can at least enjoy that

TIMESKIP

Kayle: Welcome Mr. (L/N) how are we tonight

(Y/N): Drop the act Kayle i am alone

Kayle:.... You were begging me to do this and now you are alone! What you got stud up..... sorry.

Yea even i could feel i was making a face after those words.

Kayle: Is it the girls from last night..... My bad (Y/N) i didn't mean anything by it

(Y/N): *sigh* Its OK Kayle.... we just having a fight that's all. So yea il just be alone... if you want, you can put me somewhere in the corner on a kiddo table or something

Kayle: No... its OK you can take that table it was for you. Il just go inform Morgana its for one person only.... you want some Goblin Snots

(Y/N): Wait! Seriously!!! You have that here

Kayle: Haha *grin* i can tell the bartender to make it

(Y/N): Thanks you are the best

Silvia was the one who came to escort me to the table. At first she was looking at me strangely but i guess my look was explanation enough. I was not even siting for 2 min until she came back with a Goblin Snot for me..... god i love Kayle so much

Akali POV:

sigh.... another part. Another bullshit like always. I know this is a party of a good friend of Jayce's but the people who are here are so annoying like usual

RandomGuy: And then i lifted 80kg with one hand hahaha i don't like to brag but i was proud that day Akali: yea.... so amazing

.... *sigh* Come on i can lift 140 by myself without even stretching.... I looked over and i saw that the rest of the girls were in a bad mode like me... and it was all (Y/N) fault. Jayce has been nothing but nice to him and he treated him like that.

He was acting so rude. I can understand he was a little jealous but his attitude was just to fucking much. HE really disappointed me

Taric: Akali my darling!

Akali: Taric hello! And please to kissing on the cheeks you know i don't like that

Taric: No worries my GEM. Now speaking of GEM's where is my new favorite one

Akali: *sigh* If you are talking about (Y/N) being a asshole somewhere

Taric: Oh! Do tell ! Maybe i can assists in the ways of man I figured what the hell... i have no idea why he was acting like this so maybe he will help. So i spent the next few min explaining in every possible detail that i could. Leaving almost no information out and all our conversations. When i was done he was just looking at me with a deadpan face until he facepalmed

Taric: *sigh* I am not defending him.... but he has it hard

Akali: What is that supposed to mean ?

Taric: Careful girls careful, you are on a dangerous line now. Well Good luck

Akali: Wait what! I thought you were going to help!

Taric: Ah no no no my darling GEM. This is above my pay grade. You need to figure this ones yourself. Oh there is Jayce wow he looks hot today.... OK cya papa here going to mingle

.....What.... i don't get it ? We did nothing wrong

(Y/N) POV

Omg this dessert is so delicious! Only Morgana can do something like this. It was already almost midnight and people were getting ready to leave. I decided to visit Morgana in the kitchen just to thank her one more time and to apologize

(Y/N): I am so sorry Morgana... i knew you made the order for 5 people

Morgana: Its OK (Y/N) i will just use it tomorrow.... hey why did you come alone

(Y/N): *smile* Don't worry about it... listen il maybe drop in tomorrow just to help around.... don't feel like being at home

Morgana: Well you are always welcome!.... And if you need anything

(Y/N): Haha yea yea don't worry! Mind if i use the back entrance! The front is already crawling with people who are going home

Morgana: Sure see ya (Y/N) and stay safe OK

(Y/N): Bye

sigh I know what Kata said... but i really don't like fighting with them. I guess..... i guess il just talk with them latter or tomorrow and try to fix this... Yea there is no point in it

????: Hey!

(Y/N): Huh ?

????: Give me all your money

.....Are.....you.....fucking.....with me..... As i turned i saw a guy in a hood pointing his gun at me. Seriously again! This is 2 times in a couple of months. Don't fuck with me! I didn't even have my after dinner cigarette

????: HEY!!! W-w-w--w-w-what did i tell y-y-y-you! Il shoot

....This is bad.... this guy is panicking..... OK just calm down... slowly and

????: HEY STOP! Why you moving your hand there!!!

(Y/N): Man... i am just trying to pull out my wallet

????: NO no your lying

(Y/N): Calm down i am just going to

BAM

..... huh..... why is my face on the floor.... really

????: SHIT SHIT SHIT SHIT!!!!

And it all went dark

TIMESKIP

Dr.Shen: You used up your whole luck last night

(Y/N): *sigh* Ouch! Easy there.... getting mugged and shot is luck ! ?

Dr.Shen: No... but you having your phone there is. It stooped the bullet completely so only the head went into the skin.... other then that you would be dead. Even the knockout was mostly out of shock

(Y/N):.... And people have been complaining why i carry my phone in the upper jacket

Dr. Shen: Hahahah well now you have a defense

I was in the hospital getting check outed by Dr.Shen. Apparently after he shot me the guy run away and didn't took anything in the end. I was also lucky since some people heard the shot and called the ambulance. Now it was 5 am and the Doc was just finishing up the bandages

Dr.Shen: Don't worry its just small bullet scar and it should disappear fast. Give it a day or two with the potions i prescribe. Just don't touch it it probably cracked a rib so its going to hurt like hell for the next 2-3 days

(Y/N): *sigh* Thanks Doc.... i owe you again. I cant believe i got shot 4 times in such short time span

Dr.Shen: Hahah sure sure. Il send the bill to the usual account

(Y/N): AH wait! Don't.... il send you the money latter no need for that

Dr.Shen: Mmmm sure. You need me to all someone to pick you up. Your phone is busted

(Y/N): Yea just a taxi please

I know we are fighting and all... but i have a feeling if they heard i got shoot at its going to start the whole cage process again. And the worst thing is... i saw a huge box in the storage room. When i asked them what it is Evelly just smiled.... it was not a pleasant smile.... to tell you the truth.... will they even care now that Jayce is here

TIMESKIP

DING

Seriously what a night! I just want to go to bed already... 5;30am FFS..... huh the lights are still on. As i entered the living room all the girls were there... oh yea there was some talk they need to get up really early because of some conference call i guess it was today

The first one who noticed me was Kai'Sa who first just made wide eyes... and after that a very pissed of look

Kai'Sa: (Y/N) where were you!!!

Oh crap i am suddenly having a deja vu. Ok lets just apologize to them. And try to do this without fighting....

(Y/N): Umm something happened and i just kinda lost track of time ha-ha

Evellyn: And you think that is an excuse?

Ahri: We came here last midnight and you were not here. Then we call you and we cant reach you

Crap how am i going to explain the phone thing.... shit think maybe drop it off the balcony as a accident

Akali: This is clearly because of Jayce and it needs to stop

..... calm down. Don't fight don't fuck this up! I just need to talk to them normally and

Ahri: Its clear you have a problem with him! But this is not the way you are supposed to act

Ahri was just now standing as well with her arms on her hips pissed.... are you fucking kidding me....me coming late has nothing to do with him

(Y/N): Listen! I know i don't like Jayce but me being late has nothing to do with him there is

Akali: Save it! He has been nothing but nice to you!

Evellyn: And you act like that ! I have to say darling i am disappointed

(Y/N): Guys seriously i....

Ahri: *sigh* Jut act your age please. We are not asking for much just show him some respect

Kai'Sa: Yes i agree just do it for us he is a very old friend of ours

Evellyn: Seriously darling he is younger then you and he acts better so try to be like him.

(Y/N): Can i say something

Akali: Go ahead

(Y/N): *whisper* fuck you

Kai'Sa: (Y/N).... what did you.... what did you just say

(Y/N): Fuck your request, fuck my attitude, FUCK JAYCE and FUCK YOU!

Ahri: (Y/N).... why do you say such...

(Y/N): You know... i wanted to talk... i wanted to apologize but fuck this!

Kai'Sa: Wait there is no need to say such

(Y/N): Oh i believe there is! Since you girls clearly don't understand anything anymore and i don't give a FUCK. Jayce that, Jayce here, Jayce do that, fuck your Jayce, if you think so high and mighty of him then go fuck him in the kitchen

Akali; OI THAT IS TO MUCH!

(Y/N): Oh i am sorry Akali! I know i am not like him ! And i am sorry i can never be like mister perfect Jayce!

Evellyn: Darling you are crossing...

(Y/N): Don't you dare call me that! Because if i remember correctly Jayce was the darling yesterday and i was (Y/N) so don't you fucking dare call me that now

Ahri: (Y/N) wait stop we need to ....

(Y/N): Don't touch me *growling* i am done. Go have your fun with him since he is so great.

Yea.... this is over... i know this is to much. But i just cant anymore. Kata was right... if i go over this i will never be able to forgive my self.... but this. I may just be closing the doors to the best thing that ever happened to me.

The girls were just looking at me in complete shock. Their emotions were going from anger then to wonder then to sadness... then do

disappointment..... yea this is over... So i just walked past them going to my room picking up my laptop and throwing clothes into my bag. After 5 min i was out and i can still see the girls were just siting there looking at me in shock.

The first one to approach me was Akali... she had such a angry face.... but next to that anger i also saw fear.... she didn't know what to do... it was clear she wanted to hit me in rage... but it was also clear she had no idea what was going on and she was scared... so i just helped her. I took her hand and put the Credit card i got from them in it as well as the penthouse key

(Y/N): Goodbye

Kai'Sa; WAIT! WAIT (Y/N)!!! WAIIIIT!!!!

I know this was to much... that if i just try to talk to them maybe we can fix this... but.... i was also afraid... what if we do talk and they do leave me for Jayce.... god..... i hate this i hate this so much... but i have to do it. For some reason no matter how much it hurt and how much it broke my heart... i knew i just had to do this.... fuck.... what have i done....

This one was hard.... i don't think il be able to sleep just yet maybe drop one more chapter before bed

CHAPTER 56 (From The Void Itself)

Well last chapter just went into flames.... how the fuck am i going to fix this lol..... OK lets think lets think and something will come up

Ryze:

Ryze: Your not talking much today ?

(Y/N): Sigh... just one of those days

Ryze: Want to talk about it

(Y/N): Nah....

Ryze: *stare*..... Its a good thing they removed the mana potions from the game

(Y/N): MOTHERFUCKER YOU TAKE THAT BACK!!!!!!

(Y/N) POV:

Sera: Hey... you OK ?

(Y/N): Huh? Yea i am amazing *smile*

Sera: You are lying my love

(Y/N):.... Am i that obvious

Sera: Mhm. Ever since you walked in i could see you were sad

(Y/N): *sigh*.... yea sorry just... a very hard week

TIMESKIP

(Y/N): Well... at least the smell of piss is finally gone

I entered my old apartment after my weekly visit to Sera..... the girl may be crazy but she could tell right away i was not myself.....

(Y/N): Has it been a week...

Its been one whole week since i left the penthouse.... and i was not feeling at all better. That first day i was just roaming around... thinking.... but in the end i just came back to my old apartment. It took allot of cleaning and scrubbing but lucky it was all back to normal now.

Thanks to Pantheon i was able to find a job in a coffee shop close to the Flea Market. It was nothing special 5 days a week 8h a day. The pay was low but i could scrape buy until i find something else... Lucky for me i don't spend that much money anyway just on food and smokes.

Since i left the credit card with the girls and all the cash i had from them at the reception i had to go minimal payment now. I was even able to borrow one of Garen's old phones. It was nothing special a very old model with a keyboard. But it could do the basic stuff.

Sigh I am out of smokes.... crap and i barely have enough money as it is... but my smoking increased ever since i left... not to mention the nightmares... Every night i had a nightmare... it went from Zilean to Jhin.... to the girls. I would be on the stage and the four of them would be laughing at my face..... fuck...

As i made my way outside and to the market i thought i saw a familiar figure behind the wall.... but as soon as i turned there was nobody... just my imagination i guess..... shit what am i going to do for this months internet bills.... i know i have possession to all of Seraphins assets and bank accounts... but i promised myself i will never use it ! Shit..... i really miss them

Mundo POV

Mundo was siting on the couch with the three girls waiting for Akali. It's been a week since (Y/N) left and its not a pretty sigh. Then as Mundo was trying to think of what to say. The elevator door opened and Akali walked in

Ahri: Did you spy on him again.....

At those words Akali just looked down to the floor in sadness... which made Evellyn slap the table in rage

Evellyn: Why do you keep doing this to yourself! He has left us! Nothing else to hope for!!

Akali: But.....but.... i cant

Akali was standing there just devastated while Kai'Sa started to cry again.... Even though Evellyn was showing anger... Mundo could see she was hurting most of them all.... its been a long time since Evellyn trusted somebody like that.

Ahri was acting all composed... but her eyes had no emotions and you could see there were red from all the crying she was doing in private.... sight Mundo cant do anything here....

Mundo heard what happened.... and Mundo has no idea how to fix this because Mundo doesn't know the whole story... but the jist of it is that (Y/N) was jealous of Jayce.... what Mundo finds strange is how did it come to this... when ever Mundo asks the girls just look away claiming they have no idea why this happened... Mundo has a feeling they are lying....

And Mundo now feels so bad because Mundo has to talk about this topic

Mundo: Mundo is here today.... because of (Y/N)

All the girls were now looking at Mundo... but the worst was Kai'Sa who had hope in her eyes.... Mundo can guess she was thinking how Mundo is here to fix this.... but Mundo is here just to make it worse

Mundo: Mundo has here... the contract to MORE.... (Y/N) has transferred all possession to the girls

Ahri: Is....is... is that all

Mundo: Mundo is sorry it is...

At those words they all just lost their hope.... this was their last conection to him... and he gave up... and the look in Kai'Sa eyes.... it was the same the day Mundo found her... there was nothing there

(Y/N) POV:

Ekko: *So i was thinking of trying this game now! They call it a grind fest but maybe it will be fun*

(Y/N): Mhm sure... fine with me

Yasuo: **sigh* Ekko... i wanna talk to (Y/N) alone*

I was on the Skype call looking at Ekko and Yasuo on the camera. We were talking about a game we wanted to try until Yasuo just drooped the bomb. Ekko was looking at him at first but then he just shrugged and left

(Y/N): If its about the girls save it

Yasuo: *Akali calls every day to see if you said something to us....*

(Y/N): Good for her....

Yasuo: *Man... what happened ? Tell me ? You know you can... i keep asking you whole week and you just don't want to talk to me*

(Y/N):....I cant man.... i want to... i want so much but i just cant. Its not only their fault... its also mine.... but the things they said... the way they treated me at some moments... i just cant

Yasuo: *Bro.... listen i am sure if we*

KNOCK KNOCK

(Y/N): Wat one sec

Crap i know Yasuo wants to help... but he cant. He can never understand how i feel... he is a good friend but he has never been in my shoes. Lets just open the door and get this over with then we can finally play some games and.....motherfucker Swain: Hello (Y/N)....

(Y/N): Grandfather....

Swain: How about we go for some coffee

(Y/N): Only if you are buying

Swain:....Fine

Things just got worse.....

Ahri POV:

...Dear god... even makeup is not helping anymore. I was standing in the bathroom looking at myself in the mirror... my eyes were still bloodshot red. I was not able to even sleep a wink this past few days with all the crying.....

Why.... why did he say those things.... why did he leave us.... i knew he was jealous of Jayce.... but i just ignored it there was no reason to be... i mean... Jayce is just a friend. And he was so mad so full of anger... so broken... the way he looked at us when he left... that look is something i never wanted to see

Kayle: *Excuse me is anyone here !*

As i walked into the living room i saw the two sisters from the restaurant entering with what looks like a mass of flowers and some chocolate Morgana: Hey sorry to barge in! But we ran into Braum and he vouched for us at the security

Kayle: Yea sorry to intrude how are you all

Ahri: Oh we are fine *smile*

Evellyn: For who are those flowers dear ?

Kayle: Oh for (Y/N)

.... and at those words are masks broke down... i was not smiling anymore nor was Evellyn. Kai'Sa was already doing everything she can to hold in her tears while Akali just turned her back towards us.... luckily Evellyn started speaking because i couldn't

Evellyn: Sorry... but (Y/N) is not here he moved out a week ago

Morgana: What! Why did he leave

Akali: He got sick of us

Kayle: Ummm aren't you kinda getting the wrong picture or something

Kai'Sa: No

Kai'Sa has been returning to her old self more and more.... she either cries or just stay silent not paying attention to anything. She is starting to remind me so much of her time in the rift

Ahri: He left after we had a fight... he said some awful words and it was over

Morgana: Oh.... i see..... well we are sorry

Kayle: Can you tell us his address we need to deliver this

.....Why... why do you keep pestering us with these stupid questions! I don't want to think about him anymore today... i.... i just want him back..... i.. had enough of this

Ahri: Ok.... i had enough can you just please get out now i don't want to see yo anymore!! Take your stupid flowers to that asshole and keep us out of it!

The girls were now all looking at me in shock... i guess i just finally broke down i cant take it anymore. But Kayle just raised a eyebrow Kayle; There is no need for name calling... i just want to know his address and don't call him that he doesn't deserve it

Ahri: Oh really! The way he called us that night! The things he said to us! He was out who knows where for whole night with his stupid phone turned off and then he gets mad at us so don't you dare. He was probably with some whore spending his time! Or maybe drinking those stupid Goblin snots he likes so much

SLAP

In one fluid motion Kayle handed the flowers to her sister and slapped me on the face making my head turn...

Kayle: You know.... i am happy for him that he left. Now i don't know what is going on and i don't give a fuck! But that stupid asshole of your was in our restaurant siting alone eating dinner in sadness !

Huh.....

Akali: Wait! What do you mean by that

Morgana: *sigh* (Y/N) came a few days before that begging us to let you have dinner at our place to make up for the previous time.... So we made a deal for him to work as a waiter one day

Evellyn: So.....so..... the reason he was there

Kayle: He was there for you.... but clearly something else happened since his attitude changed completely after going to your table

Morgana: And the next night when you were all supposed to come... he came alone. He was siting in the middle of the place alone at the big table just looking in the distance without emotion...

AHri: I....i..... he said....i forgot

Kai'Sa: That's right.... he said to keep that night free that he has surprise.... but... we went to the party

Wait no..... did we really.... no.... its not us... it cant be us..... we were just with Jayce and..... i wasn't paying attention to him.... i wasn't.....

Ahri: I wasn't paying attention to him..... none of us were

Evellyn: I guess.... after Jayce visited after so long.... we kinda didn't talk to him at all... its just Jayce was a old friend and....

Kai'Sa: Think about all the things he said.... he is not like Jayce..... we were always talking about him and Akali: I even said stupid shit he should be like him

AKali started crying.... she was now sobbing like a little girl

Akali: I don't want him to be like him *sob* i want my (Y/N) back* sob* *sob*

We just keep forgetting she is still just a child inside she may act tough... but she is the weakest one emotionally... not even a century old.

Kayle: *sigh* Good grief.... why am i fixing his love problems... i know he got shot again in my place but

AAEK: WHAT!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

Kayle: AH i wait don't look at me like that i

ring ring

Akali:*sob* Huh its Yasuo ?

Kai'Sa: He got shoot.... he got..... shoot.... he got.....

AKali: Yasuo we *sob*

Yasuo: *You need to find (Y/N) now! If you don't its all over*

(Y/N) POV;

BustyWaitress: And.....um.....a coffer for you sir.

Swain: Thank you my dear no need to be so nervous

(Y/N): How do you expect her not to be.... when you have 20 people dressed in full armor around us

Me and my Grandfather were siting in the Dirty Mug... bastard just showed up out of nowhere... i don't even want to ask how he find me since knowing his position he could find anything. The biggest problem is his full guard was with him and it was making all the other patrons nervous.

Swain: You want to leave your grandfather unprotected ?

(Y/N): Oi old man both of us and these 20 guard here know that you can kick all of their asses without drooping a sweat.

Swain: True but the image and presentation are the ones that count.

sigh... this is why i hate spending time with him.... He was always the loving grandfather to my brother and sisters.... but to me..... he was a dick. None of that was ever done in scorn... its just he wants more from me and expects to much

Swain: You know.... your sister said that you changed... that you had a new look in your eyes.... but only see the same lifeless look that gave up

(Y/N): *growl* Careful grandfather.... your going through very dangerous waters now

Swain: Oh..... so there is something going on

.....motherfucker.... you could never hide anything from him. You don't get to rule a country without some skill... And every time i meet him i understand why my father never wanted to return.

(Y/N): Hey..... gramps..... let me ask you something

Now he was just looking at me... he knew i was serious now. The last time i called him gramps was when i wanted to ask his advice on moving to Piltover

(Y/N): Have you ever.... fucked up something so bad... that you regret it even now

He was quiet for a few moments. Until he just called of his guard

Swain: Tell the waitress to bring me the closest thing to whiskey... and you

(Y/N): Il have a Goblin.... no Chain-Lighting you can also get my grandfather that

The guard just saluted and left for the bar counter

Swain: 10 years ago... when we finally kicked out the royal line i was offered to be leader of the senate.... i refused which lead to the war 8 years ago. If i took it that day there would have been no war... no death

(Y/N): .....I see....

Swain: But... if you ask me if i would go back in time and change it. My answer will be no. Thanks to that mistake i have grown and i have learned a valuable lesson

(Y/N):Thanks....

Swain: *sigh* (Y/N) stop acting foolish and join me. You may no be the strongest or smartest but your look on things is unique... your resourcefulness is incredible not to mention your way of solving problems

(Y/N): Sorry grandfather but i refuse..... and about that HOW ABOUT YOU REPEAT THE FIANCE BULLSHIT YOU SPOUTED AT MY DOOR!!!

Yea this bastard was just like " Oh and you have fiance candidates" As i was ending my call to Yasuo.... freaking annoying bastard

Swain: Oh that! Well i want to make a connection to Demacia. And plus you are 27 its time for you to get married!

(Y/N): Oi oi oi oi!!! Its perfectly normal to get married after you are thirtieth and what connection! I have no status !

Swain: Doesn't matter the important part is that you have my blood so most of them accepted

(Y/N): ... I really don't need a arranged marriage from you.

Swain: Nonsense! I even checked them out. And after some intensive studies i picked out two of them. One is a up and rising Knight she is climbing through the ranks very fast and she will be general soon

(Y/N): Hey.... are you listening to me

Swain: And the other one is the youngest daughter of the Crownguard family! Not only is she very smart she has royal blood. And don't worry both of them are very young and pretty

This old bastard.... he is doing it again!

(Y/N): How many times do i have to tell you i don't need you to set me up so can we please stop with.....

BOOOOOOOOOOM

The whole Dirty Mug shaked and i could see debris and wood flying from behind me ... when i turned i looked upon.....

(Y/N): Kai'Sa.....

She was standing at the giant hole she made. Her eyes were glowing Lilac purple while her cannons were standing over her shoulders fully charged.... the scariest thing was that through all her body purple veins were pulsing with energy.... and then she spoke... her voice was like it was from the void itself

Kai'Sa; *GET AWAY FROM HIM!!!!*

..... That look.... i already saw that look... full of rage.. full of desire... full of murderous intent... she was in blood rage.

Ups....

CHAPTER 57 (Come Back To Me)

Lol so many people screaming cliffhanger.... its like i did it on purpose.... Ups i did it again

Ryze POV:

Ryze: So why did you never try to finish your studies

(Y/N): I told you why....

Ryze: No, no i mean college in general... you just drooped out

(Y/N): I....just couldn't stay there.....

Ryze: I see.... so you gave up

Evellyn POV:

Evellyn: This car battery is dead as well!!!

Akali: Shit! All of my bikes to

This is bad.... when Yasuo said those word Kai'Sa just exploded.... literally. She screamed and her ability just went out of control killing all power in a giant shock wave.

Ahri: I just came from checking outside all the power in a 3 block radius is dead as well!

I noticed how she was acting these past week, that she was going back into her shell. But.... when Kayle and Morgana came and told us that story she was then on edge we all were. To think that darling actually planed all of that for us.... and we..... no we need to find Kai'Sa first

Ahri: This is very bad !!!! Evellyn you know she is the most dangerous of us! Especially now in that state of mind!

Yea i knew.... i have spent centuries fighting againts Kai'Sa. She was walking nuclear reactor with the powers of the void, but her huge weaknes was her emotional state. She was always calm and cold and it was easy to predict her.... but now.... there is no telling waht she will do. She is now just a unstable nuclear bomb that can blow up in any moment.

Akali: For sure she went towards (Y/N).... but will she find him

Ahri: With her speed... she can just check them all. Ok we need to split up! Lets leave the affected area and check his locations

Evellyn: I agree. I will check the Dirty Mug, Ahri go to his Apartment and Akali you check the flea market . If you find him call the rest of us

Ahri & Akali: Got it!

...I am not worried about (Y/N) i know she will not hurt him... but the damage she will do. She is completly awakend. And even if we find her i have no idea how to stop her... one wrong move and this city will go down in flames.... i cant belive how we acted.... i

Garen POV:

Commando: Mam ! There was a huge EMP shock-wave killing power in a 3 block radius at sector 17!

Sector 17.... that's where (Y/N) and the girls are... whats going on!

Leona: Any information !?

Commando: Yes mam! People have reported a purple streak speeding away from that location.... mam... the powers have traces of the void

Garen: The Void! Are you serious !!! Did someone find a way to escape from the prison!

Leona: Calm down Commando Garen.....

Commando: Mam! There was just a similar reading at sector 41

THAT'S THE DIRTY MUG! Shit !!!! I knew this had something to do with (Y/N)!!!

Garen: Mam that's!

Leona: I know.....

Garen: If i am not mistaken... one of the targets has been trapped in the....

Leona: I know..... call the police department! Tell them to stay away from the location and remove all civilians... we are not to interfere

Commando: Mam! We are just to ignore this!!! Why ?!!!

Leona: Because one wrong move and we will all die... or worse. For now lets see how it will play out

... This lady is crazy.... for what is she ignoring this (Y/N) is there for sure! She probably knew what i was thinking since she just pulled me out of the room and into the hall where we were alone

Leona: I know what you are thinking commando.....but we will not interfere. If we do it will only be worse Garen: What.... what do you mean

Leona: Trust me.... i have faced that thing that's there.... the damage will be much worse if i faced it here

She is concerned.... crap..... i hope (Y/N) is fine.. but what dose she mean by she faced it. As i was thinking of those words the int commando just came out and started speaking in a panicking voice

Commando: MAM! Chief Officer Camille is moving to sector 42 !

Leona: WHAT! I gave specific order!

Commando: We cant reach her anymore.... its possible she turned out all communications

Leona: Foolish girl!

oh no.....

(Y/N) POV:

Kai'Sa..... that's Kai'Sa.... right

Kai'Sa: *Get away from him!!!*

Whats going on.... she is not even moving her mouth.... and that voice its similar to hers but it feels so wrong.... so dangerous

Swain:Now now... what can a voidling want with me ?

....Shit... grandfather is still here. And its clear she is looking towards him. Crap crap what is going on here i need to try to calm her down.

As i was about to stand one of the guards jumped on me pushing me down to the floor and covering me...

Guard: Sir! Stay down!!!!!!!!

Crap no you....

Kai'Sa: *NO! LEAVE HIM!!!*

And then all hell broke lose. The rest of the 19 guards just took out their weapons and charged at her. Most of them had swords and few riffles... but it was of no use. Her cannons just glowed and purpler energy started shooting all of them... in 2 seconds my whole grandfather royal guard was on the floor .....fuck

Swain: Impressive.... those men even though they were not the strongest could still hold their ground.... who sent you, Demacia.... Targon ? Maybe Ionia wants payback ?

Shit this idiot! Its not about you!

Swain: Grandfather its not!..... *guah*

The guard that was on top of me just covered my mouth while putting his finger over his telling me to stay quit.... IDIOT!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

Kai'Sa: *I told you..... to get away from him!!!!!!!*

Swain: From who.... doesn't matter... die

And just like that my Grandfather released red lighting towards Kai'Sa... my hart froze as she got hit and knocked to the wall on the side... but he was not done. He just raised his other hand and blasted her again while she was on the floor.... after about 15 seconds he finally stooped channeling

Swain:.... still in one piece... impressive. Hmmm a voidling is rare we can take her body and..... that..... that is impossible

Yea... i understand why he was shocked. Kai'Sa just slowly got up.... and all the wounds and burn marks his power has done have been healing right in front of our eyes... she was regenerating it all

Swain:My my... cant remember the last time someone stood up after that

Kai'Sa: *Kill.....kill.....i will..... kill you all.....*

Shit this is bad! This is so BAD! And just to confirm it they showed up.... the most elite force in all of Noxus.... The crimson assassins. Men and women dressed in red cloaks with jagged saw blades just to make sure when they cut you there was no coming back.... One of them can take out 20 people and now there were 5 of them

Swain: Kill her... but don't damage her heart and brain i want it for study

No!!!! LET ME GO!!! LET ME GO YOU STUPID MOTHERFUCKER!!! I was doing everything i can to move this guard of me.... but he was just to big and this hand!!! If can only move his hand from my mouth!

CrimsonAssassin: Order confirmed... executing

And then they all moved dancing around Kai'Sa cutting her body all over, blood was flowing everywhere and splashing on all sides... but she..... but she... she was just standing there looking at my grandfather. When they would cut her... in not even one second the wound will heal. No matter how much damage they do she would just heal more.

And then she just grabbed two of them with her hands for their head.... and squeezed

POP

Their head just exploded from the pressure she applied. Then she kicked another one sending him flying toward the back wall.... he was not getting up. The two assassins that were left just backed off behind my grandfather.... you could see by their eyes they were scared now. Even my grandfather even though he had a composed face i could tell he was shocked.

Kai'Sa: *Annoying bugs.... how dare you.... i will kill you.... i will kill you and get him back...*

....This is because of me.... she is doing this because of me.... fuck! Move you bastard!!! At least MOVE THAT HAND!!!!

Guard: Sir please STOP struggling its for your own protection!!!

Swain:You two get my grandson out of here.... there is no point anymore

CrimsonAssasin: Sir.... we can....

Swain: You cant do anything anymore this is finished... *guaah*

Energy balls jut hit all three of them sending them flying back. And Kai'Sa was walking towards them now constantly saying "*Give him back give him back*"..... shit fine lets try this! I was somehow able to grab the knife from the guards sheet on the side and stabbed him with it. Making him wince in pain and back off giving me a chance to finally push him off myself

As i finally got up i saw my grandfather on the floor shooting red lighting onto her... but she was just ignoring it all. Just walking slowly towards him with maniacal look.... fuck ..... lets hope this works

Swain POV:

Well... this is the end... the voidling was standing towering above me now. And no matter how much power i used it was just healing to fast... The she raised her hand forming a purple blade in her hand..

Swain:...I... at least wanted to spend one more day with my grand kids ....

So i did the only thing i could... i just closed my eyes and waited for it to end. But it never came. As i opened them i saw my stupid grandson standing in front of me.... no... what are you... she will kill you stupid child

(Y/N): Kai'Sa.... stop... its over

Kai'Sa: *No... he hurt you he take you away*

(Y/N): No no.... he didn't its OK

Kai'Sa: *He shoot you...*

(Y/N): He did not shoot me! Its OK just calm down

Kai'Sa: *No! I have to! He hurt you*

(Y/N): Kai'Sa he did NOT hurt me!!!

What.... what is going on here... how is he... and that thing is just looking at him. Where does he know a monster like this

(Y/N): I repeat Kai'Sa he did not hurt me! He is my grandfather its OK

Kai'Sa: *No....No....no.... he hurt you..... if he was the one who didn't hurt you.....that means.... i hurt you..... we hurt you*

(Y/N):.....Yes.....yes you did..... so please..... just stop this don't hurt me again by killing my grandfather

Kai'Sa: *No..... no..... that means i hurt you..... i didn't want to ....*

(Y/N): Kai'Sa.....just stop... come back to me

Kai'Sa: *You don't... you don't love me anymore... i hurt you and you don't*

(Y/N):Kai'Sa no matter what happens and no matter how much you hurt me.... i will always love you

And then after my grandsons last words her skin slowly turned back to normal and her eyes started losing that dangerous shine. After a few moments she was back to a normal girl. She just started crying while hugging him and speaking with her mouth instead of that evil voice

Kai'Sa" *sob* I am sorry.... i am so sorry.... please please... please forgive me

(Y/N): Its OK..... its all fine i am here

(Y/N) POV

Kai'Sa was crying in my shoulder for another 5 min ever since she came back to normal. Now i was siting in one of the few undamaged booths with her in my lap sleeping. I guess it was to much for her and she just feel asleep. Now she looked so calm. But the way she was squeezing my hand

was telling me if i even tried to move she will start wailing in sorrow again...

Swain: You have some explaining to do....

My grandfather was standing across me while one of the assassins was taking care of the his wound. He was lucky that he got shoot in the shoulder.... one of the two surviving was not as lucky

(Y/N):....If you even think... *growling* about doing anything to her i will make you suffer

Swain:.... she just killed 23 of my men... and i

(Y/N): And its your fault! If you just let me talk to her this would have never happened but you stared with shoot first ask questions latter !

Swain: That.....*sigh* that is true..... hahahahah

OK and now he is laughing.... yea the old bastard is crazy... why is everyone around me so crazy

Swain: Your sister is right.... you have changed. But still even if these men were ready to die... i don't approve of senseless killing.... i can not just let this go

Shit... this was bad! This old man... if not now... he will make a accident happen. He may be my grandfather but he is a leader first... and i know why he is telling me all of this. He is telling me to chose... he is using this

(Y/N):.... i am not making any promises.... but i will meat the candidates... but not expect nothing. And you are to never do anything to Kai'Sa *growling* do we understand each other Swain

Swain:... *smirk* Very well i accept your deal. My, my i like this backbone you have! To bad you just keep refusing to join me

(Y/N): Like i said i am not interested in politics.... and thanks

He was just smiling now... yea in the end he won. He got what he wanted... he always does. That's why dad refused to move to Noxus even after the royal line was removed.

(Y/N): *sigh* You always get what you want.....

Swain: No i don't....your father and you are the only ones who ever get to refuse me. So i take every victory that i can

(Y/N):How about i call Casi now and you can tell her about this victory ...His eye started to twitch and you can see the sweet was forming on his brow

Swain:Ummm i would appreciate it... if you don't mention this..... please

Yea... big bad High Senator Swain cant handle his granddaughters... if Casi or Kata want something they will get it. Same story with Mike one time he said how he wants to go to Zoeyland over the phone. And next morning there was a driver waiting to take him to a private jet..... sigh..... why am i the only one who needs to deal with his bullshit

(Y/N): Yea yea.... for now.. *grins*

Yea sweet you big crow... i should probably call the girls... and i just want to go home before any other shit happens.

Camille; THIS IS THE POLICE !!!!!! NOBODY MOVE!

.....MOTHERFUCKER

Big Daddy always wins somehow

CHAPTER 58 (Mistaken About Something)

Lets do one more and then il go play some Persona strike

Ryze POV

Ryze: So what is the one thing you find annoying

(Y/N): Talking to me before morning coffee

Ryze: OK something about people

(Y/N):Annoying people who stick their nose in other peoples buisniss

Ryze:OK something that you just cant go over that makes you mad even today

(Y/N):....People who think Ash is coll even though he losses every tournament and all Pokemon leave him

Ryze:..... You sonofabitch you take that back ! I

Camille POV:

Finally! Finally i got them! They have been a pain in my ass for so long! And it all comes back to (Y/N) ever since he started hanging out with them this has been getting worse and worse. I keep telling the higher ups to arrest them, to banish them!

People with so much power are dangerous and cant be left alone! They should be under the control of the government but the higher ups are to scared of the backlash. Not only are they extremely popular but their strength is not a joke!

Just a couple of months ago i heard that a another survivor from the rift went crazy... apparently he murdered over 2400 people until he was finally brought down, we cant risk something like that.

Already there have been examples, one of them murders a whole warehouse of criminals without drooping a sweet. Then the other destroys the biggest stadium and does so much damage to city property. And now we lost 3 blocks worth of power and there is no telling how much people got killed

But now! Now i got them its impossible fore them to escape. They will not be able to cover this one up no matter what kind of connections or money they have! They will either serve this city or be put under orichallchum ! You don't leave a weapons alone, you control them and use them.... ah there it is.... hehehe i got you now!

Camille: THIS IS THE POLICE! NOBODY MOVE!

And just as i thought! There is (Y/N) (L/N)! Sitting in the corner with Kai'Sa of KD/A in his lap! YES i got you now you and your girlfriend. You have been able to stay out of my grasp because of your aunt but even she wont save you now

(Y/N): OH! Police officer thank god you came! They terrorists went that way!!!

.....Yea.. you are the most dangerous one! Every info in your file describes you as a useless powerless without any redeeming qualities! But time and time again you keep turning everything around! From Jhin to Seraphin.... and my gut is telling me you are responsible for the chaos in the bank! I just know it!

You are to unpredictable that's why when i arrest you i will make sure you get banished Aunt or no Aunt!!!!

Camille: Nice try Mr. (L/N) but you are coming with me

(Y/N): Mam please! The criminals are getting away! You have to chase them now before they cause more chaos!

.....If i just meet you i would have believed you right away its incredible how you can lie with such a straight face... but no.... i got you hahahahah

????: Excuse me officer but why are you still here you heard him

I then looked towards a man that was across him... he looked to be in his 70 but with a strong build and aura of authority.... for some reason he looks so familiar.... where have i

Swain: My name is Jericho Swain, High Senator of Noxus. May i know your rank and name

....What.... how. I know they are having the peace talks but they are next week.... why is he here... why in this bar

Camille: Chief Officer Camille of south Piltover sir! I suggest you get away from them they are dangerous criminals

Swain: Excuse me ?

Camille: Also i would like to know why are you here! The peace talks are next week, there is of course no problem with your presence sir but there is nothing in the system about this

Swain: Cant a grandfather visit his grandson ?

Huh grandson... what grandson ! Swain does not have..... and then i looked towards (Y/N).... and that look... that look was all i needed to know what he meant that look was just screaming in my face "Nice Try". NOOOOO!!!! This is some trick

Camille: SIR! I don't know who you are talking about but mister (L/N) here is...

Swain: Is my grandson. His father is a bastard child of mine that was conceived with a maid about 48 years ago... it was never made public and stayed a family secret

Camille: Sir that is.... you are....

Swain: I am WHAT ? Be very careful with your next words officer.

Camille: I....i.... but these damages

Swain: We have been attacked by assassins! The only reason i am alive is thanks to the girl in his lap if she didn't come to my rescue i would be dead now

Camille: I....i....

Swain: Now if you would please do your job and go after the criminals i would appreciate it.... or is Piltover police force so bad at their job and i should maybe get another TV star to do their job.... now good bye

No... impossible... i had them! I freaking had them!!!!Shit... but i cant do anything now. It will be a international incident... and this (Y/N)! He is a bastard grandson of one of the most powerful people in the world!!! WHAT JOKE IS THIS!!!! No no.... i have been targeting the wrong people... yes it all comes back to him... he is the one who is doing all of this.... he is the one who is controlling them

Officer: Mam!

One of the officers that was outside suddenly came to me in panic

Officer: Mam!..... the..... the Radiant Dawn is asking for you

Shit..... i hate my job

(Y/N) POV:

I watched as officer Camille left in a hurry.... she is becoming more and more dangerous. Its clear to me she is targeting the girls on purpose.... crap.... how do i deal with this

Swain: Looks like you have a fan....

(Y/N): Don't remind me... she is one of those annoying types that i really despise. By the way... is it OK for a country leader to lie openly like that ?

Swain: Oh please. If i wanted to lie she would be in Demacia now blaming the cook for all of this. This was just a little play on words

(Y/N): *sigh* And i wonder where my dad learned all the bullshit

Evellyn: KAI'SA!!!!

Evellyn walked into the bar... well mostly ran to us. At first she crouched and was looking over Kai'Sa all over her body. Then she raised her head and before i could even say something her hands were going all over me

Evellyn: She didn't hurt you right! You are fine good i knew she wont hurt you... ah...

And just like that she stooped after her mind calmed down... now she was just looking in my eyes... it was clear she wanted to say so much.... but she didn't know how to start...

(Y/N): Lets.... lets take Kai'Sa back home first.... and then we can all talk

Evellyn: Sure.... yea sure darlin.... i mean (Y/N) sure

.....I guess... she still remembers when i told her never to call me that

Swain: *Ahem*... another one ?

(Y/N):*blush* Long story... we will talk latter

He just nodded as i picked up Kai'Sa and left with Evellyn for the penthouse.... what am i even going to say to all of them....

Swain POV:

sigh As i watched my grandson leave the bar i just sighted on the disaster that was today... Kata did tell me that (Y/N) changed and to be careful with him since he was surrounded by monsters... now i see what she meant. First

that voidling was something else.... i may have gotten old but my power is still in the top tier... and that girl just ignore it all

Not to mention the one that came now... every fiber of my body was telling me not to piss her off its like death itself was crouching in front of me touching my Grandson.... one wrong move and i would have died.....

Swain: *sigh*.... Can you remove your sword from my neck... that is kind of a capital offense

Not to mention this sword now that was under my head

Leona: Give me one good reason....

Swain: Well... considering i just got rid of a pest in a blue uniform i would say that is one

Leona: Fine..... if you made (Y/N) do something

Swain: I made him do nothing we just made a deal. He meets someone for me and i don't press into the deaths of 23 of my men that his girlfriend apparently caused

Leona: *Tch*..... fine

Swain: And you are letting him be surrounded by those monsters ?

Leona: He is happy.... its good enough for me

When my son got remarried i was skeptical.... especially since his new wife was bringing kids with her.... but once i meet them i changed my mind completely. Diana is a perfect wife for him and is better than thee previous one by a mile. And her two daughters are nothing but my own in my eyes.... Now her sister.... she is a different story. I never got along with her nor did she with me.

She always looked upon (Y/N) as a treasure to be protected. As i would pamper the girls and Mike but would push and press (Y/N), she would be the complete opposite. She expects much from Casi and Kata but (Y/N) and

Mike can do what ever they want..... Hah... the Radiant Dawn the name that even strikes fear in Noxus is a overprotect aunt.... crap she knows what i am thinking even i am not crazy to piss her off that looks i already sending shivers down my spine

Guard: Sir *cough* should we.....

Swain: Yes soldier lets go to the embassy... and we also need to find someone to look over your wounds

Guard: Sir!

(Y/N) POV:

Well it started to rain.... i like rain. I was standing on the balcony finishing up my smoke. Once we got back to the penthouse Evellyn called the girls and told me it will take them some time to come back. They were all in different parts of the city looking for Kai'Sa

I tried to drop Kai'Sa on the couch but as soon as i would let go she would start whining and sleep talking for me to hold her. Then Evellyn came and took her but she would still sleep talk slowly for me. I felt bad but i needed a smoke... i needed to think

Akali was the first one who came back. She was looking at me through the balcony door not moving her sigh at all. And if i would look her way her face would just drop all composure and she wold look at the floor.

Ahri came back about 5 min ago. At first she made her way to the balcony but Evellyn called her.... no i was still outside thinking..... what am i to do. Should i forgive... should i not forgive. Will they forgive me... or will they not.

Every possible reason was going through my head and every possible situation was fighting for dominance..... It the end... i want to forgive them... but i will not do it without a price. Kata was right... If i forgive them

just like that i would be giving up... and i know that if the future something happened i would crack again... i also know this is partly my fault for getting jealous... but the way they treated me... the way they compared me to him... the way i was left alone for that night. *sigh*.... no more running away. So i just threw my smoke and made my way to the living room couch siting opposite of them. The good thing Kai'Sa also woke up and she was looking at me with such eyes that were begging me to come hold her... Fine lets start simple...

(Y/N): Excluding today.... how were you girls this past week

Ahri: We.... we are

Evellyn: Can we just skip the small talk.....

I see.... they all want to get to the main point of problem.... fine

Ahri: Why did you not tell us! If we knew that you planed a dinner like that we would have not went to the party!

Ahri was the first one to speak... you could see her eyes. The looked like the eyes of someone who was constantly crying this past week.... she was always the most spoiled one and the one asking for most of the attention... but i cant cave in

(Y/N):So if i told you that it was dinner in Law&Chaos you would come with me instead of Jayce

Akali: Of course!

.....*sigh*

(Y/N): I hope you girls stay OK... now excuse me i will go ask the reception to call the taxi

As i started to get up i was suddenly pushed down in force by Evellyn. She was siting on my lap holding me for my shoulders with such rage in her eyes

Evellyn: STOP!!!! TALK TO US DAMMIT! Just stop it darling!

(Y/N): Evellyn i told you not to call me darling...

Evellyn: I WILL CALL YOU WHAT EVER I WANT!!! I DON'T CARE ANYMORE! JUST BECAUSE OF SOME GUY YOU ACT LIKE THIS!!! I KNOW WE FUCKED UP I KNOW WE MESSED UP! I KNOW WE IGNORED YOU AND SAID SOME STUFF BUT HE CAN NEVER REPLACE YOU!!!!!!!!

She was screaming at my face in rage...

Evellyn: YOU HAVE NO IDEA HOW THIS LAST WEEK WAS! YOU DON'T JUST GET TO WALK OUT OF OUR LIVES YOU DON'T GET TO LEAVE OUT OF MY LIFE! YOU ARE MY ONE AND ONLY DARLING! THE ONLY PERSON WHO EVER MADE ME CRY! THE ONLY ONE WHO MADE MY HEART FEEL LIKE THIS

I..... Evellyn you.....

Akali: *sob* I am sorry... i don't care i am sorry just don't go please!

Akali was wailing in sorrow now holding me on the side with her head on my shoulder

Akali: You don't have to be like Jayce i know what i said i don't want you to be like Jayce i just want you to be yourself *sob* please please don't leave me! I was just not thinking at that moment! I was... i was..... i just want you i want my (Y/N) to come back to me, my (Y/N) to hold me

Kai'Sa: Please..... i am sorry... i shouldn't have said those things... you have all right to be angry... but please forgive us

Kai'Sa was just looking down to the floor.

Ahri: We.... i know we treated you differently... but he was a old friend... he was the one we meet when we were starting everything we were just happy to see him... i know how we treated you was wrong.... but.... we are so used

to you... so used to your presence that we didn't even notice... until you left us

Kai'Sa: I know we said some things... and that morning.... i just found out you got shoot... again... because we left you. After i promised i will never leave you we left you and you got hurt... thats why i lost it. And then... and then i come and see you in the bar.... i love you with all my heart... no matter what happens i will always love you

(Y/N): I..... i am sorry to. I just got jealous.... i thought you were going to replace me. That i was not good enough for you... and Jayce.... he was so perfect

Ahri was now next to me holding me hand

Ahri: Nobody can ever replace you.... so please.... please come back... to you Jayce may be perfect... but to us... you are

This last week.... was the worst possible week of my life.... and i never want it to happen again

(Y/N): If... if you forgive me

Evellyn: Of course we do my love! You are the only one in my heart i will always forgive you i just hope you can do the same to us

After that Evellyn was basically knocked off me because Kai'Sa was on top of me kissing me and thanking me. After about another 15 min of more "I am sorry" and " Forgive me" things finally calmed down.

(Y/N):.... I never want this to happen again ...

Akali: Same.... we wont ever see Jayce again i promise

(Y/N):.... no.... He is your friend. I don't like him, and i will get jealous again probably.... but don't get rid of your friends for me

Akali was just holding my hand and she nodded with a small smile... sight lets just relax the atmosphere a little

(Y/N): Seriously... how did you expect me not to get jelous... that bastard is perfect

Ahri: (Y/N)... you really don't have to think like that! He will never be you... and he is not perfect

(Y/N): Oh come on.... i mean apparently he can Dance with Kai'Sa which i cant, he can sing with Evellyn and you all know how i sing

The all laughed at that last part

(Y/N): He drives a bike..... and a fashion model... the worst was when i heard how you two would spend all night arranging clothes... i was so heated up then.... so many stuff went through my mind....

Evellyn: Umm.... darling.... aren't you maybe.... mistaken about something

(Y/N): Huh ? What

Akali: Jayce is gay

Loading.....
.....Loading.
.....
.....Load Complete....

(Y/N):... Sorry what ?

Kai'Sa: Ummmm Jayce is gay.... he likes... guys

(Y/N):.....Huh?

Ahri: You did know that right. I mean i understand we said those things but i never understood why you were so Jelous when you meet him..... (Y/N)?

(Y/N): You..... you are not joking

Akali: Um no. Why ?

(Y/N): Ha....ha-ha.....ha-ha-ha.... I am going to go jump off a building now

Kai'Sa; (Y/N) whats wrong!!!!!!!!!

Ahri: Hey ! (Y/N) are you OK! (Y/N) hey can you hear me!!!!

Akali: LOCK THE BALCONY NOW!!!

Evellyn: Darling what wrong!!! Whats with that look!!! Hey stay away from the kitchen knives!!!!!!!

..... oh god FML!

CHAPTER 59 (Forgive Me)

OK seriously.... am i going to have to read every day how someone doesn't like height stats.... first i was getting just in the comments now i am getting PM messages. This one guys sends me *not going to name him* '' *If you are going to write a story do some research first! That is not their real height! Get your facts straight*''..... seriously..... i mean..... *sigh*... i love when they start judging something without even giving it a chance... i think i am just going to completely remove the height from the Introduction its just pissing me off. Or i will put their original height and our MC will be 3.5 when i am done with him

Ryze:

(Y/N): And as the final rule 89 never lave your safe house without Toilet Paper!

Ryze:..... *stare*

(Y/N): What ?

Ryze: Why do you have a rule book on a zombie apocalypse scenario.....

(Y/N): You know.... if it happens.... go find your own toilet paper

(Y/N) POV

Oh god.... why is there so much weight one me..... oh when did she get here. Yesterday after the girls finally stooped me from committing suicide everything just calmed down... the situation was still a little awkward.... even though i forgave them and they me... you could still feel some tension. Especially between me and Ahri... i don't know why but i still have a feeling

she is mad at me.... and to tell you the truth even i am not that over it with her.

Out of all the girls... she was kinda the coldest yesterday.... i have a felling she did what i wanted to do... just stooped fighting for the heck of it, and knowing my luck that is going to bite us both in the ass down the line.

When i went to bed last night Kai'Sa came after 5 min... she just wanted to sleep with me nothing else.. But now i see also Akali is in my bed sleeping... crap this was just a full on disaster. No wonder i feel so much weight one me

As i was able to finally get out of the bed and make my way to the bathroom i heard a voice in the living room. When i came and cheeked behind the wall i saw Evellyn siting and talking over the phone

Evellyn: I am sorry Jayce but we cant see each other anymore..... yes..... no its just our choice..... yea..... maybe one day but for now no..... yea goodbye.

I guess... they really wont see him anymore because of me... i mean.... i am happy. But this is not what i wanted. Yesterday yes. Definitely i would have been happy to hear this... but in the end the guy gets burned for doing nothing..... crap..... i really fucked up in the end

Ahri: What are you doing ?

(Y/N): Ah! Hey Ahri.... um nothing going to the bathroom

Ahri: Ah OK! Well let me just go in first

.....NO teasing.... no smile..... yea we still have a problem.... *sigh*. Ahri went in first and i walked in the living room... Evellyn noticed me but before she could say anything i just gave her a kiss

Evellyn: Oh my darling! Are you up for some morning activity *smirks*

(Y/N): Nah.... just wanted to

Akali: *NOOOOOOOOOOOO!!!!!!!! WHERE IS (Y/N)!*

....Oh shit. From my room a hysterical cry was heard. And Akali just came running out with Kai'Sa once she saw me she just rushed into a hug with me.... Kai'Sa was still half asleep and was just looking around trying to get what was going on..... shit..... this is not good. And Evellyn was confirming my suspicions with the look she was giving me

After she finally calmed down and everything went back to normal. Evellyn was able to grab her attention with some work stuff. Which let me and Kai'sa be in the kitchen alone working on breakfast

(Y/N): That was..... that was not good

Kai'Sa: She was the one who suffered the most. She was never home this past week she was actually spying on you all the time.....

So all those times i though somebody was looking at me was Akali.... crap this is bad... i actually have a idea how maybe to make this better....

(Y/N): You guys didn't touch my room since i was gone ?

Kai'Sa: No everything was left as it was... why ?

Good the present are still here and we can...

RING RING RING The house phone started ringing and Evellyn answered after a few moments she was looking at me with a shocked expression and just said " Send them up" ..... oh god deja vu all over again..... the last thing i need now is Diana

Camille POV:

Leona: So this is your report ?

Camille: Yes mam.....

I was in Leona's office after getting a call yesterday ordering me to come today morning with a full report on yesterday..... this will not end good

Leona: So let me just confirm this, your answer on my order is " I believe the person involved is dangerous and i had to interfere" ..... am i correct

Camille: That's right mam....

Leona: Very well you have permission to speak freely off the record now.... What is your problem Chief Officer Camille

Camille: Mam!.... i find it very irresponsibly that you are ignoring such dangerous threats.... under the pretense of your nephew.... so i took it upon my self to bring them to justice...

Leona: But if i am not mistaken a report from Senator Swain's assistant tells another another version that they were saved thanks to Miss Kai'Sa

.....This bitch..... all this.... all of this is a big lye she doesn't deserve her position

Camille: I think we both know why Senator Swain gave that report. And its foolish to try to act differently i know the truth

Leona: *sigh*..... your fired

Camille: WHAT!!!!!!!!!!!!

Leona: Effective as of now, please leave your badge and firearm at your desk and leave the building by noon.

Camille: MAM! This was off the record!!!!!!

Leona: It was.... and i can see you have made a personal vendetta and you are a danger to yourself and your coworkers

THIS BITCH!!! IS she crazy! Why ! Why is she letting them roam!

Camille: And both of is know the only reason we are not arresting them is because of your nephew!!!!!!!!!!

Leona: *growling* Is that what you think..... Very well Officer Camille in your opinion who is the strongest person in this city may it be power or connection or just fame Camille: Mayor Veigar.... in all categories....

Leona: Well dear Mayor Veigar will maybe.... and just maybe be able to stop one of them... not counting Blood Rage.... the reason we are not doing anything, Is because the backlash would be astronomical. As long as they are under control we are fine

Camille: You call this under control! We have no control over them!

Leona: In the last 18 years more then 29 cities disappeared from this earth because of the Rift survivors.... Not to mention some countries have employed Rift survivors as soldiers or are using them. And we in Piltover as a neutral City... no a neutral Country, we currently have 9 of the them which gives u leverage and power over any enemies who want to attack.

Camille: SO! Put the under control! Put them under orichallcum!

Leona: *sigh* You are a fool..... who do you think will fight harder. A soldier that is forced or a soldier that wants to protect something precious..... how you ever got your position i don't know... now... get out of my office civilian

Shit..... they are fools! They should be trapped and used not like this!!! No no.... i just need to calm down! I will find somebody who will listen to me. I am sure if i get somebody on my side we can take this to the higher ups and maybe get some people on my side....

Leona: Oh and Camille....

As i turned around to see what this bitch wants i suddenly felt incredible pain in my eyes... it was like the sun itself was burning it

Camille;Ahhhh AAAAAAAAHHHHHHHHHHHHHH stop STOOOPPP!!!!

Leona: *growling* I told you.... if you ever target my nephew... you will never see the light of day again.

Camille: I cant see *sob* please... help please i don't see anything *sob* why do i smell burned skin... no.....no no..... NOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO!!!!!!!!!!

(Y/N) POV:

.....SONOFABITCH

Kai'Sa: Ummm would you like some coffee...

Swain: Yes dear thank you

Evellyn: Thank you for the sweets sir

Swain: Ah no dear its my pleasure

Ahri: Sir its a very huge honor to host someone like you

Swain: AH no no! The honor is mine! I know your music its fantastic

AkalI: *whisper* Why is he here

sigh And it looks like Kai'Sa and Evellyn don't recognize him from yesterday.... i guess Kai'Sa was kinda out of it the whole time and maybe Evellyn just didn't pay attention when she saw me and Kai'Sa.... but still this motherfucker

(Y/N): Oi.... you old fart why are you here...

Evellyn: Darling!

Ahri: WHAT ARE YOU DOING! He is the leader of Noxus

Kai'Sa: We are so sorry sir!!! He just doesn't feel good today

Akali: Shit! (Y/N) apologize now

Swain: Really young man... so rude

.....Oh that's how you want to play.... I just took out my phone and started dialing random numbers... he was looking at me giving me the "Your bluffing look"

(Y/N): Hey Kata listen i....

Swain: NO STOP! I am sorry!!!!

(Y/N): Got you...

Swain: You snot nose brat

AAEK:.....

The girls were just staring at us now in complete shock going from him to me...

(Y/N): *sigh* Girls.... meet my grandfather

AAEK: WHAAAAAAATTTTTTTTT!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

Swain: Pleasure i have heard much of you from Kata and i am glad i finally get a chance to meet you in normal

Akali: Your grandfather..... is the leader of Noxus.....

Evellyn: Darling why did you never tell us

(Y/N): *growling* Because... so why are you here

Kai'Sa; Wait... you are..... from yesterday.... oh no! I AM SO SORRY!!!!

Shit.... she remembered.... and looks like the girls understood right away what happened. Since they go the info i was meeting with a family member and he got attacked by Kai'Sa. In just a moment both Ahri and Evellyn were

standing in front of her defensively while Akali actually put one of her hands on my chest like he was ready to jump in front of me

Swain: Now now... no worries that has been taken care of. I will do nothing to you

Kai'Sa: I am... i am still sorry

Swain: That is sweet girl.... but if a apologize was enough there would be no war

(Y/N): *growling* Get to your point why are you here!

And then he just smiled to me.... i know that smile.... i never liked it.

Swain: Today is... Tuesday right ? Good your are meting your candidates this Saturday

(Y/N):..... Grandfather i....

Swain: You know what our deal is. You will honor it!

Evellyn: Candidates for what?

(Y/N): its not impor....

Swain: For his marriage, he will meet his two possible candidates for marriage

..... And then it was like the room went subzero after those words... and the first one to start was Ahri

Ahri: Hey.... (Y/N). Is this a joke

(Y/N):Ahri... I

Ahri: NO! This is not OK! Are you kidding me! After everything that happened! After everything we went thorough! AFTER EVERYTHING YESTERDAY YOU ARE DOING THIS WHY!!!!!!!!!

(Y/N):... I made a deal with him

Ahri: That is not GOOD ENOUGH!

Akali: STOP!!!!!!!!!

(Y/N): Akali....

Akali: Its OK! For sure there is a reason! SO STOP AHRI STOP!!!

..... not OK. The thing i feared is happening.... Ahri never did truly forgive me and now its coming to bite me in the ass.... and Akali... Akali is so afraid of losing me again that she is villing to accept anything... to do anything just not to make me upset.... this cant go on like this

Evellyn: Darling... what kind of a possible deal has he made so that you have to do this

Kai'Sa: That's right! You don't have to do this! You can ignore it!

(Y/N): I cant....

Kai'sa: Why!?

Swain: Because of you dear...

(Y/N): Shut up! Don't tell her!

Swain: Because you killed 23 people yesterday. Out of those 23 people 21 of them have families and children. I do admit that we attacked first when you look upon it... but what kind of a leader would i bee if ignored something like this. So we made a deal. He meets candidates for marriage and i forget yesterday ever happened.

...I didn't want Kai'Sa to know this.... shit... and the girls. They are looking at him in shock. Yea he acts all sweet and composed... but this old bastard is nothing but cold and calculating. He will grab a opportunity at any possible moment and use all means to get it

Swain: So its simple grandson this Saturday you will meet them and talk to them. You will act accordingly and respectfully! My assistant will be present to make sure you follow these rules. But for the original meeting you will comply. If by any chance the girls show interest in you, you are to comply to their wishes for the time of the peace talks.... The full contract of our deal will come by the end of the day.

Ahri: You.... you cant do this...

Swain: I can dear. Its a deal between us... He is risking his happiness with you for your friends life and well being. And if at the end you don't want to marry them i will comply but i want a good reason for your refusal. Is that understood

(Y/N): Yes.

Akali: Wait...

Swain: Good! Any further questions

(Y/N): No...

Swain: Good bye girls... i know how you must feel but this is simply how this world works. I will talk to you on Friday.

And he left... i was just looking at the floor in rage... i wanted to brake something but i was doing everything i can not to.... he always gets what he wants

Kai'Sa: (Y/N) i....

(Y/N): I am going for a smoke

TIMESKIP

It was about dinner time when Kai'Sa called me back inside. I spent all afternoon on the balcony in silence... jut relax and thinking. Dinner... was

hard. All the girls were silent and looking at me, a few time they wanted to start talking but they changed their minds. As we finished dinner... i figured what better time. NO need to mop around anymore so i told them all to wait for me in the living room.

Evellyn: Darling what are those bags

(Y/N): Presents for all of you

Akali: Seriously!.... wait its not like last time

(Y/N): Nononon hahah this one i think i got what you would all like. So lets start with you Akali

I gave her the black and red bag. it only took her a few moments to open it and when she pulled out she basically screamed in happiness

Akali:OMG THIS HELMET! Its almost impossible to get! And the price is beyong expensive!! How the hell did you get it i was looking for it for months!!

(Y/N): *cough* Just... don't wear it in front any police stations

Akali: Huh?

(Y/N): *cough* I got it on a flea market... it fell out of a truck

After a few moments she finally understood what i meant and started laughing promising to give it a few more days. After that i gave a purple bag to Kai'Sa

Kai'Sa:Hiii! I love it!!!

It was just a simple white apron with a very cute kitty picture dressed as a chef. Next came Evellyn she opened her one and she just frowned pulling out pink handcuffs with padding

Evellyn: Darling ? Ummm thank you....

(Y/N): The handcuffs are for me.... *blush*

Once she understood what i meant she made a huge wide grin and licked her lips... her eyes were telling me *we are going to try them soon*. And then..... it came to Ahri. She was just holding her bag not trying to open it

(Y/N): Girls.... can i talk to Ahri alone

At first they were looking at me but then they all just stood up and left Akali was still a little hesitant but Kai'Sa pulled her with her in the end.... i am going to need to deal with that as well

(Y/N): Ahri....

Ahri: You promised.....

(Y/N): Ahri i.....

Ahri: You promised you were never going to leave me.... that you love me... so why did you leave me

She looked upon me... her eyes were full of tears again her look was just screaming "Why" .....

(Y/N): I... i am sorry

Ahri: You promised *sob*... i know... i know what we said *sob* i know that i ignored you*sob* i also know when you asked us to keep the night free but i just forgot *sob*.... but but... you promised... do you have any idea... *sob* how i felt *sob* i didn't sleep for 5 days... every day i would wait for Akali to come back from spying on you just to hear you are alright. Every day i would cry in my bed because of the awfully things i said to you....

(Y/N): Ahri.... i have no excuse... i fucked up. Forgive me.... pleas.... and i am not mad i forgave you because i do love you

And then she was just holding me crying like that day in the hospital she was just crying and shaking while i was petting her back

Ahri: *sob* I am sorry.... i really.... i really didn't mean it to happen... i.... i also fucked up... i am sorry... but never again. Please never again leave us *sob* next time... i wont survive so never again please

I could only hold her while she was wailing in sadness.... I guess... that now they depend on me as much as i depend on them. And i can feel that dark voice in the back of my head finally disappearing getting lost in the darkens... next time... there will be no next time. Never again will i leave them.... Now... how do i deal with Akali... shit

Wow... so many people actually wanted (Y/N) not to forgive.... truthfully i was thinking about it... to maybe make it a few chapters. But in the end i decided no. (Y/N) just cant live without them as they cant without him... if by any chance it was not his fault at all yes i think he would not forgive them. But considering he is also there to blame i believe it balances a little... ofc what they did is much worse but hey. Where is love without sacrifice we cant win them all perfectly

And this season started so happy with Power Armor now i just feel depress and serious these last few chapters... going to need to fix that soon

CHAPTER 60(Where Are The Glasses)

Well this is always the hardest part... when you finish the arc and what to do next. Should i go there should i use this one... no this is one is to early... but what about this one... its always hard to decide where to star... i mean i have a ending arc for this season which is probably going to be the next one now i need to decide where to go with this... lets just start writing and what ever comes up comes

Ryze POV:

Ryze: *sigh* I will not start this conversation again

(Y/N): I am sensing allot of negativity here

Ryze: Oi! That's my job

(Y/N): And why so defensive suddenly

Ryze:..... fine, fine Obi Wan won because of high ground

(Y/N): Now was that so hard to admit

(Y/N) POV

Whop-eesh

We all crossed our legs

Fiora: And that is why you should move your hips in a rhythm

Whop-eesh

And again we crossed our legs on other side

Fiora: But always try to attack those zones that you know work. May it be ears or neck or just simple nipple play

Whop-eesh

And again we returned to the previous position

Fiora: But remember! Always know when to go aggressive! Women also like it gentle

Whop-eesh Whop-eesh

Malph: Why do you guys keep crossing your legs when ever she uses her measuring ruler

Fiora: And that's it for today's class. I will see you next weak

(Y/N), Garen, Braum, Marko, Malph: Yes professor Fiora!

TIMESKIP

It was afternoon and we were siting in the dirty mug having a drink. Kai'Sa was nice enough to pay for all damages and it was fixed in a day since she got some professional contractor company that's on the top level of extreme speed .... i am kinda surprised that i am even allowed to come back here but meh...

Braum: GOD..... that uniform... its so tight

Garen: No man... it has to be that measuring ruler

Marko: Nah nah. Its the glasses... definitely the glasses

(Y/N): All of you are idiots... its clearly the stockings.... wow....

Malph: Still don't get why you all cross your legs every few seconds

BGM(Y/N): Your an dense idiot

Malph: HEY!!!!!!!

And then we started laughing. Yea Garen singed us all up for Sex Edd.... at first i was thinking he is crazy... but man..... i love him. That professor... OMG

Garen: (Y/N) you are drooling....

(Y/N): So are you

Oh god..... i think i herd my little friend 4 times weak up *Actually i ranged 5 times* ah sorry..... OK this is starting to scare me can you talk ! *...no.....* Ah good i thought.... OK no no no NO i am not thinking about this anymore *Good idea*

Braum: So you know the Larp is coming again now at the beginning of March

Marko: So are we all going to follow Xerath's advice ?

(Y/N): Yea i agree... we need to send a message and this will be perfect

Malph: Hey... i am not a idiot

As Malph was still in his sulking faze my phone rang.... shit (Y/N): Hello Akali and yes i am fine

Akali: *Ah.... OK... just checking up have fun in the Dirty Mug*

(Y/N): Sure..... wait... how do you know

Akali: *Bye!*

Huh did i just hear a bike engine outside..... OK this needs to stop

Garen: Bro... this is the 12 time in the past 4h that she calls you

Plus 29 messages i got.....

Braum: I know you guys had that fight but....

(Y/N): Yea... i need to deal with this somehow i just have no idea how... *sigh*

Malph: Hey and i am not dense!

TIMESKIP

sigh I left the dirty mug about 40min ago but i decided to go on foot back home... and all the way back i could just feel somebody staring at me. Not to mention when i was close to the building i saw with a corner of my eye a shadow pass in speed.

Ahri: Hey (Y/N) how was your day

Only Ahri was in the living room watching the TV... good maybe i can get her advice

(Y/N): Listen... can we talk on the balcony

Ahri: Sure!!

As we entered the balcony i just leaned on the rail for about 1 min... i really had no idea how to deal with Akali... lets just see what Ahri thinks. So i started to turn and speak

(Y/N): Hey Ahri i need to.....

YOUUUUUUU RAAAAAAAANG

There she was leaning on the table.... completely naked

(Y/N): W-w-w-w-w-what are you doing!

Ahri: *purrs* Well i know what you and Akali like to do here... so i thought why not that's why you called me right *lick lips*

(Y/N): I.... i.....ah screw it

TIMESKIP

Ahri: Wow!

(Y/N):Aha..*huff huff*

Ahri: I have to say my love you have been trying some new stuff hihihi

(Y/N): *cough* I kinda have been taking classes

Ahri: Hihihih, maybe next time i will let you stay in control for longer *purrs*

We were laying naked on the balcony floor... it was classic with Ahri she starts gentle and caring... but after a few min she just losses control and starts going hard and violent... wow the things she can do with her tails now... but enough of the fun stuff

(Y/N): Listen... i want to talk about Akali

Ahri:....I figured. I already tried, but she is just ignoring me (Y/N): I know this is my fault... but i have no idea how to fix it... its even worse then with Jhin

Ahri:... my love... you need to be very careful she is showing sings of Blood Rage...

(Y/N): What! HOW! I mean she hasn't been violent or anything

Ahri: *sigh* Blood rage is not only desire for murder... it means loosing control with another emotion... For me Jealousy combined with it... i was willing to kill you just to have you for myself... for Kai'Sa

(Y/N): It was guilt

Ahri: Exactly she felt so guilty so hurt she was going to kill anything to get you back. That's why when she found you, anyone around you was her target. That is blood rage we lose control and the emotion that is strongest gets combined with our need for murder...

(Y/N):Shit..... this is bad isn't it

Ahri: Extremely. But you can stop her. Akali is the youngest one of us and she is still a child she will listen to you the most

(Y/N): Oh now that's cute compared to you. Who starts pouting as soon as i don't show her attention

Ahri: *moans* Ah don't bite... don't bite my ear *moans*

Oh yea find the weak point and lunge!

AhrI: *moan* OK wait.....you really need to be careful with her now. She is a ticking time bomb... me and Evellyn are watching her but its very hard to keep track of her

(Y/N): Sight.... yea....hey Ahri what are you doing with your tails !

Ahri: *grin* Oh mister if you think only you get to play with me you are so wrong. Now *purr* get ready to scream again

Oh..... Yay!

TIMESKIP

(Y/N): Thanks for coming with me today

Akali: SURE! I had nothing else to do so i am totally fine

Me and Akali were going to my old apartment to pick up some stuff i left. I was lucky she agreed to take the Taxi since it would be very hard to carry all the bags on her bike... and thank god no Yellow is Red

Akali: Hehehe this reminds me of your first day with us!

(Y/N): Oh yea! You were with me the first time i came back

Akali: Mhm! It was so long ago

Yea... how much my life changed. From getting that birthday present to running into that pervert to Jaina... all of it. As we were going up the stairs i bumped into somebody.... shit

(Y/N): *sigh* hello Tyson

Tyson: Well well look who it is, didn't see you for a long time (Y/N)

.... Tyson a 2nd floor neighbor... even though this guy was 24 something he still acted like he was in highscholl... Big and dumb plus the classic bully attitude... a complete bastard. He then noticed Akali and pushed me to the wall while holding me with his hand

Tyson: Hey there baby the name is Tyson, you ?

Akali:.... Can you move your hand from him

Oh crap... i know that look

(Y/N): Tyson don't just move...

But he just pulled me back and again pushed me to the wall violently

Tyson: Quiet Gray! So honey how about you leave this powerless scum and come play with me, my power is to get hard he he he

crack

Tyson: AAAAaahhhhhhhhhhh MY ARM!!!! MY ARM!!!

(Y/N): Holy.....

In one quick motion Akali grabbed his wrist... and bent his arm at a 90 degree angle.... you could actually see the bone broken out of his skin... Then she just grabbed my hand and smiled while pulling me up

Akali: So want to go to the flea market after this!

(Y/N): Yea.... yea sure Akali

Tyson: Help! Call ambulance Aaaahhhhhhhhh

...This is bad... that was to violent... even for her. Shit Ahri was right

TIMESKIP

Akali: This ice cream is amazing!!!!

(Y/N): I know right! The best one on the market

IceCream Man: Hahaha here one more scoop since you love it so much

Akali: OMG! Thank you so much!

This girl that just destroyed a guys arm for life was eating ice cream without any worries. We finished all the shopping without a hitch and were now just enjoying some ice cream at the end of the flea market..... i guess i need to do this now

(Y/N): Akali... we need to talk

Akali: Mmm ?

(Y/N): *sigh* You need... to stop following me when ever i go outside

Akali: Ah..... you noticed

She was looking down in shame now. Yea i noticed... i also noticed how you looked at that guy who accidentally bumped into me a few min ago....

(Y/N): Akali you know i am here... that i am not leaving

She was just quietly now looking down the floor

(Y/N): I know... i know that situation happened with Jayce... but i promise i will never again

Akali: You always get hurt

(Y/N): Huh ?

Akali: Every time something happens you get hurt... Jhin, Mugging.... us

(Y/N): Akali that's not..... well it is true

Akali: You know... these past few months with us... how many times have we hurt you. First it was the comments with your shopping... then it was when we didn't trust you, then again when you tried to keep us safe... and so on and so on (Y/N): Akali.... i know how it sounds

Akali: Every time you get hurt because of us.... be it physically like Jhin or Sera... or be it mentally or emotional from us... but you... you keep coming back

(Y/N):.... And i will always come back to you and the girls i already told you i love you and i will...

Akali: But one time you wont

Her eyes were full of tears now while she was looking down to the floor. I could see she was doing everything she can not to scream

Akali: What... what if one time i don't save you.... what if one time you cant outsmart someone... what if one time we hurt you so bad you don't come back... what..... what if you grow old and you die

....I see... this was the problem. She is afraid of losing me so much... i mean i keep getting myself into shit... and by some strange stupid luck i keep getting out of it... but that will run out at some point... and...

(Y/N): Akali... i am still young come on

Akali: We don't age...for the past 18 years i haven't aged even once. The girls think i grew a little but they are imagining it. So what happens latter

(Y/N):... I find a android and transfer my mind

Akali: Huh ?

(Y/N): Come on! Look at our technology! For sure ! And don't worry when i transfer il make sure i keep my sexy body just as it is

Akali: Pffffff..... AHAHAHHAHAHAHAHAHHAHAHAHAHAH

(Y/N): Good you need to laugh.

Akali: Idiot!

Looks like she finally relaxed a little... this problem is not fixed but for now it is defused

(Y/N): Come with me i want to introduce you to someone

TIMESKIP

(Y/N): Yo professor you here

Zillean: Ah (Y/N)! Hey there

We entered the professors office at my old college. I am so glad its still completely the same way i remembered it was.

Zillean: Oh! Who is this little flower

(Y/N): This is Akali

Akali: Hello

(Y/N): Akali this is professor ZIllean he was my favorite professor here

Zillean: Excuse me, was ?

(Y/N): Yes was.... and he is the reason i meet you guys Akali: HUH!

Yea... if this old bastard didn't destroy my dream that day... i would have never met the girls. If he didn't get me to work in that library i wold have never had that situation where i met Ahri. And after few moments Akali was just hugging him

AKali: Thank you.... thank you so much

Zillean was first in shock... but after a few moments he understood

Zillean: I presume this girl is your dream now

(Y/N): Hah... one of them but yes

Zillean: Well i am happy to meet you then

Akali: Thank you... and i am so happy to meet you

Zillean: Hahah no worries no worries! Now excuse me kids but i have to leave i have a class. (Y/N) help yourself to some coffee

(Y/N): Mind if i check your papers while i am here want to see where you are on the translation of those scripts from a few years ago

Zillean; Haha sure (Y/N) il see you later

Zillean just left us inside. Akali already went to prepare coffee while i went behind the desk and found the scripts... they were very old and have been found in a deep underwater cave. Me and the professor during my time were maybe able to translate 30% of it... now i see that in these past years he is close to finishing ... 90% was done... shit why does he always write so little... and again with all these pictures of tentacles all over the pages

Akali: So... he is the one who told you not to be a teacher

(Y/N): Yea... shit, where are the glasses.. ah there.... yea and to tell you the truth i don't mind anymore... he was right at that time so i don't really hate him he always wanted the best.... huh Akali why you looking at me like that

When i looked towards Akali she was just standing there looking at me... then she just made a very seductive smile while bending over the table being only a few inches from my face

Akali: Oh professor please don't fail me .... i would do anything for a passing grade.... and i do mean anything....

(Y/N): A-a-a-Akali

Akali: Come on professor... i cant stand it anymore every day i look at you with those glasses.... i just need that passing grade now *licks lips* maybe we can arrange something

*YOUUUUUUUUUUUU
RAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAANG*

(Y/N): LOCK THE DOOR!

Akali: Yes professor!

Camille POV:

crash

Camille: SHIT!

Waiter1: Ah mam its OK! I got it

Waiter2: Poor woman

....Shit.. again with the pity! Just because i am blind doesn't mean i am deaf.... god that bitch.... she burned them all out.... its impossible to heal them now.... now.... now there is only darkness around me...

Camille: I can hear you... so why did you sit across me

????: I thought that maybe we could talk

It was a man's voice.... i hear it for the first time but i could tell it was full of pride.

Camille: I don't know what you have to talk to a blind woman....

????: Well i have resources to help with that problem Camille:.... And why would you help me

????: Because we believe in the same thing! Weapons should not be given a free will

Camille:..... Tell me more

Even though i was blind... i could tell the man was smiling now.

I actually put a little teaser for a future arc inhere lets see if people will find it!

Important Announcement

Ahem! Now there no easy way to say this... but this story needs to slow down a little.

Now let me explain what i mean. I have been posting this story to fast, simple as that, there fore mistakes have been made. I mean i don't feel that bad about it i just simply have to much time during my vacation and its a nice time killer (although i am looking for a job since this Corona just extended my vacation to Jun..... motherfucking CDC and their stupid rules and regulations).

During last nights chapter... it was so hard to write it, i found it... boring. I have a few arcs planed... but they just don't fit currently at the current progression of the story. The biggest problem with that is Jayce Arc.... truthfully it was supposed to come latter not so early . And now it fucked up half of my plans... kinda no point now to make any tension between MC and KD/A now because of all the shit that happened right now between them. The next arc could very easily be the last one and the ending to this story. But truthfully i still haven't decided if i want to end it yet i think this story has so much more potential.... but i also don't want to do 10 filler chapters then story ARC then again 10 filler chapters and story ARC.... that's just Bleach all over again or StarWars ep7..... So now i have to make a choice. And the best way to do that is to focus on something else.

For my story A wizards promise.... i will probably put it on pause... i just don't think my writing is good enough to do it right now. The characters over there are to complicated and if i mess up i will have 10 characters where 8 of them are copy paste personality. Plus that story is going to have allot of combat which is still very weak at my domain

So i will start another one that will be the focus of my attention and hopefully give me ideas how to continue this one and in what direction.

The first one will be set in the world of League of Legends. The (Y/N) of the story will be a simple man who visits Noxus because of a family

death and then he will get involved with some very dangerous people in there. Now you saw how i like to make my MC's week on the power but a dirty bastard when it comes to thinking. I guess the most special thing about him he will have a demon inside of him that he likes to call Dea. The demon lady who just has to throw inappropriate comments at the worst time. I know this is not really a explanation but this will do for now. I guess.. the stories name would be ....hmmmmmm.... The Breaker of Chains (LeagueOfLegendsXMalereader)

The other one i decided a few days ago and its a story i have been thinking for some time for a long time actually. I am a huge fan of Vampires,Werewolf's, Witches and so on. And the one thing i noticed 99.9% of them are either ManXMan or Twilight bullshit wannabes... so lets switch it up what would happen if we have sexy Vampire queens some Werewolf Alpha girls or just some simple succubus meet (Y/N) a normal simple guy with bad luck (YES all my character have bad luck). He will be a new face in the city of Forever-Dusk coming for a new job but what he doesn't know that city is a haven for supernatural. Witches, Vampires, Werewolf's and so on. This one is currently my preference and i think i will start with it

For the name i have no fucking idea il go for Blood Job for now.... so any suggestions from you guys?

Now what i am wondering if some of you who read this will they find any of these ideas interesting and if you do which one would you prefer to read... for me is still story nb2 that is in the lead for now so can i please get your opinion

The Beaker of Chains

or

Blood Contract

I know this is not some people expected what to find this morning but truthfully.... JustMyLuck is now at a dangerous position. All god things must come to a end but i have a feeling that i will not be satisfied with the ending at least not just yet. So i think this will be a good little project to bring in a fresh perspective and i will drop chapters in it slowly as i get ideas how to exactly combine it all.

And for all of you that were interested in the Wizards Promise i am sorry but that one is on hold for the time being.

CHAPTER 61 (Change Your Mind!)

So i decided to do one of these. This is the final arc for season 2. For now i am planing 4 chapter but you never know maybe it will go crazy. I have to say doing ''Bloody Luck'' really relaxed my brain so i think i have a idea how to go with this one... lets just hope i don't mes up the characters

Ryze POV:

(Y/N): So when you look at it from both perspectives it was technically not my fault

Ryze:..... Your joking right....

(Y/N): Ummmm no

Ryze:.... OK let me just mark this box on my paper

(Y/N): Wait box for what

Ryze: That you need to go to the Asylum

(Y/N): Oi!!!!

Ryze: YOU CUT THE MANS BRAKES ON HIS BIKE!!!

(Y/N): Yes but is it really my fault

Ryze: YES! AND HE IS GAY! HE NEVER DID ANYTHING TO YOU

(Y/N): I mean really ? When you think about it's not really my fault

Ryze: YES FFS!

(Y/N) POV:

Well this day started shitty....

(Y/N): Evellyn... can i please get the key....

Evellyn: No

(Y/N):... You know this is a crime right

Evellyn: Not if your enjoy it darling

(Y/N): I AM NOT ENJOYING IT!!!!! NOW GIVE ME THE KEY TO THE CAGE !!!!

TIMESKIP

Well this day already started fucked up... this morning when i woke up i found myself in Evelyn's room... in a cage. She really did buy the fucking cage!!! It took about 30min of me screaming for her to finally let me go....Yea today is Saturday and all of them are in a pretty bad mode...

It's noon now and i am about to leave for my meeting with my marriage candidates... and its not getting any easier. Once i finally escaped Evellyn i found Kai'Sa putting in some pills in the coffee... once i asked her about it she just smiled and handed the cup over to me... Yea... i made a new one.

Akali was even scarier... a few times she "accidentally" let go of her Kunais and that last one was about 1mm away from my foot... i could actually hear a *Tch* coming from her...

But the most scary one... was Ahri. She was just siting there... smiling. And when i asked how she was doing she just said "Oh fine! Hey good luck today with your date". Her poker face was perfect.... i have a really bad felling about this... *sight*

(Y/N): OK guys i am going.... Evellyn i can see you there with those handcuffs don't even think about it

Evellyn: *tch*

(Y/N):Please, just please try to stay calm. Il be back by evening

AEK: *growling* Fine....

Ahri: *smile* Have a nice day

Kai'Sa POV:

(Y/N) just left us to go for his meeting.... i know he is doing this for me but its not helping my mind at all... if he only didn't see me putting those sleeping pills in his coffee...

Evellyn: So how long you going to fake Ahri

Ahri: Sorry ?

Evellyn: Nice try.... Le'Blanc

And then the fake Ahri just puffed and Le'Blanc was siting on her position

Le'Blanc: Sorry dears... she kinda charged into my home last night and demanded i do this

AEK: GOOD!

Le'Blanc:..... (Y/N) has it hard

TIMESKIP

Braum gave me a ride to the coffee shop after i made sure he was not into any of their plans. I was now siting drinking some coffee while waiting for my "dates" to show up. Apparently both of them will come here at the same time...

Waitress: Can i get you anything else

(Y/N): NO all is..... what the fuck are you doing

Either i am crazy... or she thinks i am stupid... My so called "waitress" had a fake black wig and was wearing glasses... but there was no mistaking it.... Plus.... hide your fucking tail next time

Ahri: Oh i don't know what you mean kind sir. Now why is someone like you siting here, you look like someone who has people back home *smile*

.....Fine... lets play

(Y/N): Ah you are right... but you see i was bored i man my favorite one Ah *ahem* Akali couldn't make time for me

Oh her eye just twitched

(Y/N): And my second favorite Kai'Sa was also busy

Oy oy don't brake the pen

(Y/N): And my third one Evellyn also had some businesses , so there was nobody else

Ahri: *growling* Aren't you forgetting somebody.....

(Y/N):Ah no... i don't think so "Waitress"

Explosion in 3....2.....1..... huh ? Nothing ? Really. She just made a smile and walked into the kitchen

BOOOOOOOOM *CRASH*

KitchenCook: HOLY SHIT THE WHOLE WALL IS GONE!!!

Ahri: Ehehe i slipped and punched it accidentally

.....I think i better bring her some flowers or something when i come back.... scary

As i was thinking how i poked the dragon to much. The door to the dinner opened..... what the fuck. The fist to enter was a full squad of fully armored guards. They were clearly in ceremonial armor and were wearing the crest of Demacia.

After them two ladies followed in. One was also wearing armor which was lighter and a sword on her hip. She looked like a simple girl actually. Long brown hair made into a braid and some freckles on the face... i actually found them cute

The second girl that entered was also wearing armor but it was much less. She was were pretty in my eyes. Her short blonde hair was amazing and that costume man... looks like a body suit that is two numbers smaller.... OK NO.. and to confirm my NO i could feel Ahri staring at my back

The captain of the guard just approached my table first

CaptainOfTheGuard: Are you (Y/N) (L/N) Swain

(Y/N): Just (L/N) no Swain

He frowned a little but just nodded his head

CaptainOfTheGuard: It is my great pleasure to present Lady Cithria of Cloudfield known as Cithria the Bold to her enemies! And Lady Luxana Crownsguard of the Crownsguard familly

.....Oh god..... seriously man

(Y/N): Umm pleasure (Y/N) (L/N) of don't talk to me before my morning coffee family

That made the guard just look at me in shock while the blonde girl which was Luxana apparently started to giggle. Cithria just had a cold expression.... crap i really don't need to piss of the Demacians... they are

extremely difficult when it comes to their traditions... but luckily Luxana came forth

Luxana: Its fine Captain. We will take it from here

CaptainOfTheGuard: Very well M'Lady. All of you OUT! This is now official Demacian businesses you will be compensated for your order.

The people just complied... a few of them tried to protest but a few guards just put their hands on their swords and the backbone was gone... then all of them were outside except me and the two girls who just say across me.

Cithria: It is a pleasure to meet you Sir (L/N)

(Y/N): Can we please skip the sir part... and just call me (Y/N)

Luxana: Sure!

OK.... and now we are at the awkward stage... and i cant just ignore them since for sure gramps will find out... god Kai'Sa you better let me put the cowboy hat for this!!!

(Y/N): So..... ummm.... how were your travels...

Luxana: Oh it was fine, since we were coming with King Jarvan we had a private jet

(Y/N): Ah i see.... ha-ha-ha

Luxana:Hihihi

..... Please somebody speak... i cant... this is to awkward. But then Cithria just made a huge *sight*

Cithria: Sir... no (Y/N) i have a felling you don't want to be here

(Y/N):.... *sigh* Am i that obvious

Luxana: Yea... this is not a first time i am meeting a candidate in the past year so...

Cithria: Your kinda giving out a aura

(Y/N): Well the truth is....

Waiter: May i take your order

(Y/N):..... Are you fucking kidding me

And now standing next to our table in a full tuxedo with a fake red wig was Garen.....

(Y/N): Garen what the...

Luxana: OMG! Seriously brother! Leave me alone

(Y/N): HUH!?

Waiter: Who is this brother you speak off kind lady. And shouldn't somebody young like yo be home playing with stuffed toys

Luxana was just looking at him in with anger while Cithria just had a look that was saying "Of course". Wait... seriously lets check

(Y/N): Wild Kobolds

Garen: HUH! WHERE !!!! U PROMISED NO MORE (Y/N)!!!!

I was just looking at him with a deadpan face now.... then he looked towards me... and he run away

(Y/N)&Luxana: Idiot.... huh ?

And then the two of us just started laughing... but what peaked my interest was

(Y/N): Wait YOU are Garens sister Lux.... huh when you think about it makes sense

Lux: Yea... *sigh* I don't see him fro 2 years and he still acts like this... OMG what did he tell you about me

(Y/N):..... nothing

Lux: *stare* You are lying...

(Y/N):I promise.... the baby pictures were not that awful....

Lux: OMG! I AM GOING TO KILL HIM!!!

Yea i could just laugh... nothing else. Huh Garens sister. I know he talked one night when he got drunk how he was from a Demacian royal family. But he left because of some situation that he didn't want to share. Ofc that was follow by his brother complex talk about his little sister and showing of a good number of pictures

Lux: Can you believe him... who does stuff like that

Ahri: Have you decided on your order

(Y/N):..... Yes... i know your pain believe me

Cithria: I would like some coffee please

Lux: For me the same but please some extra cream and sugar

Ahri: *whisper* Good ! he doesn't like when people add that

..... I CAN HEAR YOU!!!!

After a few moments Ahri came back with the order. But after putting it on the table she just stayed.... which made all three of us look at her

Cithria: Is there... something else ?

Ahri: Ah no i am just here waiting for your next one

Cithria: We could just call you.....

Ahri: Oh i don't mind

..... Yea she was not moving

(Y/N): One day BAN....

Ahri: Oh come on!!!!

(Y/N):Two day BAN

Ahri: OK OK !!! STOP! I am going

And her going was her siting at the bar and staring at us. The two girls were now looking at me with shocked expressions

(Y/N):..... Say hello to my "Garen"

Lux:.... Wow.. pffffff hahahahhahahahhaha

Lux was just laughing but Cithria... i could tell she was extremely upset

Cithria: This is ridiculous.... and insulting

(Y/N): I am...

Cithria: Instead of training or organizing my troops or even spending my time better i am forced to waist my time with a person who is not even interested in this meeting... so tell me SIR (L/N) why are you here

....The girls had all rights to be angry.... and i Lux was also now looking at me with a serious expression it was clear she felt the same but was acting nice..... *sight*

(Y/N): Blackmail

Lux: Excuse me ?

(Y/N):Jericho Swain blackmailed me to come, so either i come to this meeting or he hurts someone important to me

Cithria: But he is your grandfather....

(Y/N):Tell me Cithria your a knight, and for sure you have seen battle... what do you think about my grandfather

Cithria: I..... i am sorry. I did not know

(Y/N): *sigh* No its ok... its clear your a good kid and sometimes that direct bluntness is just what somebody needs

Huh.... why is she blushing now! Come on don't look so cute suddenly!

Lux: So you really don't want to be here....

(Y/N): I am sorry but no i already have someone in my life and all of them are extremely special

Lux: That waiters there that is now giggling and waging her tails...

(Y/N): *sigh* Yea.... her

Lux: I see... well to bad i want to meet you again *smile*

(Y/N): Huh!

Ahri: WHAT!

Cithria: Me to actually

(Y/N): Oi!

They were just laughing now... and i can hear something braking on the side.... i don't even want to look over there

(Y/N): May i ask why....

Lux: Well i already know some stuff about you from my brother. He told me stories

(Y/N): Oh god..... what

Lux: Did you really use a guy who was annoying you as a sacrifice to spill itching powder on my brother

(Y/N):*grin* Why yes i did!

Lux: Hahahahah i am still laughing so yea i would like to meet you again! And that's final *smile*

Oh god.... crap. I mean she is cute and everything but i already have the girls

Cithria: And.... you are nice and different from the usual people i meet... nobody ever complimented my bluntness... usually they just complain for pointing out their flaws or things i don't like *blush*

Omg what is that village accent suddenly... fucking hell stop being cute and what kind of people did you meet.... probably some nobles and knights... Then both of the girls just got up and started to leave

Lux: We will call the Embassy and set up another meeting! I know how you feel but i would like to spend more time with you

Cithria: Who knows, maybe we will change your mind!

(Y/N): I....

Lux: Bye (Y/N)! I was so glad to finally meet you

Cithria: Good bye *blush*

.....And then they left.... what the fuck jut happened ..... I mean i didint even try. Both of them, arent noble supposed to be i dont know noble. What

kind of people did she meet. And wtf is wrong with Lux... i just told them my situation.

Ahri: (Y/N)

..... OH SHIT! This is Blood Rage level of fear i am feeling right now

Ahri: I am bringing out the vials again *growling* and this time..... no safe word!

..... Maybe i can run away in to the cage.

CHAPTER 62 (If You Can Not Charm Him)

Back here now! Big moment in BL done now time for some JML

Ryze POV

Ryze: This is preposterous !!!

(Y/N): WHO THE FUCK GAVE YOU YOUR LICENSEE !!!

Ryze: HOW THE FUCK ARE YOU NOT IN JAIL

(Y/N): YOU SHOULD HAVE DIED AT CHILD BIRTH

Ryze: YOUR FATHER SHOULD HAVE NEVER FUCKED YOUR MOTHER

Ryze's Assistant: Gentleman whats going on here !!!

Ryze: He said that Black Cat is better then Catwoman

(Y/N):He said that Catwoman is better then Black Cat

Ryze's Assistant:..... Your both idiots

(Y/N) POV:

Swain: So they said they are satisfied with you and they want to meet again

(Y/N): I see

Swain: I have to say i am impressed, i was sure you were going to mess it up on purpose

(Y/N):I tried....

Swain: Well that's good anyway.... now just one question

(Y/N): Yea

He was just looking at my left and then to my right.... yea. We were in some coffee shop that he found. Yesterday was the meeting and apparently already the two informed the embassy they want to meet with me again. Gramps was extremely happy of course.... good for him.

Now for his question and by the way he looked to the sides he could probably only mean Akali and Evellyn. Akali was siting on my left reading some magazine, while Evellyn was on my right tapping on her phone. Akali's Kunai were all stabbed on the table in front of her, and Evellyn's tail blades were out wrapped around me.

(Y/N):I am kinda not allowed to meet with you anymore by myself... something about you making me do something and tricking me. Didn't really have a choice

Swain: Nonsense you are a grown man. If you want to ..... *cough* *ahem* i apologize and your presence is appreciated ladies

During his big speech Evellyn just snapped her head towards him and Akali slammed her foot on the table making it brake in half. Which made the big bad leader of Noxus change his tone completely....I have to say, i am impressed

(Y/N): Listen Gramps... you understand i have no intention of marrying them ? And i even told them that... so what is going on here

Swain: Maybe they just liked your charm ?

(Y/N): Seriously....

Swain:*sigh* Listen (Y/N) you may not get it, but life in Demacia is hard. Even though they all live happy and good, they have no freedom from my point of view. The country is build upon rules and tradition. Do you know

what we Noxian's say about them "A Demacian would rather fuck a goat then admit his tradition is wrong"

At those words Akali actually started to laugh... but yea i get him. I was in Demacia once when i was a kid as a school trip. We were not allowed to almost do anything. There were rules for everything and traditions had to be followed... if you mess up they did not care if you were a child

Swain:These ladies might as well be using you just to get some freedom. Its especially hard when your a noble lady in that country. Women have almost no rights compared to men and if your a noble your job is to find a husband and give him a baby. Why do you think the female Demacian generals are such monsters ? It's because they had to go through hell to get to their position.

Sigh Well guess that makes sense when you think about it. Them meting me is probably the only free time they will get this trip, and its no surprise they want to prolong this. Guess i will try to be nice.....

TIMESKIP

I was now siting in the Penthouse living room after finishing my lunch with Gramps. All of the girls left for some businesses giving some final alone time. Well it was supposed to be...

(Y/N): Can you stop staring at me....

Garen: *stare* What are you intentions with my sister

(Y/N):..... I have no intentions

Garen: Is my sister not good enough for you ? You don't like her body or her face ?

Oh god.... seriously man.... fine lets play

(Y/N): No man did you see that skin tight body suit WOW!

Garen:MOTHERFUCKER!!!!

(Y/N):Relax man, relax i am joking.... so why are you here ?

Garen then just sat back down while making a huge sigh... i knew he was not here just to play a big brother. Something was definitely going on with him

Garen: Listen.... my sister... she is strange

(Y/N):Define strange ? All woman are strange just look around us

Garen: True man... but i mean she is not the same on i remember. She acts all sweet and nice... but... something is different

(Y/N): Didn't you tell me you haven't seen her in like years? People change and grow up you know that right

Garen: *sigh* I do. But just be careful.... she is serving Jarvan the IV.... and that man is.... well lets just say i left because of him

(Y/N):OK you never told me this... you want to share

And then Garen just sighted and motioned for the balcony. Once we were outside he asked for a cigarette... yea this was hard. Garen only smokes when he is depressed or drunk. So i just complied and gave him one. After a few min he started talking again

Garen: Jarvan is a hard head proud man full of tradition. Ever since we were kids he never missed a moment of reminding all of us he is the prince and we are Demacians. About 8 years ago i decided i don't want to be a royal guard

(Y/N): Royal guards are in charge with his safety right ?

Garen: *nods* Exactly. I always wanted to help people not be some glorified knight who only walks next to the king in shiny armor. That was of course unacceptable. The Crownsguard family has been in charge of that position for over 15 generations. FFS our last name is basically our job and position

(Y/N): Let me guess... it did not go well ? Family make your life a living hell ?

Garen: My father was furious... he wanted to send me to jail as a traitor... Jarvan approved. I was supposed to be his captain when i grew up... we were best friends and he approved of me being banished to the dungeon for the rest of my life... just because of tradition

(Y/N):Fuck man.... how did you..... how did you escape ?

Garen:My aunt who was and still is the Captain of the Royal Guard had to intervene... she convinced Jarvan the III to banish me out from Demacia instead the dungeon.

(Y/N):Garen man i am sorry. I never knew

Garen: It's OK and this is why i am telling you this. There is no telling what Jarvan is getting out of this. And i will not be surprised if my sister is on it. This is not some simple marriage... this is something else

(Y/N):Thanks for having my back

But he was now just looking at the floor in shame... you could see the next words were very hard for him to say

Garen:If it comes to you... or my sister i will chose her. Just so you know

The rest of the smoke we just spent in silence until Garen left.... i see.... this is actually starting to sound very dangerous when you think about it.... fucking gramps... what did you get me into

Evellyn POV:

sigh What a disaster. I am just looking now at the contract we got. Apparently we will be entertainment for the birthday of King Jarvan... its going to be in 3 days and he will celebrate it here. So he requested the KD/A group as his singers...

Truthfully this is good publicity and will give us plus points with the Demacia. But considering all that is happening with darling and his so called bride candidates this is the last thing we needed.

????: Excuse me Miss Evellyn

As i was getting to my i car i heard a voice call me from behind... once i turned i did everything i can not to groan in annoyance... it was the man himself with a giant holding of flowers

Evellyn; King Jarvan what a pleasant surprise *smile*

Jarvan: I was hoping to meet you so i have waited. These flower are for you

I would love nothing more then to rip all these flowers apart. But i cant. He is a King and it will end badly for me and (Y/N). We have to control our self until these peace talks are over and his meetings with the candidates are done

Evellyn: And for what reason ?

Jarvan: Nothing just a gesture of good will. I look forward to seeing you at my party

And then he just bowed while kissing my hand and left.

Rip

I hate flowers.... and this is a bad sign i can just feel it in my gut

TIMESKIP

(Y/N) POV

Ahri: So anyway tomorrow evening we are all going for dinner! I already made reservations in a fancy restaurant and it will accept all 8 of us and everything

Kai'Sa;Perfect that will be wonderful.

Tomorrow my two sisters are visiting. It was kinda a perfect combination. Casi has been complaining how she never got a chance to come visit me and Kata wanted to see gramps. Well it was perfect until the girls found out about it

(Y/N):Girls... you really don't have to do this! Its fine il just hang out with them

Akali:Hey its fine! We like the two kids

Evellyn:And considering the last two times you tried to organize a dinner.....

(Y/N):Ok.... no comment on that... but isn't the last one your fault.....Oi. don't ignore me

sigh Well i guess it wont be so bad actually. I want to spend some times with girls, these past few days have just been to busy... And it will be easier for me to deal with Casi and Kata not to mention it will be better if they stay at my place... just makes me feel safer for them.

(Y/N):Now if we could only kick out my grandfather it will be perfect....

Kai'Sa: Come on (Y/N)! Don't be like that... i mean we all started on the wrong foot with him... me especially! So this will be a perfect chance to get to know him

...My dear sweat Kai'Sa.... you have no idea at what hell you are walking into... family dinner with all of us... i would rather spend time with Ahri and Evellyn in heat.... i would feel safer

Kai'Sa: Can you not look at me with so much pity.....

(Y/N):*sigh* Sorry..... well anyway i have game night with Ekko and Yasuo see you tomorrow

Evellyn POV:

Darling finally left for his room so this was a perfect moment to talk to the girls about my run in

Evellyn: Jarvan showed up at the office today....

Ahri:Oh ? And what did that brat want

Yea... i forgot Ahri despised him. A few years ago when we were doing a concert he was annoying her the next day non stop. Sending chocolates and flowers all day. Even showed up during our shopping and free time... apparently he thought because he was the prince we would love to be in his presence

Evellyn: He just brought flowers and wanted to say hello

Akali: Please tell me you ripped them apart

Evellyn: After he left... he is a King now ladies we need to control our self....

Kai'Sa: Well it should be fine. But if he tries something we will deal with it..... and if he tries something with (Y/N).... i will kill him

Ahri was looking at me with concern while Akali was just looking at Kai'Sa with open mouth. This is not the first time ever since her Blood Rage she drooped a comment like this. Its not that we mind. She was always very possessive of darling, and ever since she found out he has to go to these meetings because of her it has became much worse.... but i agree with her.

Jarvan is annoying and dangerous... we need to be careful in his presence. But like Kai'Sa.... i will destroy his whole country if he puts darling in risk.... i have no problems with that... il make 1000 Demacian's suffer for every hair that is touched on darlings head

Jarvan POV:

Assistant: We just got a call few min ago from our agents. She is back in the penthouse

Jarvan: I see... to think she really ripped all those flowers apart... how disrespectful

How dare she. A mere peasant dares disrespect me, a King! I will enjoy putting her in chains her and her whole group. But now to other matters.

Cithria: Cithria reporting for duty my lord !

The child that was bowing down in front of me was Cithria.... she was a up and coming knight that was raising through the ranks in high speed. From intelligence to combat talent she currently had no match... her only problems were that she was of common birth and a woman... *tch* they just keep getting out of hand. In the past this would have never happened under grandfathers rule... its my blasted father, he was to soft

Jarvan: Arise Cithria, now tell me when is your date with this so called (Y/N) ?

Cithria: Day after Tomorrow sir... we just got a call from the Noxian embassy telling me the time and location.

Jarvan: Very well.... if you can not charm him.... kill him

Cithria: M-m-my lord ?

Jarvan: You heard me soldier, kill him. This is a direct order from your king

Cithria:I.....i..... yes my lord

Tch I hate it when i have to repeat my self.... doesn't matter anymore. If this person (Y/N) disappears it will be much easier getting KD/A into my kingdom... the Piltover people are fools. Weapons need to be used and controlled not left alone happy and free. This is why you are so weak... i will use this power and make a perfect country !

CHAPTER 63 (I Cant Hear Anything?)

OK i haven't posted here in a long time so lets do a few chapters here

Ryze POV:

Ryze:Wait explain this to me again....

(Y/N):So basically its very simple. You go the junkyard in Zaun and you buy a tank. Its pretty cheap only 10k $

Ryze:Yea seriously its cheap

(Y/N):Yea i know right. But the thing is the engine has been removed and there is no firing mechanism. So you need to improvise

Ryze:Yea that part i need to hear again

(Y/N):So you go buy a few bicycles, mold them in inside and connect them to the wheels. Then you grab a few homeless people and make them sit on it and paddle

Ryze;But what if they don't want to ?

(Y/N):You just attach a pizza to a fishing rood and rotate it they way you want them to paddle. Then you can just run over the people no needed to shoot

Ryze:Oh i see i see that is a good idea..... i think i need a shrink now

(Y/N) POV:

Casi:BROTHER!!!!!!!

SLAM

Yea i am not even going to complain anymore. Every time she sees me now she just jumps into me coiling all around.... *sigh* i can feel my spine breaking again

Kata:Oi! Casi get off our big brother he is hurting!

The Casi just let me go as Kata pulled her up....yea she wants something

(Y/N):What do you want ?

Kata:That obvious

(Y/N):Yes it is

Casi:She got a boyfriend and he is coming for dinner tonight

Kata:You stupid brat!!! Why you tell it like that

Then the girls just came in after they heard the commotion for now only Akali and Evellyn were here. Ahri had some businesses to attend to and Kai'Sa went to get some groceries since the girls will spend a whole day here and she wants to make them special lunch

Akali:Hey brats! How are you doing

Kata:Yo Akali!!!

Evellyn: Hello dears

Casi:Thank you so much for letting us stay here! Wow the penthouse is so big.

Huh she got a boyfriend... how nice. The girls were already drooping here luggage and Evelyn started to explain their sleeping arrangements

Evellyn:Kata will stay with Akali and you dear will stay with Ahri.

(Y/N): So a boyfriend you say ?

Kata: *ahem* Yea he is a little older but very nice

Akali:Oh thas cool!!!! I am so happy that... OW OWOWOWOWOW (Y/N) why you pinching me

(Y/N):*smile* Oh sorry i thought i saw a bug. Older you say ?

Casi:Much older

Kata:HEY!!!!! He is not that much older... he is actually your age

twitch twitch

Evellyn:*whisper* Is his eye twitching

Akali: *whisper* last time i saw this was during the leash night.

(Y/N): My age you say ?

Kata: Well yea... he is very nice and cool and so badass ! He actually works in Piltover.

(Y/N):*smile* Oh i see i see.... Hey Kata i wanted to show you something come with me.

Kata:Huh where ?

(Y/N): *smile* There is something in Evellyn's room you just need to see

Kata:Umm ok.....

Akali: *whisper* What is there in your room ??

Evellyn:*whisper* Huh nothing... all the same the only different thing is the....

Kata:Huh what is this cage ?

So i just suddenly kicked her inside and locked the door

Kata:HEY!!!! WHAT ARE YOU DOING!!!

(Y/N): YOU ARE STAYING IN THAT CAGE UNTIL YOU TURN 50 NO MAKE THAT 65 WHEN I WILL ALREADY BE DEAD IN OLD AGE!!!!!!!!

Kata:BASTARD!!!!!!! LET ME GOOOOOOOOOO!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

TIMESKIP

We were siting at the living room table having lunch now. Earlier this day Akali and Evellyn just decided to restrain me and release Kata out.... traitors. Now we were on opposite sides glaring at each other.

The girls were just eating nervously around us... well all except Casi who was just screaming in delight every few seconds how she cant believe she is eating with KDA

Casi:I cant believe i am eating with my favorite idols!!!! I can die happy now!!!

Kai'Sa:Its fine sweetie, i just hope you like my cooking

Casi:Oh its amazing !!! I have never tasted something so good Evellyn:OK how long are you two planing to act like this ?

Evellyn just sighted and put her fork down as she was looking towards me and Kata now.

Kata:Until my brother stops being a idiot

(Y/N):Until my sister stops being a moron

Ahri:*sigh* (Y/N) come on, she will be 18 in 1 month. She can date boys

I just looked towards Ahri and smiled

(Y/N):Your banned for 1 month then *smile*

Ahri: Oi!!!!!!!!!!

Akali: Come on man don't be like that. Its her choice i mean what you worried about ?

(Y/N):That she will do something that she will regret latter in her life and make a stupid mistake in a stupid moment of rashness, now eat you vegetables Akali or i am banning the glasses!

Kata:So what ? You have a problem with me sleeping with him! Well WHAT IF I WANT TO!

(Y/N):AND YOU WILL NOT! SEX IS FORBIDDEN BEFORE MARRIAGE

Kata:OH REALLY! SO WHY ARE YOU NOT EATING LEMONS ANYMORE

At those words i just snapped my head towards Akali of course. But it was not here... then i heard something fidgeting on the side and getting up slowly so i just moved my hand grabbing Ahri's tale

(Y/N): E X P L A I N! For what reason does she know that

Ahri was just looking to the side and i could see she was starting to sweat.

Ahri:Well.... you see.... ummm..... i..... (Y/N) your joking about that one month right..... (Y/N)

(Y/N): T A L K

Evellyn:Wow... even i am scared of his voice now

Kata:I asked her for advice!!! And we were talking on the phone and she mentioned it

Ahri: (Y/N) don't squeeze my tail so hard!!! Its hurting me!!!

Just breath.... just breath and calm down. Yea yea... i just need to calm down..... nah

(Y/N): Kai'Sa.... We will do that thing that you were asking me that i refused if you kill Ahri

Kai'Sa: .....Seriously

Ahri:Hey Kai'Sa why you looking at me like that..... wait don't pull out your cannons!!!

But then Evellyn just sighted and slammed her hand on the table

Evellyn: Darling with me to the balcony now. And Kai'Sa stop charging your cannons... and we will talk about that thing you want to try i am kinda interested now. Akali take Kata and Casi to the mall to buy some clothes for tonight.

I was just dragged to the balcony by Evellyn. After we were out and she closed the door she just crossed her arms over her chest and was looking down upon me with a frown

Evellyn: She is already old enough to make her decisions

(Y/N): She is 17! There is no way i am just going to

Evellyn:She will be 18 in one month and Didn't you say yourself she is a rebell ? The more you deny it the more she will want it

(Y/N):What ?

Evellyn: Listen darling saying NO to a teenager is like saying " I dare you". She will only want to do it more.

(Y/N);Your right.....

That's right. She always liked to rebel, and me just saying no and trying to forbid it will make it worse... i see. Makes sense when you think about it

Evellyn:So lets just meet this boyfriend of hers. If he is a assholle its easy to make him disappear *grin*

.....OK that last part was scary.... But yea she is right. We can always make him disappear... he-he-he Evellyn:Ok now your smile is scary darling.

We came back inside with my mood instantly approved. Ahri was just standing behind the couch with a scared face looking towards me.... *sigh*

(Y/N):Fine your not banned

And then she was already around me giving me a big kiss and a happy face.... god why am i so weak when it comes to them.

Akali POV:

We were in the mall going through boutiques while thee girls were looking through some clothes. We were now leaving the 4th one with already her hands full of bags filled with clothes and shoes

Casi:Hiiiii thank you so much Akali!!! This is amazing! Its so different compared to our little town

Kata:Yea thanks!.... but those prices are so expensive.... is it really fine

Akali:Haha no worriers kids! We got you covered this is nothing to us.

We then just sat at one of the multiple food bars around and order some deserts to eat and drinks... Kata wanted alcohol actually buy (Y/N) would kill me if he found out. As i started drinking my bear Casi drooped a bomb

Casi:So are you also sleeping with my brother

Akali: *spit* *cough cough* What i ....

Kata: Don't worry we kinda figured it out

Casi:Yea its obvious that its not only Ahri he likes.

Huh smart kids. Well its not my fault they know this so (Y/N) cant blame me

Akali:Yea we kinda share him between us

Casi:Well as long he is happy ..... but if you hurt him

....And i thought Kata was scary. She is actually hissing now. Huh (Y/N) has good family.

Akali:I kinda wanted to ask you guys something....when we met (Y/N) all those months ago he was so....

Kata:Broken ?

Akali:Yea..... can you tell me why. He never really talks about it

Then Kata and Casi just looked between each other and sighted. But then they had looks of resolve and started to speak

Kata:When brother was in highscholl he fell for some girl. They were actually together for a good 1 year... he liked her very much and in the "Love each other forever"... So he decided to tell her his secret

Both Casi and Kata had a pissed of expression now.

Casi:If i could get my hands on her!!! HIsssssssss

Kata:On Christmas night they went for a date... and he told her about him being a powerless...it ended up badly. By the story i got. He was walking around alone for hours in the night. When he came back home he was different.... but the worst was tomorrow

I could see in both of their faces this was extremely hard for them and it was a very emotional moment in their lives.

Kata:The whole school found out he was a powerless... thy started to bully him, discriminate, his friends played crazy, the teachers approved of

everything. Diana went to school to see what was going on and why nobody was doing anything.

Casi:But they did not care... the just said "His fault for lying so long"

I am mad now... i ma very extremely pissed off now.

Kata:After that he just closed himself off... we were not sisters anymore to him... just people who are going to hate him for being a powerless in his eyes.

Akali:*growling* What was the name of that bitch ?

Then Kata's face just went dark and she made a evil grin

Kata:*grin* Oh don't worry about her... i made sure she ends up on our grandfathers special list

Casi:He likes to call it " People who annoy me so lets make them suffer". Our brother actually picked up allot from him even if he will never admit it

Kata:A few rumors here and there and she disappeared one night a couple of years ago. The rumor was that she was a terrorist who planed to attack Noxus in the end *grin*

Good.... I am very happy to hear that. And now i remember how Kata was ready with blades that night at their place. She might be a kid but she is good. She still has allot to learn but she will be a powerful person in the future.

Casi:Now let us ask you a question

The girls were just kinda looking at each other but i had a idea i knew what they wanted to ask.

Kata: Those wounds on him.... they are not from a bike accident, are they ?

Akali: It was Jhin from a radical group called "4 protection"

Kata:Are they dead ?

Akali:I personally took care of it *grin* and Evellyn made sure that their families suffer as well

Kata:Good

After about 15 more min we decided to head back. As we were making our way to the care Kata's phone rang and Kata just answered in a happy voice

Kata:Hey babe! You ready for tonight !..... Sure yea!!!..... AHa..... Don't worry my brother will like you!!! You both like the same stuff.....mhm..... Sure il see you tonight hihihi

Akali:Oh its going to be fun tonight when (Y/N) sees him!

Casi:I know! I cant wait!

Kata just got red now and was talking in a flustered voice

Kata:OMG he is so annoying now! I was sure he would understand ! But he will like him i am sure of it!

Hahah yeaaaaaa riiiiiight. He can be a perfect guy and (Y/N) would still hate him. I better make sure tonight he doesn't actually try to kill him.

Casi:Oh i cant wait to see grandpa!!! We haven't seen him in so long

Kata:Yea even i haven't seen him in a year. We also need to visit Leona tomorrow! We promised

Casi:Yea we need to tell brother i know he is evading her and all but he needs to pay a visit

Akali:Huh ? Does he not like her?

Then both of them just laughed

Kati:Imagine our mom x2 with the baby talk and over protection. Its because of her that he got that nickname

Akali:*grin* OH!!!! I definitely want to meet her

Well lets just hope no shit happens tonight. There is a pattern with (Y/N) considering dinners and nights out.

TIMESKIP

The Limo was pulling next to the restaurant Ahri made reservations to. It was apparently the 2nd hottest thing in town right under Order & Chaos. Apparently Kayle said we were banned from eating there any longer.

Every time i go to eat some shit happens. As we got out Casi was just ecstatic.

Casi:OMG i cant believe i drove in a limo!!!!!! My friends will be so jealous!!! And we had a driver. That person had such a amazing mustache

Ahri:Hehehe i am happy you liked it dear.

Kai'Sa:Did your grandfather call already ?

(Y/N):*sigh* Yea he will be a little late but he is coming no worries..... so Kata... isn't that skirt a little short

Kata: *grrrr* Arent you a little short

(Y/N): YOU MOTH????? ?????????? ???????????

I couldn't finish my sentence since Akali was holding her hand over mouth while sighting... god this little brat! But then she started to look around and just made a huge smile and started running.... fuck lets just follow Evellyn's advice and calm down

Kata:Babe!!! YOU ARE HERE! Did you wait long

????: Hahaha no worries my princes i would wait for the end of the worlds for you

.....Wait... i know that voice

Kata:Oh come let me introduce you, you already know my sister Casi

????: I am so glad to see you again, you grow beautiful every time

Casi: Hihihihi *giggling* stop hehe

No its cant be... i still cant see him clearly but come on !!!!

Kata:These are KD/A but you probably know them already they are so popular

????: Huh.... wait..... it cant be

Ahri:OMG!

Evellyn:I want to laugh.... but.....

Kai'Sa:I cant believe it..... Casi come here next to me

Akali:AHahahah somebody is going to die tonight

And then she brought him in front of me

Kata:And this is my brother!

He was just looking at me with a deadpan face as i was in him

Kata: Brother this is....

(Y/N): I WILL MAKE SURE FUCKING OGRES WITH GIANT ZOMBIFIED DICKS WHO HAVE SYPHILIS AND ITCHING POWDER WHILE BEING ON FUCKING FIRE RAPE YOU! ALL THE WHILE GIANT TENTACLES FROM THEIR BACK DEEPTHROAT YOU WITHOUT ANY LUBRICANT !!!!!

Casi:Huh, why did you put your hands on my ears Kai'Sa, i cant hear anything... hey Kai'Sa

(Y/N): GAREN I WILL FUCKING MURDER YOU YOUSONOFABITCH EVELLYN TRAP HIM AND THROW HIM INTO THE CAGE NOW! I AM GOING TO MAKE HIM SUFFER FIRST!!!!!!!!

Garen: WAIT, WAIT, WAIT!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

Casi:Hey move your hands and why is my brother trashing like crazy while Akali is holding him

CHAPTER 64 (I Will Join You!)

Wow like 250 notifications this morning.... my email is dying i need to find a way to turn the email announcement so i don't spend 20 min every morning deleting that stuff

Ryze POV

Ryze:...You need to go to jail...

(Y/N):Oh come on! It was not that bad

Ryze:Yea we are done for today

(Y/N):Dude!!! Why you pulling your phone

Ryze:Bye..... 911 i want to report a attempt at murder..... yes yes
(Y/N):Oi!!!!!!! ITS NOT MY FAULT! He said anime is kids cartoons!!! Oi!!!!!!!!

Swain POV:

Swain:Good i am not late to much.

I arrived in front of the restoration that i am supposed to have dinner with my gran kids. I heard those KDA girls will be here as well but i don't really have a problem with that i can even maybe try to recruit them tonight... my problem is that Leona heard about this and decided to join in as well.... *sigh* I don't like dealing with her, Diana is a loving wife.... but Leona..... no wonder she doesn't have a boyfriend.

????:Excuse me sir.....

Swain:Huh? .....what the

I followed the voice that called me and just widened my eyes in shock. In my life i have seen much, i have saw things that would make any other person have nightmares till the rest of their life... but..... this i never saw before

????:Can you.....maybe help me

A young man was there. He was tall of strong build. But.....

Swain:How did you.....

His legs were separated to the sides like a gymnasts and directly under him was sword maybe 1mm under his family jewels... the only reason he hasn't impaled himself on it is because he was holding for dear life with the rope that was in his mouth... if he he moved in a inch goodbye manhood....

????:Ummmm your grandson..... and then his aunt showed up.....

Swain:I....i see.....

I think i would rather be on the battlefield tonight

(Y/N) POV

(Y/N):Anyway girls this is my aunt Leona she....

Leona:Hello ladies its a pleasure to finally meet you in person

When Leona showed up i was a little shocked. I really did not expect her to come but for now she was acting respectfully at least she had some self control unlike her sister..... and she did help with Garen mwhahahaha. Oh i don't even want to imagine what will happen tomorrow at work when she catches him!!! AHAHHHAHA Kai'Sa:The pleasure is our mam

Akali:Hey there! Nice to meet you

Evellyn:I think i..... you look very familiar

Ahri:Yea.... AHHH!!!!!! YOUR THE RADIANT DAWN!!!

All four girls were in shock after Ahri finally recognized her... but Leona just made a smile and nodded her head.

Leona:Don't worry tonight im just a aunt to my little Pterodactyl

(Y/N):OH GOD !!!! Seriously Leona

Kata:Cant believe you did that to my boyfriend!!!!

And Kata just couldn't hold herself anymore and had to talk back.... big mistake. Leona is loving when it comes to me but....

Leona:And you young lady!!! He is 10 YEARS OLDER THEN YOU!!!! What were you thinking!

Kata:He was nice! And cool! And older boys are so much better!!!!!!!! YOU HAVE NO RIGHT TO MAKE THAT KIND OF DECISION FOR ME

Leona:You screaming now just points i was right! AND you Casi!!! What is with that skirt! ITS TO SHORT! Is that how a lady acts!!!

Casi:Well brother likes it!

Leona:Ah OK then!

.....Yea Casi just figured it out in one moment. As i use them to get Swain of my back, she uses me to get Leona off her back. I just glanced towards the girls who were in complete shock at the scene that was going

(Y/N):I warned you... but no. You wanted to come....

Evellyn:Next time darling.... i will listen to you

And then the door of the restaurant opened and Swain walked in... behind him was Garen

Kata:Baby! Are you OK!

Kata rushed towards him but he just backed of and did a High Five with her..... Hahah he was sweating like crazy

Garen: Hahah y-y-y-yes fair Kata, but don't rush at me like that we haven't even hold hands

Kata:What... but we

Garen:WE DIDN'T EVEN HOLD HANDS YET!!!!!

His look was begging for mercy from her, while he constantly kept glancing towards me and Leona.... wait... is that kevlar ? Did he just put on his Commando uniform... hahahahahahha Swain:Leona

Leona:Swain

....And now there two are looking at each other with murder in their eyes.... oh god this is going to be 2017 New Years all over again.

Kai'Sa: Ummmm (Y/N)....?

(Y/N):Yea... its going to be a fun tonight

Ahri:Well all! Lets stop standing here and go get our seats!! Dinner awaits

Casi:Oh i want to sit next to Evellyn!

Evellyn:Of course dear

Swain:Leona

Leona:Swain

Kata:Baby don't be scared! They wont hurt you !

Garen:Scared hahah i am not scared..... *whisper* i am terrified

Akali:This will be fun *grin*

.....Can i get captured by Jhin again.... i think it will just be easier

Jarvan PON:

MentalWorker:This is the room you highness.... are you sure you want to enter?

Jarvan:Yes, now open the door

As i entered the room i saw the person i was looking for. Seraphine was laying on the floor scratching something on the piece of paper. Then she noticed me and jumped up

Sera:Oh hello your highness! I am so sorry i couldn't make it for my concert 2 weeks ago.... kinda locked up here

Jarvan:It is fine Sera... i am her to give you your freedom back

Sera:Wait ! Seriously! That's so cool! I cant wait to get out

Good! This girl was always easy to control. I just need to push her complex and hit those weak spots and she will do everything i say. Why cant all of my subjects be like that

Jarvan:Of course my dear. I feel just bad how your family never even came to visit.... how awful simply dreadful

Sera: Yea.....

Yes good that dejected look is what i need. Good i can use her for my future plans. She might not be a rift survivor but her powers are not to be looked down upon. I can use her and i will get even closer to my future plans of a perfect Demacia.

Sera was now packing her stuff in the bag that was brought it. As i looked around i saw the name (Y/N) all around and different pictures of him.....*tch* to think i almost lost such a valuable resource because of him.

Sera was finally ready and we started to leave as soon as we got out of the door

Jarvan:Also i will need your help with the KD/A my dear

Sera:Oh really!?

Jarvan:Yes i am planing to make them serve under me. So i will need all the info you got and then we can use it against them.....Sera ?

I actually noticed after a few more steps Sera stooped moving. As i turned around she was making her way back to her cell

Jarvan:Hey! What are you doing ???

Sera:Yea.... i don't think so. (Y/N) will be sad if you take KD/A away from him so no. I don't want to !

Jarvan:YOUR IN HERE BECAUSE OF HIM!!! AND YOU HATE KDA!!!!

Sera:And he comes every week to visit me and spend time with me. Unlike you who only comes to me when he needs me. So bljaaaaaaa. And i love (Y/N) so no can do! Bye bye Bljaaaaaaa

She actually pulled out her tongue at me and closed the door to her cell..... HOW DARE SHE!!!!!!!!!!

Jarvan:Worker! I want the higher ups to know i personally suggest Seraphine to be banished to the VOID!

MentalWorker:Well there were talks.... but they have been all denied

Jarvan:What WHY!!!!

MentalWorker:The Radiant Dawn.... came into her defense

.....SHIT! The Radiant dawn is connected to this (Y/N)!!! FUCK HE JUST KEEPS MESSING UP MY PLANS! FUCKING HELL!!! HOW DARE YOU DO THIS TO ME!!! YOU ARE SABOTAGING ME ON PURPOSE YOU SCUM! I WILL MAKE YOU FEEL WHAT IT MEANS TO CHALLENGE A KING

(Y/N) POV

(Y/N): *Acho*

Kai'Sa:You getting a cold ?

(Y/N): Nah... i just felt like someone not important was mentioning my name.

We were now siting at the big table in the restaurant having dinner.... it was fun! Well for me.

Swain and Leona have been glaring at each other half the night. Kata was trying to be lovey dovey with Garen who was sweating like crazy.... hey is that a riot shield behind him....hahahah Casi was talking with Evellyn and Ahri, while Akali was now getting a lecture from Leona on her vandalism in the town. But all good things must come to an end....

Swain:Tomorrow is your Date with the Lady Knight

CRACK

Kai'Sa:Oh sorry.... i squeezed the glass a little to hard

Waiter:*gulp* No problem mam.....*whisper* That glass was basically bulletproof so people don't brake them

.....OK dangerous. *sigh*

(Y/N): *sigh* Ok gramps can we stop this already... i really do not care

Swain:And you agreed with it. SO honor your promise

Leona:The promise you blackmailed him into !

Swain:He could have refused!

Leona:You as well as i know he couldn't!

Swain:Your pampering him to much!!!!

Leona:And you are strict to much!!!

.....Am i 13 years old or something...

Casi:Big Daddy i saw this beautiful dress but its very expensive... *pout*

Swain:He he don't worry Big Daddy going to buy it for you Leona:No he WONT! Your grades are down! Until you fix them no dresses for you!

Swain:STOP BEING SO HARD ON HER! She needs to experience youth!!!!

(Y/N):*sigh*.... I am going to go for a smoke

Leona:Sure honey take a coat its cold outside

Swain:Smoking is a filthy hobbit! Stop indulging his every need!

Leona;HE i still young! If he wants to explore he can explore!!!!

The KD/A girls were just looking in shock at the scene unfolding in front of them... while me and the brats just sighted since this is a normal occurrence for us.

I was standing outside smoking when the door opened and Leona came

Leona:(Y/N) we need to talk...

There was not lovey dovey voice now... she was serious. The last time she was like this was when i decided to leave for Piltover

(Y/N):If its abut the girls i don't care.... i am staying

Leona:You keep getting into trouble because of them.... i know you are happy and that's why i keep cleaning up your mess but....

Yea just as i figured.... Leona has been cleaning behind us even i am not that stupid not to notice that. But now.... her look was different

Leona:I cant interfere for what ever happens with the Demacia and Noxus... if all goes to shit you are alone.... so please be careful....

This is not good.... this is not good at all. So lets just hope nothing goes wrong

TIMESKIP

We just entered the apartment after that disaster of a dinner. Apparently Casi is going to stay with gramps while Kata left with Garen.... i will murder him when i see him next time! As we took our seets i heard Evellyn yelling over her phone

Evellyn:What tomorrow ? But..... i see.... fine!

When she came back to the living room we were just looking at her, but she just sighted and started to speak

Evellyn:Tomorrow King Jarvan wants us to come to the Demacian Embassy and have dinner while we make a plan for the show on his birthday that's going to be the day after tomorrow.....

Akali:Shit!

Ahri:What no! (Y/N) date is tomorrow! How are we supposed to spy on him now!

(Y/N):Oi!Oi!

Then before i could say anything else my hand was grabbed by Evellyn and she started to pull me towards her room

Evellyn:When i am done with you tonight you wont be able to think about another woman

Oh.....Ooooooohhhhhhhhhh....Yay

Akali:I will join you!

Huh join..... JOin.... JOIN!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

" YOU RAAAAANG x2"

Jarvan POV:

Jarvan:So do you understand what you need to do

Lux: Yes my king....

Cihtria:Yes.....my king.....

Good! After tomorrow everything will finally begin! Then i looked towards the side and smiled

Jarvan:The new eyes look wonderful Camille

Camille:Yes... your scientist is amazing

Viktor: Its just GLORIOUS EVOLUTION! Nothing special

Jarvan:What about the new army you made Viktor? Are they ready?

Viktor:Yes my king! The Blitzz units are ready for deployment

Perfect.... once i get my hands on those weapons tomorrow, nothing will stand in my way anymore hahahahahahah.

To think i will be able to use this (Y/N) in such a way! Good, after tomorrow you will spend the rest of your life suffering.... well at least it wont be a long life after Carmilla pays you a visit.

CHAPTER 65 (It's Friday ?)

So we have came to this..... at the end of this chapter.... there is a good possibility this story goes under complete! I have been thinking about it so much... and to tell you the truth i just keep prolonging the end. I just don't feel like writing this book for now. And after this one it will probably go under a big brake.

I have been feeling this for a couple of previous chapters and you know its time to stop when you actually feel like its a strain to write this. Now it only comes to how am i going to end it.... if its going to be a happy go lucky ending or if i am going to put a huge cliffhanger.

A happy good ending means i just gave up on all my future plans and ideas for it and that means its goodbye. Now if i leave it open... it means that sometime in a near future i will make another story that will continue on this one. I will decide by the end

I just think its time for me to stop prolonging this i don't want to do another Supernatural TV series thing where you just post it because people want it.... so yea this ladies and gentleman is the last chapter of this book but then end of it is still up to debate so its also probably going to be a very long chapter i will go over my 2500 limits for this one.

SO ITS TIME TO BRING "JUST MY LUCK" TO THE END!

(Y/N) POV:

I was getting dressed and getting my stuff up and ready for my so called date. Last night was... wow! The things Evellyn and Akali did.... OMG! I mean.... WOW! It was just a perfect combo Akali who was such a submissive type and Evellyn who had so much domination.

Evellyn:Darling you are drooling

(Y/N):Ah yea sorry.... anyway this date wont take long and you guys be careful tonight OK ?

Ahri:Haha don't worry we dealt with Jarvan before! Nothing will go wrong

.....I really have bad luck when someone says stuff like that. But lets just hope this time its different.

TIMESKIP

(Y/N):Hello Cithria was your drive pleasant

Cithria:Yes (Y/N).... wow so this is Zoey land ?

We were outside of the city in front of Zoey Land. Apparently gramps involved his fingers inside and made us come here..... *sigh*. Well at least its a amusement park so we wont have to talk to much

(Y/N):Yea! SO lets go, anything you want to ride first ?

Cithria:Oh oh !!! The stardust express please!!!!

Her eyes were sparkling so much...yea i will be nice. Its clear this girl never was at a place like this. I can at least make it pleasant for her

Mundo POV:

Mundo: Mundo does not like this.... Mundo would prefer if the girls stay as far away as possible from him

Kai'Sa:We know Mundo.... but we have to do it for our job

Mundo:*sigh* Fine.... and here are the contracts you requested. Mundo made them perfect for you

Kai'Sa:THANK YOU MUNDO!

The girls decided to give (Y/N) rights to their assets and songs... it was basically a marriage certificated even though there was no ceremony or it would not be made public..... Mundo is happy for the girls. Its good to see them so happy now

(Y/N) POV:

(Y/N):Crap crap crap crap SHIII

(Y/N):Haha its OK Cithria! you should enjoy yourself

We were already half way through the date, and were just siting on the bench eating some cotton candy, cant believe she never tried any

Cithria:Yea.... why are you so nice to me ? I thought you hated me for making you do this

(Y/N):I don't hate you Cithria.... i really hope you enjoy yourself today

Cithria: *whisper* I am sorry....

(Y/N):What ?

Cithria:Nothing hahah lets go! I want to try the Galactic Hammer next!!

.....Oh god...!

Evellyn POV:

Evellyn: It's our honor to see you King Jarvan

Jarvan:Haha the honor is mine please please join us.

As me and the girls made our way inside we were taken to the huge center hall, there was a huge table filled with people. Most of them were officials from Demacia with some city people... but my eyes stooped on the corner.

There was Swain with a few Noxus officials as well... what is

Jarvan:Yes i decided to hold peace talks today, so that will also be a important negotiation next to our hahahah

Ahri:Ah i see King Jarvan how wonderful

Kai'Sa:Ha-ha-ha i see we are honored to be here....

Akali: *whisper* Shit

I don't like where this is going... i just keep having this bad feeling.... that something very wrong is about to happen.

(Y/N) POV:

We were finally done for today. Cithria insisted that i let her and her escort drive me back to the city. I didn't really mind since it beats a Taxi.

Cithria:Do you mind if we stop by the Embassy first Lord (Y/N)?

(Y/N):Actually not. I can also meet up with the girls over there. But no need for Lord part i told you already

Cithria:I yes.....*whisper* I am so sorry

Cithria again mumbled something under her breath.... and the look she had. It was so full of sadness and dejection... i guess she is just sad because we had to leave Zoey Land... but what is this bad feeling i am having

Ahri POV:

Ahri:Ahaha yes yes, i agree so much!

Demacian Oficial:I knew you would Lady Ahri! I am glad we look upon it the same way

This dinner is disaster.... we are constantly getting swarmed by Demacian and City officials... we don't even have a moment to make a phone call. As the last person left and i was about to try to escape Jarvan stood in front of me

Jarvan:Hello Lady Ahri you grow more beautiful every time that i see you.

Ahri:Ah yes hello King Jarvan, thank you for your kind words

Jarvan:Now now! Just Jarvan is fine, now i will skip the small talk and get to the point i want you to become mine.

Ahri:Excuse me ?

Jarvan:I want you and the KD/A girls to become mine. Ofc i cant make you my official wife since you are not royalty but you will be my highest standing concubine .....*sigh* Again this bullshit

Ahri:And for the 10 time i refuse

He made a frown now

Jarvan:I understand why you refused me last time i was just a prince but now i am King!

.....*sigh* Again this same mindset.. this person just not understand. This is why (Y/N) will always be so much better then him

Ahri:No King Jarvan now if you will excuse me i have to go

Jarvan: *whisper* You wont refuse for long hahaha

Ahri:What ?

Jarvan:Oh nothing nothing i understand.... enjoy your night *smile*

This.... something is wrong. He gave up to easily... i need to talk to the girls. But they are all surrounded

(Y/N) POV:

(Y/N):The embassy looks amazing

Cithria:Yes..... now lets go inside

As we entered i could only look around in amazement. There were red silken drapes all around us and everything was in gold and in elegant design. As we were walking further in i keep t noticing more and more guard show up around us (Y/N):Cithria.... what up with this escort ?

Cithria: *whisper* I am sorry

Huh... why does she keep mumbling all day.... what is going on here. Then we passed through some door and were moving through the hallway and once we turned the corner i saw Lux standing with a sweet smile. There were two guards behind her....

Lux:Hey there (Y/N)!

.....That smile.... why does it look so wrong... I looked towards Cithria who just broke down crying and started screaming "I am sorry". But before i could even say anything Lux just talked Lux:Really (Y/N).... you couldn't control yourself at all, its not right to treat a girl that way

(Y/N):What.... what are you saying

And then her smile got wider on one of the two guards raised his hand and

smack

Hit Lux causing her to fall to the ground. And then the other followed

(Y/N):WAIT WHAT ARE YOU

Cihtria:*sob* I am so sorry! But he is my king *sob*

There were kicking and beating Lux and even ripping parts of their clothes. And then the guards around us jumped on me

Evellyn POV:

Evellyn:I don't like this..... something is wrong

Swain:I know.... listen you need to get out of here and get my grandson. He is still with

But before Swain could finish the door of the hall busted open. All though left me as i saw the scene unfold

There was a young Blonde girl in bruises and cuts all over here. Here clothes were ripped all over not hiding anything. She was full of tears and crying. And behind her.... the guards came in pulling (Y/N) in chains and Orichalchum collar over his neck

Jarvan:What is the meaning of this!

Guard:Sir!!! We found Lady Luxana screaming as this persona named (Y/N) raped her!

Oh no.... NO NO NO NO NO NO NO NO ON!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

(Y/N) POV

Jarvan: THIS IS UNACCEPTABLE!!! HOW DID THIS HAPPEN!!!!

What..... no come on... this is some kind of joke.

Jarvan:My dear Luxana ! How! Are you fine

Lux: *sob* He he was pushing all day.... *sob* but in the end he just lost control and attacked me *sob* i couldn't do anything....

Then she was crying like crazy as Jarvan was holding her in her arms. I looked around and i saw them. The girls were just looking at shock at me.... i would have started to scream but i knew they would never believe this i could even see Akali getting ready to jump with her knives but Ahri stooped her....as she pointed to my neck...

Yea i had a orichalcum collar around it... but the first thing about it it was the special one... the one that was a bomb at the same time..... how ! Why...

why is this happening

(Y/N):Those are lies i .....

SLAM

One of the guards just hit me on my back making me crash into the floor

Kai'Sa:NOOOOO!!!! WHAT ARE YOU DOING!!!

And then i looked up and saw Jarvan, he was looking at me with such hate in his eyes.... but the worst part was. He made such a evil grin once Kai'Sa screamed..... oh no.

Jarvana:Swain!!! IS THIS HOW NOXUS DEALS BUSINESSES! IS THIS HOW NOXUS ASKS FOR PEACE

My grandfather for the first time ever since i knew him just had a shocked face.... he was not speaking just looking towards me. But after a few moments he looked towards Jarvan with eyes full of rage

Swain:Don't play with me BOY! This is clearly a set up! I want proff

Jarvan:You have proof! My guards and the lady Luxana have....

Swain:Someone who is not part of your country KING JARVAN!

Then Jarvan looked toward me.... the grin was back

Guard:There was a civilian who saw everything sir

Jarvan:Bring her IN!!!

....HE never said it was a SHE! But as i tried to speak again i was hit on.

Akali:YOU HIT HIM ONE MORE TIME AND I WILL MURDER YOU ALL!!!!!

Demacian Diplomat:How dare you therethen a ..... HIIIIIIIIIII

Akali was already going to kill this guy with her Kunai but Evellyn stooped her.... the face she was making was scaring me the most now.... it was full of despair

Evellyn:Wait..... the bomb is still over his collar

And then the door opened and Camilla walked in.... he had mechanical eyes and was dressed as a civilian.... but the way she was looking at me and the girls told me everything

Jarvan: Tell me what have you saw citizen

Camilla:Mister (Y/N) (L/N) here was forcing himself on the blonde miss. She was refusing him but then he just lost it and started hitting her and ripping her clothes off.

Jarvan:You know this monster ?

Camilla:Yes! This monster here has been causing trouble with the KD/A through out this city for months! But because of his connections we couldn't do anything to him. He is a known deviant and criminal and when i tried to arrest him i lost my job!

Jarvan:HOW AWFUL! TO think Piltover functions like this..... Swain is this proof enough I looked towards my grandfather pleading with my eyes but he was just quiet.... he looked towards me and his eyes were just full of sorrow and defeat.... no.... come on no....

Jarvan:By the power bestowed upon me and as the rightful ruler of Demacia, I King Jarvan the 4..... proclaim you guilty and sentences you to the harsher punishment possible, YOU ARE TO BE BANISHED INTO THE VOID

Kai'Sa:NOOOOOOOOO!!!!!!!!!!

And then some guy just removed a cloth from a box that was on the side, then he pressed a button and a purple portal opened.... i saw pictures of it... i

saw TV shows about it... but when you are standing next to something like this.... al reason leaves you....

The guards then just lifted me up and turned me around to the portal..... i just couldn't say anything.... fear was taking all over me.

Ahri:Wait wait wait!!! STOP PLEASE STOP!

Ahri was holding Jarvan and begging him

Ahri:We will join you! We will become citizens of Demacia i will become your concubine just don't! PLEASE DON'T!

Akali:LETS JUST KILL THEM LET ME GO!!! EVELLYN LET ME GO!

Swain:CALM DOWN! The bomb is still at his neck!!!!.....

Kai'Sa:No...no....no.....no.....

Akali was being held and was struggling trying to get away from her grip. Evellyn was just looking at me with such fear in her eyes, i have never saw her so afraid, Kai'Sa was kneeling on the floor and just repeating those words as she was looking at the portal.

Ahri:Please Jarvan PLEASE!!!! We will do anything please

Ahri.... don't cry like that... please. But Jarvan just smiled then

Jarvan:I will not take you as my concubines you had that option... but i will take you as property of Demacia! You will be our weapons for the war to come. You will belong to any Demacian be it weapons or just simple pleasure. Women like you are nothing more !

Those words.... no... fuck no..... NO!

Ahri:We.....we accept.....

(Y/N): NO!!!!!!!!!! DON'T YOU WILL GAAAGH

But they just punched me into the stomach again to stop talking

Jarvan:Wonderful! Prepare the collars! You all agree to this i presume

Evellyn:Yes.....

Akali;MOTHERFUCKER YOU MOTHERFUCKER!!!!.....Yes.... just don't

Kai'Sa:Yes..... just let (Y/N) go.... just let my (Y/N) go

But then he just started laughing as 4 people with difrent collars came inside

Jarvan:Your ? Things have no property! Your nothing more now then simple dolls and weapons.

And then Ahri got a collar on her, Kai'Sa was next then Akali but before he could put the final one on Evellyn she spoke

Evellyn:First..... release (Y/N).... and you can put it on me

Jarvan:.... *sigh* Fine release him

I was just looking at shock. Ahri, Kai'sa and Akali were standing on the side with collars all around their necks. Some soldiers came and grabbed them violently and pulled them to the corner attaching chains as well to their arms.... NO..... NO NO NO .....

Then as one of the guards removed my collar Jarvan stood in front of me

Jarvan:You see peasant.... i am the king. And i decide what is mine. Let that be a lesson for you.

I see.....i have made my choice then.....i guess i am a liar

(Y/N):Let me just say one last thing to the girls

Jarvan:Fine i am not a cruel man.

So i just turned to them

(Y/N):Ahri.... the day i met you is the day my life changed forever.... i will never regret you taking me to that restaurant and joining me on that rain... i always loved rain but you made it beautiful . Just clean your room sometimes OK ? Its always the worst hahahahah

Ahri:(Y/N)... i *sob* i will.... *sob* i will never let my room get dirty again

(Y/N):Akali.... you know i hate rapping in my opinion that just people walking around... but you are a goddess when it come to it. I will never forget the day you were my hero and saved me, maybe next time we can take a ride but no more Red is Yellow OK ?

Akali:Sure.... yea sure..... one day sure!!!!!!!

Jarvan:Can you speed this up

I could see Jarvan was getting impatient.... but fuck it

(Y/N):Kai'Sa... my sweet sweet Kai'Sa..... you are so good and nice... i am really worried about you some times. I really hope that the day will come when i will see your smile again... and please stop attacking every innkeeper when you DnD hahaha your getting a reputation

Kai'Sa: *sob* *sob* Don't leave me i don't want to leave

Then i looked towards Evellyn and made a smile, which just made her eyes go wide

Evellyn:Darling... what are you

(Y/N):And you Evellyn.... you might say i am your princess but you are my princess. You may act tough and dangerous but i can see how easily you can get hurt.... so please stay strong for me... and know i will always be your and you mine

Evellyn:Darling.... (Y/N) WHAT ARE YOU DOING !!!!

Jarvan:Lets end this already! I.....

(Y/N):I love you all to much..... and i am sorry i cant keep my promise

And then i just ran... every fiber of my body was screaming at me... every part of my mind was screaming to stop. But i didn't care.... i will protect them this time. I will save them this time Jarvan:WHAT ARE YOU.....

And i just jumped through the portal..... they will not suffer because of me.

Swain POV:

Then my grandson disappeared as he jumped through the portal..... he willingly went through it so the girls don't suffer because of him... this..... stupid child.... stupid stupid child!

Kai'Sa:NOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO

The girl Kai'Sa ran towards it but they already turned it off. Now she was just hitting the ground under where it used to be screaming and crying.

????:Kill

Ahri was just siting on the ground with her eyes full of tears and a dead look into them. She was just staring at Kai'Sa

????: Kill , Kill

Akali:NO NO NO !!!!! NO YOU CANT NOOO!!!!!!!! GET HIM BACK GET HIM BACK NOW GET HIM BACK !!!!!!!!

Akali was screaming in rage as the guards held her, the collar was doing its job and was blocking all her strength and power

????:Kill, Kill, Kill

Jarvan: Pfff hahahahah waht and idiot! What did he accomplish with this ! WHAT A STUPID PEASANT HAHAHAHAHAHAHAHah oh god i cant ahhahaha. This is why commoners are so pathetic

He... i will make him suffer i will make him die! Peace! FUCK PEACE! Noxus goes to war, but before i could say anything

Ahri:Swain..... i suggest you get out of this city..... you were his grandfather..... but nobody will be spared

I was looking towards Ahri then and lost my breath... she was glowing blue now while all her tails were out and then she just put her hand on the collar *CLANK* And ripped it off as it fell to the ground

Akali was the same

????:Kill, Kill, Kill, Kill

Green tatoes formed all over her body and she ripped the coral throwing it to the side

Jarvan:That....that is impossible.... how are you....

Kai'Sa: I will make you pay.... your whole country will pay for this

Kai'Sa color was already on the floor as some kind of living armor formed on the floor. And then after trying to ignore it all this time.... those words that were coming on my side... the side were i was afraid to look... i just turned my head

Evellyn:Kill Kill Kill Kill KillKill KillKill KillK

KillKill KillKill KillKill

and.....GGGGGGGGGGGAHHHHHHHHHHHh

As Xin said those words a pink black spike rushed out of the ground and atacked him... he was still alive but barely breathing. Then i turned my head and saw the scene i would think i would never have to see again

Evellyn: Kill KillKill KillKill KillKill KillKill KillKill KillKill KillKill KillKill KillKill KillKill KillKill KillKill KillKill KillKill Kill Evellyn was walking forward me in her full demon form, her tail blades were flailing all around as she was approaching me with only murder in her eyes Leona:I see... Blood Rage..... I was kinda disappointed you did not recognize me during dinner... i mean we did fight in the rift allot of time.....

To think i will again have to fight this monster.... but this time there will be no second chance....

Leona;Garen tell Veigar to send our rift survivors against these girls.... i will hold her here

Garen:Yes mam!!!!!

TIMESKIP

Mundo POV:

Mundo:So where should we go?

Sera: Yea the Airport is fine! I have a old green friend waiting for me there so i will join a merc company! Pop star is just not fun anymore

Mundo was now leaving the mental institute after picking up Sera.... she is getting released today after the Radiant Dawn pulled some strings and got her out

Mundo:To this (Y/N) would set this up.... oh Mundo is sorry! Mundo was not thinking !

Sera:Hahah its ok its ok, i mean he will be back

Its been some time since the city got almost destroyed.... in the end the girls were stooped after 8 more rift survivors entered the battle... luckily none of them died. Apparently they were all under Radiant Dawn and Noxus Senators order that they are not to be killed..... But Mundo still had to use their money to pay all the damages.... its scary how much money they actually have. Even after spending millions to repair everything they still have enough for a good life

After they got back to normal. They were depressed beyond words.... No matter how many times Mundo would visit Mundo would see no life inside their eyes.... until that day

FLASHBACK

Diana:Hello sweeties! How are we all, oh hello there ! My name is Diana and you ?

Mundo:Mundo mam! pleasure

Diana:Ohoho huh ? Why are you all so dead in the eyes ?! What kind of attitude is this

Evellyn:We.....

Diana:Oh come on! Do you want my little pterodactyl to be sad once he comes back ?

END OF FLASHBACK

After those words i could see a spark of life activate in them... it took some time but in the end everything was back to normal. The girls are still extremely sad... and Mundo cant remember the last time he saw them smile again... but its progress..... but the chances of him coming back.... nobody ever escapes the Void.... nobody

TIMESKIP

Swain POV:

Swain:And ?

Kata:King Jarvan the 4 still refuses to leave his room.... the things they did to him.. he is just spending all day rooking in his bed and screaming... he even screams while he sleeps..... good but he deserves more*growling*

I disagree.... the things they did to him... the only reason i am still alive is because i was lucky. That scene... was awful. Those girls are monsters i was lucky i had a bad feeling and called three of our rift survivors. Or the whole city would be erased from the map.... and Demacia..... it will take decades for the country to recover.... so many injured so many dead....

Swain:Kata.... how about you quit this job

Kata:What ? Why!

Swain:*sigh* I already lost one grandchild... i don't want to lose another one.....

At those words her eyes were full of tears

Kata:Casi still cry's every night.....

Swain:I know..... Listen i have a friend in Ionia you should go there for a vacation.... and just relax a little... then you can decide

Kata: *sob* Sure.....its not fair..... i finally got my brother back.... *sob*

Swain:I know dear i know..... that's why i will make his final wish a reality

Kata:*sob* Yea, thanks for keeping queit about the girls

It was the least thing i could do..... that stupid grandchild of mine..... if i ever see him he can smoke and drink coffee as much as he wants.... but nobody escapes the void

TIMESKIP

Ekko POV:

Yasuo:SHIT CAN YOU FOLLOW THE SCRIPT AND MOVE PROPERLY ALREADY! FFS YOUR FUCKING USELESS!!!! GET OUT

Young Girl:I *sob* I AM sorry *sob*

Yasuo:Useless brat!

....Yasuo just lost all composure after he hard what happened... ever since that day he has never been the same. There was no cool wise man Yasuo anymore. Just a person full of rage and anger who lashes out on everybody

Qiyana:This is the 6 one today he screamed at..... how are we supposed to find new members like this .....

Ekko:Can you blame him.... after what happened....

Senna:Yea.... you have changed as well Ekko....

Yea... i can feel it. Once i heard that (Y/N) died i just lost all my childhood behavior.... just doesn't feel right acting like that anymore....

Ekko:OK next one! Send in he next one

Syndra POV:

Syndra:I have to say Le'Blanc your coffee is not so good at this place anymore.....

Le'Blanc:Oh.... i see.... sorry dear.

We both knew why the coffee was not good..... i miss that smart ass

Le'Blanc:I am going for dinner with Evellyn today... do you want to join ?

Syndra:Sure....

Braum POV:

Malphite: And i attack for 3d6 ! 9 damage!

Garen;SHIT MAN! We are level one how do you do that!!!!

Marko:I am the DM and i approve

Braum:Hahahah

BustyWaitres:Hey i have been wondering.... did Kai'Sa stop playing completely....

At those words we just all went quiet.... yea Kai'Sa never answers anymore... she just refuses and tells us next time

Garen:.... Ummm..... yea.....

Marko:..... How about i send some kobolds now

Garen:Oh god no!!!

Yorick POV:

Yorick: And that's going to be 38$

Customer:Sure

Yorick: *SIGH*.... go away

Customer: Huh ?

Yorick: If you don't barter no sale! now piss off

Kayle:He just ran away in full speed.....

Yorick:I don't sell to people who don't barter with me....

Morgana:It's ok Yorick.... we understand.... we really do

Pantheon POV:

DING

Ahse: *Speaking in Russian* (So this is the bakery he was talking about)

Pantheon: OH WHAT BEAUTY!!!! MARRY ME

Ashe:NO!!!!!

The beautiful lady just kicked me in the face and left. But she came back with a guy who translated for her

Taric:She heard from a little GEM this place was amazing and wants to buy and try... his name was (Y/N) Pantheon:..... *sigh*..... I see welcome and enjoy yourself! Il give you the special he always took

Zilean POV:

Zilean:This new brand is amazing !

Heime:Yes... i call it "A mans dream"

Zilean:He would have loved that.....

Heime:And i even started that special project for him

Zilean:Is that even legal... i saw the blueprints

Heime:Nop!

Sarah POV:

BOOOOOOOOOM

Jinx;HAHAHAHAH BOM BOM BOM!!!!!!!!!!!!! DID YOU SEE HOW IT EXPLODED

Felix ;RUN YOU IDIOTS RUN!!! THEY HAVE DOGS!

Sarah:GRAVES WHY ARE YOU CARRYING THAT BOOMBOX ITS TELLING THEM WHERE WE ARE BASICALLY

Graves:BECAUS HE WOULD HAVE DONE THE SAME THING

....AT those words we just got silent as we were running away from the police but then Felix motioned him to turn it up..... fuck it

Rize POV:

Ryze:Goodbye

My last patient just left. My office was now back since Piltover was finally repaired. As i was going through some files i felt a presence behind me

Ryze:I thought we agreed you will not do that anymore Pyke

Pyke: *And ?*

Ryze:Nobody is more perfect to be the sacrifice then him this one was also a bust..... nobody else has that what we need for the old gods

Pyke:*Then we go back to our original plan*

**********TIMESKIP**********

Coffe Stand Owner POV:

CSO: Coffe ! FRESHLY BREWED COFFEE!!!!

....Good such a slow day. Well everything is boring now compared to that day so....

BBZZZZZZZZZZZZZZ THUD

Suddenly in front of me purple lighting formed out of nowhere and a guy fell in front of my stand.... his clothes were completely fucked up all over with cuts and holes everywhere

????;OH FFS!!!!! That motherfucker could have at least let me out easy!!!! Huh? Oh thank god i am back

The guy just got up and looked around. He was pretty average a little on the short side but nothing much. Then he noticed me and after reading my sign had a huge smile on his face

????:LISTEN! I am really sorry but can i please get a cup of coffee!!! I promise i will pay you back when i get my money CSO:Ummm.... sure man i don't mind

The smile he had once he took a first sip actually made me not even want to charge him... he looked like he went through hell and back

????:Do you have a smoke ?

I just nodded and handed it to him.... dude don't moan when you smoke

????:Oh god you have no idea how this feels after that hell... and five days without coffee and cigarettes! Its death man.... at least i think it was 5 days... what day is it today ?

CSO:it's Friday

????:Huh ? Strange date and all please i know it sounds strange but there was no really way to tell time in there, i could maybe tell it was about 5 or 6 days

CSO: 11/4

????:Huh ? 6 days i guess then well not so bad

CSO:2025

????:Sorry what ?

CSO:Ummm Friday 11/2/2025 13:11 PM .....

The guy was just looking at me now with a deadpan face... but after a few moments he screamed

????:5 YEARS!!!!!!!!! WHAT THE FUCK!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

Next publish is going to be a afterword for me

AFTERWORD

Well first of holly shit.... 73 publishes.

I have to say when i started this i had no idea it will go so far.... i guess when i started it my mind just went crazy and i was enjoying myself so much and it just kept growing and growing and growing.

But the last few chapters felt hard.... it started to get hard to write it i was not even looking forward to it anymore so much.... and that is the moment you need to stop. I just did not want to prolong it and turn it into another one of those types that get published just so they would be out.

This now officially closes the ''Just My Luck'' but its not over.... maybe in 2 week's maybe in 2 days i will start the new book. For now i just needed to do something to change it and i believe this ending will give those opportunities.

I really hope you all enjoyed this story. I have to say it was a blast. I never imagine how much it will grow and what kind of a world it will become. So i don't know when i finally decide how it will go the second book continue this one will be out. I still have so many ideas and so many adventures

The only things i would now do here is maybe edit a few of the earlier chapters since i have so much experience now and when i go through them i can see so many early mistakes.

One more time thank you all for joining me and this is just the beginning to our story.

BONUS EPILOGUE *HOPE*

Hello all! Merry Christmas and Happy New Year! As I promised here is the first post on this site after what? 7 months? Wow time sure does fly when you work 13 hours a day! But luckily my Vacation starts in 59 days! Yes there is a countdown and Vacation starting in 59!!!! GLORIUS NUMBER!

First off as I said the KDA book 2 called *With my Luck* is deleted! I simply couldn't decide how I wanted to continue and I was stuck. Massively stuck. But have no fear the stories of that (Y/N) are not finished.

This is something of a bonus Epilogue that is also the teaser for all the books I am planning. As you know I am going to start writing lets say *professionally*. I simply love it and if I can focus on this completely then why not. That's why the first book Bloody Luck is going to get published by the end of march... I hope. It's also going to be the first book published for the whole *Luck Series* stories that are all... yes you figured it connected. Now no more ranting and babbling. Enjoy this bonus chapter.

??? POV

"HELLO PILTOVER! WE ARE BACK AGAIN!"

The crowed screamed in glee as Ahri walked on top of the stage and announced the beginning of the show.

"Good Evening dears. Missed us ?"

Which was of course followed by another chorus of screams following Evellyn's appearance. A big group of guys was even holding a giant sign between them which was screaming * STEP ON US MISTRESS EVELYN"

I could only chuckle as some things never change. But my attention was quickly grabbed by Kai'Sa who super speed to the stage in a purple streak. Just a smile from her was enough for the people to start screaming again.

And of course the last one to the show

BOOOM

Why am I not surprised....

" Sup peeps! Sorry for the rough landing"

Did Akali just crash through the window with her bike... god one of these days that lady is going to kill somebody. But the mass of fans clearly didn't care since they were screaming her name. Although it was mostly girls. She always did have a bigger female fan base.

"Well at least they are relatively back to normal"

I just exhaled in relaxation as the show started. I know this was their first show after the 5 year brake and I was worried. But they were fine. Looks like they finally recovered... I could see some signs on Kai'Sa since she didn't speak at all... but I guess its to be expected.

The show was going in full swing as I watched them from one of the walkways above the stage that the crew used for repairs. I had a nice view and since it was completely dark nobody would see me. As I lighted my cigarette and started opening the plastic cup of the bullshit they call coffee now, I was blinded by a purple light from my left side

"Son of a...!"

A dark purple portal manifested as a figure walked out. I could only snort in amusement as I looked him from up to down

"Seriously.... Is that a spandex?"

Bud the man who looked completely like me with just a bit of darker hairs just rolled his eyes

"Ha-ha-ha very funny smartass it's called a bodysuit! The world I'm currently in is based around superheroes so this is a norm over there"

His words of course dropped my carefree attitude immediately

"You found another one?"

Where he just sighted and scratched his head in annoyance

"I thought I did... but he was not a *Lucker*"

"Shit...." And here I was hoping we were getting some more firepower. I think this is also the 15th fail. Seven from me and now Eight from him in a row. We always think we found someone but it turns out he doesn't have the potential... speaking off

"What about our RocketLoving maniac?"

Which just made the other me chuckle

" Yea he is currently recruiting. He has high hopes for the one he found. Apparently its some reincarnate in a world that functions on a type of a game system"

"Holy shit! Now that sounds epic! Spaceboy still not leaving the tower by the way?"

Which made him frown again as he sighted in annoyance

" No... can we even blame him? Unlike us his world is completely destroyed there is nothing left.... Lets just give him time and... AHHH FUCK!"

He just winced in pain as he grabbed his head and fell to his knees... looks like the big cahuna is awake

"Our Mascot is upset?"

Which just made him glare at me

"Can you stop pissing her off! Unlike you bastards I don't get some free time once I leave the Void she is constantly stuck with me!... Crap and now she is singing... I hate you so much you fucking bitch.... Whore.... Void Licker.... Orc lover.... How dare you!?

And there they go again... freaking married couple no matter how much he denies it. So I just returned my attention to the show as it was going in full power. I was so glad to see them back together. I really got worried they would never recover... but I guess they just needed the time.

"Hey..." The other m called for my attention " Do you regret it?"

"Huh?"

"Do you regret not coming back...Why don't you just ignore the whole thing I told you and go back to them" He motioned to the girls.

We spent the next few moments in silence as I thought about his words. The words im thinking of every day

" Sometimes I do... But in the end I agree with you. This has to stop. This cycle of suffering that has been thrust upon us needs to finish. Lets say I come back and we do get together and happy and everything... according to you... which I actually completely agree with when you think about it, will not last. Some bullshit will happen again" So this needs to stop. We all agree with that

For a few more minutes the other me was looking at me until he just made a smile and nodded his head

"Good! Anyway I just came to give you a update and il see you back at the tower... also" His sudden seriousness grabbed my attention from the dancing Kai'Sa

"Don't stay to long... you don't want the *Dream Catchers* to come " There was another flash of purple light as he disappeared.... And I could only exhale in exhaustion since I agree with him. I was overstaying my welcome here to long already.

Well can he blame me. For me it might have been only five months while for this world it has been five years. Although I know I don't need to worry about the girls... im still scared of disappearing for more then a week and then coming back to something unpleasant.

Lucky for me the other me's less then enjoyable half said she has an idea and that she could try to balance the time frames between this world and the void... although I will need to do some begging since I just pissed her off.

"Guess no more delay... stay safe girls"

Ahri POV

"Huh?"

"What's wrong Ahri?" Evellyn just looked at me with worry since I dropped my professional smile while looking towards the ceiling

"I just thought.... I thought I smelled something familiar

??? POV

"It's raining... I used to love the rain"

As I was going through the parking lot behind the concert hall the rain started to pour. I used to love the rain... now it's a nightmare.

"Anyway the shop is close and after that I can port out"

I definitely need to get some coffee. The bullshit that RocketLauncherFireballloving maniac brings is to strong for me. I really don't get how he drinks it

"Its like he has no taste buds.... Hahahh... oh god... huh?"

My train of thought was immediately interrupted as I smelled it

"Elderflower..... SHIT!"

Well I definitely overstayed my welcome! The smell of the Elderflower became strong which only means one thing

"Dream-Catchers"

I didn't even waste a moment already I lifted my hand and started making the gesture as I spoke the words

"***Create Sound"***

A simple spell really that does what it's name implies. Unless you master it. A little bit more of Mana and a little bit of imagination and you are able to create a giant sound explosion.

CRACK.....BOOOM

I chose a simple sound of a dog whistle amplified with at least 5 times the mana. Making every glass on every car around 200m of me explode shatters.... Well almost ever one

"Fucking Toyota"

There it was one fucking Toyota from the 90's standing about 50m away from me... with its rearview mirror still standing intact... which was enough"

"***D-E-F-I-L-E-R"***

First cam the scream then came the arms as they pulled them self out of the rearview mirror. Five Knights dressed in Golden Rusty armor with crack from age and multiple battles. All five of them had double axes that were as big as them and all of them were like every other Dream-Catcher of their type. Dried out husks long forgotten and dead, simple moving to fulfill their sacred duty

" D-E-F-I-L-E-R"

"Ok seriously that is getting old... can you say anything else" Which made them drop just another Defiler as they started to approach me dragging their axes.

I could only sight in annoyance at my situation. Well I should be happy its only the common Soldier class... if there were any Mage classes or a freaking Knight then I would be in trouble but this....

"Sorry boys. I have some shopping to do so lets end this fast.... ***Chain-Lighting"***

"ZZZZZZZzzzzzzZZZZZZZZZzzz"

"Ah! Got to love the smell of burning Dream-Catchers"

One by one they fell as my spell jumped between them. Usually I would not open with something as powerful and mana consuming as this but there was no point in waiting. The faster I get rid of them the faster I can disappear.

And good for me since they were already on the floor twitching and disappearing... yea this is why I hate the rain... it makes puddles. And when you get puddles you get reflections...

"Shit... I still remember that time... there were thousands of them"

Well at least I don't have to worry about cleanup since they are gone. Now lets get some coffee and...

"(Y/N)?"

..... SONOFABITCH!

Ahri POV

The person in front of me just moved his arm fast and mumbled something as he turned I could feel my ears drop on my head

"Excuse me miss?"

"Ah! No.... sorry...."

I don't know what I expected... our (Y/N) is gone... but his smell... he smells like him so much

Then I looked towards the person and I saw some concern in his eyes. He was probably worried for getting stopped in the middle of the road by a random person

"*Ahem* Sorry to bother you... bye"

"Wait!"

I Just looked towards him and I could swear I was seeing sadness and regret in his eyes.

Then I looked him over again and I just couldn't say how he looked... he was... he was... huh? I just can't see anything that special about him... what's his hair color even

"Yes?"

But he just cleared his throat as he whispered " I'm such a idiot.... But still" To bad my ears are not only for show... it was kind of funny really. Reminded me so much of *him*

"Listen... I know you haven't made a single new song in a long time" Which just made me raise my eyebrow and cross my arms. But the person just chuckled as he waved his hand "And no im not that type of stalker. I am just a fan"

Which just made me sight... he was right. We haven't written a new song in a very, very long while.

"Yea sorry about that. It's always bad to disappoint fans... its just... its just been a little hard, that's all " I could only apologetically smile. And mostly wonder why was I telling him this... I felt like I could trust him completely

But he just scratched the back of his neck clearly uncomfortably

"I am sorry...."

Which just made me drop a " For what?"

He then made another panicked face as he looked around like a child who said something he was not supposed to but after a few more moments of silence and a silent *Fuck it* from him.

"Listen... don't give up hope"

"Huh?"

"Even if its 1%, even if it 0,00001% don't give up. Luck and Destiny may be assholes... but even they have a good day"

At first I was just staring at him with my mouth open. But then that transcended into a smile as I understood what he meant. But he just shook his head with a smile as he spoke those next words

"That smile, that dammed smile"

I could feel my eyes going wide, and my mouth already starting to open as even my legs started running towards him. But he was faster

"FUCK! Sorry, ***Sleep-Daze***" And then everything went dark

(Y/N) POV

"Ahri! AHRI! Are you fine?"

"Ah.... Oh.... Yea"

"What are you doing in the middle of the road dear! How much have you had to drink"

Evellyn was giving Ahri a hard time as she helped her get back to her feet. Lucky for me I was able to hide behind one of the truck and cast a *Mask Presence* on me just to be safe... That was close... to close. But then Ahri stared to speak

"Hey Evellyn... I have an idea for a new song"

"Huh? Did you hit your head or something darling?"

But Ahri just chuckled as I heard the noise of their footsteps leaving

"No. Im going to call it *Hope*"

This made a huge smile form on my lips. I did drop a little bit of *Daze* but looks like she remembered some of it...

"Yea no more messing around and no more moping and prolonging it"

Already my hands did the motion channeling the powerful spell of making the purple portal appear. And then I looked towards the backs of Ahri and Evellyn one more time.

I don't know how long it will take... or if I will even succeed. But I have to try. I have to end this cycle of suffering that has been thrown upon us. So I made a choice that I will not come back here until I am finally done. I will not come back until I know I will stay here forever.

"Wait for me girls, I will be back"

And then I took a deep breath of this world for maybe the last time as I went through leaving my promise

"We still have a Goddess to kill"